



N 3270  
Hae  
176-60

0  
1  
4



50 9 Feb

2 Vals

~~V2753~~



JOURNAL  
OF  
THE LIFE, LABOURS, AND TRAVELS  
OF  
THOMAS SHILLITOE,  
IN THE  
SERVICE OF THE GOSPEL OF JESUS CHRIST.

---

“A faithful man shall abound with blessings; but he that maketh haste to be rich, shall not be innocent.”—PROVERBS, xxviii. 20.

“Seest thou a man diligent in his business, [*his Lord's business,*] he shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men [*only*].”—PROVERBS, xxii. 29.

---

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

---

LONDON:  
HARVEY AND DARTON,  
GRACECHURCH-STREET.

---

1839.

CBPac



107327

BX

7795

5525

62

LONDON :  
JOSEPH RICHARDS, PRINTER,  
SHREDS-LEAD.



## VOL. II.

### CONTENTS OF CHAPTERS.

---

#### CHAPTER XXIII.—Page 1.

The Author presents an Address to the King (George IV.) at Windsor—His prospects of religious service on the Continent, 1824—Pays visits to the London Police Magistrates, the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Bishop of London—Proceeds to Hull.

#### CHAPTER XXIV.—Page 14.

Sails to Hamburg—Proceeds to Altona; his services at both places, also at Hanover—Visits families of Friends at Minden, &c.—Proceeds by Pyrmont, &c. to Berlin—Interesting visit to the Crown Prince.

#### CHAPTER XXV.—Page 33.

Visit to Spandau Prison—His interesting interview with the King of Prussia—Returns again to Spandau; memorable time with the prisoners—His Address to pious persons in the higher circles at Berlin—Is left alone.

#### CHAPTER XXVI.—Page 51.

Proceeds to Hamburg, and thence to Kiel and Copenhagen—His interview with the Crown Princess—Addresses the King of Denmark—Visits the Crown Prince and Princess Caroline—His other engagements in Copenhagen.

#### CHAPTER XXVII.—Page 69.

Quits Copenhagen for Elsineur, and sails to Cronstadt—Arrives at Petersburg; settles in lodgings for the winter—His trying circumstances whilst sojourning in this city.

#### CHAPTER XXVIII.—Page 88.

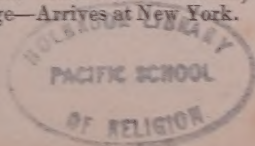
The Author witnesses the great flood at Petersburg, (11th mo., 1824)—Writes an Address to the English Protestants in Russia—His deeply interesting interview with the Emperor Alexander—Second visit to the Emperor—Visits the prisons—Prepares to journey homeward with Daniel Wheeler—Quits the Russian territory.

#### CHAPTER XXIX.—Page 118.

Proceeds by Memel, &c. to Berlin, and thence to Helvoetsluys; sails to Harwich—Reaches home (3d mo., 1825)—Visit to Buxton—His interview with the Duke of Devonshire—His prospect of religious service in America.

#### CHAPTER XXX.—Page 132.

Leaves home for Liverpool—Sails for New York, (7th mo. 1826)—Occurrences on the voyage—Arrives at New York.



## CHAPTER XXXI.—Page 150.

Visits meetings in and about New York—Elias Hicks.

## CHAPTER XXXII.—Page 169.

Quits New York, and proceeds northwards—Visits Indian settlements.

## CHAPTER XXXIII.—Page 190.

Proceeds towards Upper Canada; visiting many meetings, also some Indian settlements.

## CHAPTER XXXIV.—Page 215.

1827. Meetings in Upper Canada—Returns to New York; attends Yearly Meeting there: also that of New England, and many meetings therein.

## CHAPTER XXXV.—Page 241.

Returns to New York, and thence to Philadelphia—Attends Baltimore Yearly Meeting—His visit to a slave-merchant—Interview with the President of the United States—Visit to a slave-owner—Returns to Philadelphia—Hicksites.

## CHAPTER XXXVI.—Page 287.

Attends meetings in Philadelphia and Pennsylvania, &c.

## CHAPTER XXXVII.—Page 306.

Attends the Yearly Meeting in Philadelphia, (1828); also that of New York—Scene of riot thereat through Hicksite violence, &c.—The Author's treatment by the Hicksites—Returns to Philadelphia.

## CHAPTER XXXVIII.—Page 324.

Proceeds towards Ohio—Visits many meetings—Frequently falls in with Elias Hicks—Various troubles from the Separatists—Attends Ohio Yearly Meeting—Tumultuous conduct of the Hicksites.

## CHAPTER XXXIX.—Page 349.

Visits meetings in Ohio and Indiana—Attends Indiana Yearly Meeting—Proceeds to North Carolina—Slaves—Attends North Carolina Yearly Meeting; also divers meetings in his way to Virginia—Reaches Richmond.

## CHAPTER XL.—Page 373.

Returns to Baltimore—Attends many meetings—Reaches Philadelphia—Attends the Yearly Meeting there (1829): also those of New York and New England—Visits the Penitentiary at Sing Sing—Sails for England, and reaches home.

## CHAPTER XLI.—Page 392.

His affectionate Address to all who are making a profession of the Christian name, &c. (1831)—His visit to the Bishop of London—Speech at a meeting of the Temperance Society—Visit to the King and Queen at Windsor in 1832—His affectionate Address to the King, &c.—Concluding Remarks—His last illness and death.



# JOURNAL

OF THE

## LIFE OF THOMAS SHILLITOE.

---

### CHAPTER XXIII.

IN the Fifth month, 1823, I left my own home, and proceeded to London, to attend the Yearly Meeting. During my attendance of the Yearly Meeting, I found Friends were desirous to have details of my journey on the Continent from myself; but aware that my retailing out many occurrences, and some rather new in themselves, accompanied by such displays of Divine interposition, might produce observations tending to set up the creature, rather than promote that disposition of mind which I clearly saw to be the only safe one for me, viz. a sitting as with my mouth in the dust, if so be there may be hope that my dedication has found full acceptance in the sight of my heavenly Father; I therefore believed it safest for me, after a summary of my proceedings had been read in the Yearly Meeting, to request Friends would excuse me from entering into further details of my journey out of meeting, from a belief that it would not tend to my profit. I felt thankful in being permitted once more to sit down with Friends in a yearly meeting capacity, and in witnessing the continuance of ancient goodness, whereby the concerns that came before the meeting were conducted in much harmony.

Previous to my leaving London, it appeared to me right to put into the hands of my friend Josiah Forster, for translation, the German copy of the act of the king's council, relative to the better observance of the first day of the week at Hanover, without any clear prospect at the time I should be called upon to make use of it. The desire to know why or wherefore I was giving my friend this trouble, appeared to me to be quite beside my proper business. In the Eighth month, I received the translation, which



introduced me into exercise of mind, but without any prospect as to the use I was to make of it.

The time drawing nigh when I must lay before my friends apprehensions of further service on the Continent of Europe, my situation would, at times, have been almost insupportable, had I not been strengthened, like David, to feel myself brought into that state, in which, with him, I could say, "I cried with my whole heart, hear me, O Lord; I will keep thy statutes," (Psalm cxix. 145;) yet such were my fears, lest through any misstep I should be involved in perplexity, that sadness of heart was frequently my companion. Yet my help must come from God alone, if I am favoured to come forth from my present tribulation acceptably in his most holy sight.

It seemed to me that the time was come, when I should have to make use of the translation of the Act of the king and council of Hanover. I sat down and deliberately perused it, beseeching the Almighty to direct me in the disposal of it; and believing it was required of me to address the king (George IV.) on some of the subjects which the Act contained, I took up my pen, earnestly craving to be furnished with matter suited to the purpose. After spending a suitable portion of time in inward retirement, waiting on the Lord for his holy help, I proceeded to write, and having completed my address, I went on Third-day, 20th of Fourth-month, 1824, accompanied by my kind friend, Peter Bedford, to Windsor. On being informed the king was going from the castle to the lodge: we proceeded to the long-walk in the great park; and earnest was my solicitude to be enabled to discharge this act of apprehended duty, in a way that would, on a retrospect, afford relief to my own mind. We at length perceived the king coming in his poney-chaise down the long-walk; when he came nearly abreast of us, we advanced a little towards the middle of the road; I had the packet in my hand, containing the German copy of the act of the king and council, the same translated, and my address on some subjects which it contained. The king stopped his horses, and we approached the carriage. On my asking the king, in a respectful manner, if I might be permitted to present him with a packet, he replied, "Yes, Friend, you may." Several years having elapsed since I had had an interview with him at Brighton, and the king having lost much of that florid countenance he then had, also appearing aged, and being wrapped up in a loose drab great-coat, instead of an uniform, which he wore on the former occasion, some hesitation arose in my mind lest I should be mistaken, and it should not be the king. I, therefore, looking up at him, inquired, "But is it the king?" to which he replied, "Yes, Friend; I am the king: give it to the Marquis of Conyngham;" who received it with a smile; on which the king said, "Now you have handed it to



me." After a short communication which I had to make to the king, he said, "I thank you." We then acknowledged his condescension, withdrew from the carriage, and returned to London with grateful hearts. I was favoured to reach my own home again, and enjoy it for a time. The address was as follows:—

"May it please the King,

"To permit a subject, who believes he can say he has thy present peace and eternal welfare at heart, even as his own, to lay before thee some matters in which thou art deeply concerned, in the sight of that Almighty Being, by whom thou acknowledgest thyself called to the throne. Having lately been engaged in a long journey on the Continent of Europe, under apprehensions of religious duty; during my travels mourning and lamentation were mostly the clothing of my mind, in beholding the extreme immorality of the people; and that in some of the states they were licensed by government, and protected by the police, in following wicked practices. Above all, I found, with but little exception, the Sabbath, (as it is called,) or first day of the week, (set apart for Divine worship,) abused in the most notorious manner, by civilized nations professing the Christian name. These scenes of iniquity, with the too evident fearless disposition of mind which prevailed amongst every class and rank of the people, coming so frequently under my notice, brought along with them the mournful language of the prophet Jeremiah, (xv. 17,) 'Were they ashamed, when they had committed abominations; nay, they were not at all ashamed, neither could they blush;' which is too sorrowfully applicable to the general state of mind of the people amongst whom my lot was cast. I apprehended myself in duty called upon to remonstrate in some of the states with those in authority, by a printed address on the subject of some laws which had a tendency to build up the people in iniquity, as well as with the people themselves on the subject of their evil conduct. I always entertained a hope, when recurring to thy dominions, that in all thy German states, laws and regulations were framed, which would preserve thy subjects there, as well as at home, in a due respect for the day called the Sabbath, and thus setting a good example of morality to the Continent of Europe; not that I mean to be understood, that there is not great room for improvement at home in these respects; but this, I believe, does not so much arise from defects in the laws, as from a want of more vigilance in some places on the part of those whose duty it is to enforce them. Of the effects which a well-regulated police is capable of producing, I had also satisfactory proof at the town of Basle, where 'the Sabbath' is passed in a becoming manner—quiet and order prevailing in the streets; all business being suspended, and dissipation and amusement entirely prohibited.

“ As I had a prospect of spending some time in Hanover before my return, amidst all my secret trouble because of the abomination of the people, a cheering hope would frequently revive, that there my deeply tried mind would experience some relief: but alas! how were my expectations disappointed! how did all my hopes vanish! how were my bonds increased! sorrow indeed filled my heart; I was bowed as into the very dust, to find from appearances there, the day called the Sabbath to be disregarded and abused as much as in any place where my lot had been cast: and that which added to my affliction was, to find the people warranted herein (as they conceive) by rules and regulations having thy own signature: for, during a short interview with some of the seriously disposed there, on my remarking, with evident feelings of sorrow, the manner in which ‘the Sabbath’ is abused, the reply was, ‘Our new rules and regulations sent from England have much contributed to it, so that we have no power to help things.’ I procured a copy in print of those regulations, and a translation thereof, which I enclose herewith, for the purpose of reference: with remarks on those parts, which I apprehend (notwithstanding the general purport of the regulations and the royal introductory admonition,) tend to frustrate the intention of the whole, and are by too many of the king’s subjects made use of for that purpose: and I crave of the king, as he values his own soul and the souls of his German subjects, a serious perusal of the whole: beseeching the Almighty, that he will give thee to see all their evil bearings, and the wide door which is thus, O king, set open by thy authority, for thy German subjects to be found in the breach of laws both moral and divine: and that no time may be lost in applying such remedies, as to the king may seem meet, and which may be promotive of the temporal and eternal interest of his German subjects: for it is ‘righteousness which exalteth a nation, but sin is a reproach to any people.’ Bear with me, O king, if I presume to say, that these rules, set forth by thee (in the preamble of which it is stated, that it is by Divine authority thou art placed on the throne of thy royal father,) must be in accordance with the law of God, and of Christ Jesus our Lord, if thou art favoured to witness the blessing of heaven to descend upon thee and upon thy dominions, and to experience Divine wisdom to guide thee and thy counsellors, in the management of the important affairs of the state.

“ *Extracts from the regulations respecting the day called the Sabbath:* ‘It is prohibited throughout the whole of the day, to hold masked balls, &c. &c. &c. Unmasked balls, sledge-parties, playing at nine-pins in public gardens, or in private gardens (if in the neighbourhood of the church,) and public music, shall not be allowed till three o’clock in the afternoon.’



Here permit me to remark, what a wide door is set open for those who are disposed to indulge in these several gratifications, to absent themselves from their place of worship, and spend their time the whole of the day, so that it be not in the neighbourhood of 'the church,' in this loose, irreligious manner.

"*Extracts:—*' To open the theatre, to keep marriage-feasts, or other large parties in public-houses is forbid on the first days of the three great annual fasts, and on penance and prayer days, and on the other Sundays and fast-days; these shall not be allowed, until after the conclusion of the afternoon service, viz. meetings of journeymen, club-meetings, or for releasing of apprentices, and for admitting journeymen, and masters, or any such meetings as are obnoxious to the main object of Christian holidays. . With regard to the time allowed for the continuance of dancing-parties, more especially in public-houses, this is left to the police, and their regulations respecting this subject.'

"*Extracts:—*' *During the morning and afternoon service on Sundays or fast-days*, all shops or booths shall be shut, and no trade or profession shall be carried on in public or in private workshops, *except in cases of necessity, when the police has granted leave*: all buying and selling, with the exception of medicine at the apothecaries' shops, the erecting of booths or stands in the public market-places, brewing, malting, butchering, the carrying of water for brewing, carrying flour, or beer, *and in general every thing which occasions a particular disturbance, shall be prohibited*. All public-houses and inns, tea and coffee-houses, ale-houses, journeymen's club-houses, as well as all weighing and packing-houses, shall be kept closed *during these times*; and no person shall be admitted to the former, except travellers; nor shall any refreshment be handed to any, except travellers and sick persons.'

"I was myself a mournful witness of the operation of these regulations. Looking out of the window of my hotel at Hanover, on the morning of the Sabbath, I beheld household goods removing, and various articles conveying about the streets, shops of all description opened, as on another day, and the people as active in their worldly concerns, as if it had been one of the six days appointed by the Most High for labour; *until the time when the service at the places of worship began; and all business again commenced the moment they were closed*. I noticed several persons, apparently of the middle class, who came thither long after the time the people generally had assembled, and the same description of persons leaving the place together, apparently before the service was over. I found reason to suppose, and did afterwards learn, that these were shopkeepers, who, having kept their shops open till the last minute allowed by law, were anxious to have

them open again, as they call it, timely, or before their neighbours had dispersed after the public worship. Wishing on this day to call upon a merchant, I was shown, as a matter of course, into his counting-house, where I found him transacting business with different persons, as they came in to him; which I understood was pretty generally the case with the merchants before, between, and after, the afternoon services. Shooting-parties were turning out at noon, to sport away the remainder of the day. After three o'clock all business was going forward, handicrafts publicly at work, nine-pins rattling, with shouting occasioned thereby in different directions, gaming-houses opened, and diversions of different kinds going forward; in all which the people think themselves supported by the new regulations. How mournful has this consideration been to me, when recurring to the laws on this subject, applicable to my native land; where we may, if we are inclined, enjoy the privilege of quietly passing 'the Sabbath,' a privilege of which thy religiously disposed German subjects are deprived, unless they live in very secluded situations. On reading the regulations, and beholding these effects, trembling took hold of me at the thought, that thy German subjects should be upheld in setting such an evil example to the Continent of Europe. I crave the Almighty, that he may be pleased to assist thee and thy counsellors in remedying these evils, for so I believe they appear in his sight; and permit me to add my belief, that so long as they are suffered to remain, thou stands a party, O king, before God, to the consequences resulting from them; and I fear that I shall not stand acquitted in the Divine sight, if I do not, in that feeling of Christian love and obedience, which I owe to thee as a subject, express my belief, that if these regulations are not repealed (the regulations permitting them,) they will be found heavy in the scale of condemnation against thee in the great and awful day of account.

"To produce the greatest possible uniformity of good conduct amongst thy subjects, with respect to morality and due respect for 'the Sabbath,' there must be a consistency in thy laws on this subject, in all thy dominions; for the laws of Almighty God are not subject to alterations, they do not change to meet the corrupt inclinations and views of depraved man, but remain the same, to every nation on the face of the earth, to the end of time: and this consistency in thy acts with the Divine will, I crave may become thy chief care and concern, even to be found governing thy subjects as one who is to give an account of this great and important stewardship; that thou mayst be favoured, (as I often crave for thee,) in the winding up of time, to exchange thy earthly for an heavenly crown. And oh, that the king may not be deterred from this his duty, by the apprehension of giving dissatisfaction to any party! Remember, thou professest to rule for God; there-



fore dare to be faithful to the trust thou acknowledgest to be committed to thee, leaving all consequences to the disposal of Him, who has the hearts of all men at his command, and is able to chain down that evil disposition which would rise up in any of thy subjects ; whose dissatisfaction is of small moment, compared with the displeasure of Almighty God. Let me, then, again beseech thee, O king, well to consider these remarks, and let them have due place in thy mind ; that so one part of the cause of these evils may be removed : and then I humbly hope that, in time, much of these evil fruits will have gradually disappeared, and the minds of thy religiously disposed German subjects will be relieved from that load of suffering, which I believe some have to bear, because of the abominations of the people. And inasmuch as by the interference of Divine Providence, the enemies' forces have been expelled from their possession of thy dominions on the Continent of Europe, and an end put to that terrible slaughter and bloodshed, and thou art in quiet possession of thy German states, permit me respectfully to query with thee, is it not a loud call upon thee to exert thy utmost endeavours to root out those evil practices ; otherwise, should the Almighty see meet again to plead with the inhabitants of the Continent, by his judgments, yet more terrible than any thing they have experienced, because of their impenitence and irreligion, what ground can there be to expect that these thy subjects will be spared ? Such were my feelings on their account, when amongst them. And now, that the blessing of Heaven may rest upon the king and his counsellors, in deliberating on this and all other matters of the state, is the earnest prayer of my soul.

“ THOMAS SHILLITOE.”

“ Hitchin, Herts, 12th of 12th Month, 1823.”

After obtaining certificates from my own monthly and quarterly-meeting to visit Pymont, Minden, Berlin, and in parts of Russia, where truth should open the way ; I left my own home, on the First-day, sixteenth of Fifth month, 1824 ; attended meeting at Hertford in the afternoon,—proceeded to Tottenham, attended the evening meeting there ; after which I walked to London.

17th. Attended the select Yearly Meeting, which adjourned to the afternoon : at the adjournment I opened my concern to visit some parts of the Continent of Europe, and my prospect of duty to spend most of the winter in Petersburg. Certificates were ordered accordingly.

First-day morning, attended a funeral at Esher in Surry, of a Friend, whose removal from time into eternity was sudden and unexpected to her friends. The opportunity at the grave-side continued long ; there was good ground for believing it proved a profitable season, not only to the relations of the deceased, but to many

others. I attended the several sittings of the Yearly Meeting, in which silence appeared to be my proper province; in being favoured thus to see my right place in these meetings, and to be enabled to keep it, I esteemed a great mercy from my Heavenly Father. The activity of the creature is so soon stirred up, in some minds more than others, in these meetings, especially when the meeting becomes agitated with some matters that are brought before it: on such occasions dispositions like my own, require to be exercised in more than a common share of watchfulness, in order that we may be preserved from meddling in matters which we are not called upon to do.

27th 5th mo. The Yearly Meeting closed its sittings: my certificate being signed and delivered to me, increased my bonds, accompanied by fresh excitement to be preserved cleaving in spirit to the Lord, in order to my being favoured to experience his all-supporting arm of power, to bear me up and sustain me through every trial, that may await the faithful discharge of duty. Unaccompanied, for ought I had any ground as yet to suppose, by a sympathizing brother; on my way from meeting to my quarters, pondering over my solitary situation in this respect, my kind friend Thomas Christy overtook me, and proceeding with me to my lodgings, offered to be my companion to Minden. This offer coming so unexpectedly (we not having conversed on the subject,) was fresh cause of thankfulness to my mind. I met the committee on continental concerns, appointed by the Meeting for Sufferings to arrange matters for my departure; to whom I opened my prospects of the time when the necessary passports should be in readiness. But there was a subject which had long pressed on my mind, the weight of which I found I must in some way be relieved from, before I left my native shore; assured if I did my part towards its accomplishment, by casting myself upon my friends, and they were not willing I should proceed in the service, the will would be accepted for the deed, and the burden would be removed from my shoulders: otherwise it appeared to me it would be a heavy load to carry with me out of my native land, and at times prove the means of impeding my progress in my religious engagements on the Continent. I therefore opened to the committee my prospects of duty before I embarked for the Continent, of visiting the principal acting magistrates of the different police-offices in London, also a member of the privy-council, and the secretary for the home department. After suitable deliberation on my religious prospects, I was left at liberty to proceed; my kind friend John Eliot, wrote to a member of the privy-council, who was considered the most suitable to try to obtain an interview with. It being several days before a reply was received, in consequence of his indisposition, this suspense was a fresh exercise of faith and patience: not feeling myself at liberty to take

much active part in preparing for my departure for the Continent, until the prospect before me was accomplished, yet I was at times desirous to lose no time in prosecuting my journey, so as to escape the equinoctial gales in the Baltic Sea and Gulf of Finland, which are said so frequently to prove fatal, and to reach Russia sufficiently early to become gradually seasoned to meet the approaching winter.

Accompanied by my kind friend Peter Bedford, on the fourth of Sixth month, we visited the resident magistrate at Lambeth Street, who received us with great cordiality: I laid before him, in his official capacity of magistrate, the evil and very sorrowful consequences resulting to all classes in society by the open disregard of the First-day of the week; the day set apart by general consent of all professing Christians for the worship of Almighty God; calling his attention to a prominent occasion of this abuse, the shops being opened for the sale of newspapers, and their being sold about the streets on the day called Sunday; together with the gin-shops and public tea-gardens being opened on this day; and the drunkenness suffered in the evening at the public-houses round about the suburbs of the city, where it is carried to a great excess. It afforded great relief to my mind, to meet with such a willingness to hear what I had to offer, and to enter into the views I had been enabled to take of the various matters I had to lay before them. I had viewed this engagement as being likely to prove very up-hill work; but from the desire the magistrate evidently manifested to do his part towards a remedy, and from the open reception we met with, I was enabled to take fresh courage, and renew my covenants with Him, who had, I was led humbly to hope, called me to it.

5th of 6th mo. Accompanied by Peter Bedford, we proceeded to Union Hall, in the Borough of Southwark, where the crowd of persons waiting on the magistrates was so great, there appeared no hopes of our obtaining a suitable opportunity; we therefore claimed the advice and assistance of a friend near, who wrote a note to the magistrate on the bench, requesting a private interview, which it appeared could not be granted; but an offer being made, that if I was willing to come to the hall I should be heard, for a while placed me in a trying situation; fearing lest my not accepting the present opportunity for relieving my mind the way for it would not open again.

Deliberating on the matter in the best way I was capable, and finding it was likely that many persons would be within hearing of what I had to offer, and catch a part, and very imperfectly catch other parts of what was said, and thus circulate very erroneous reports of it; from these considerations it appeared to require greater clearness than I was able to attain to, that this was the



right way for me to proceed ; I therefore found it safest for me to relinquish it. On further inquiry, it appeared, that the most active magistrate, and the one most likely to enter into the consideration of my views, was not on the bench that day. Understanding that he resided in the neighbourhood of Peckham, and the way opening in my mind to attend Peckham meeting next day, I engaged my young friend, Joseph Sterry, to accompany me.

First-day, 6th of 6th mo. I attended Peckham meeting ; after which we made a visit to the magistrate of Union Hall, who received us kindly. When he came to understand the motive of our making him this visit, he manifested a willingness to enter agreeably into the consideration of the subjects I laid before him ; in addition to these, I felt my mind constrained to mention to him a circumstance to which I had been a witness that morning, and which I was well informed was a common practice on First-day mornings, viz. for persons to assemble in a foot-path field near town, to fight their pitched battles ; whereby hundreds of people were collected, and great uproar takes place. It appeared the magistrate was a stranger to this circumstance ; he handsomely expressed his obligation for the information, assuring us that the necessary steps to prevent the practice in future should be taken, and the other matters attended to, as far as was in his power.

Second-day, accompanied by my friend Luke Howard, we waited on the principal active magistrate belonging to the police-office, Queen Square, Westminster, who received us very respectfully ; he gave us a full opportunity to say what came before us, manifesting a disposition to enter agreeably into the consideration of the various subjects thrown before him, and expressed a desire to do his part towards a remedy.

Third-day, accompanied by my friend John Eliot, we waited upon the chief-magistrate at the police-office, Hatton Garden, who received us with kindness, manifesting a willingness to do his part, as far as he was entrusted with power, to remedy the evil practices mentioned to him : the sad consequences attendant on the tea-gardens, were generally adverted to by those magistrates whom we visited, as being the cause of producing immorality in many of the youth, and defeating the exertions of the police in endeavouring to clear the streets of prostitutes, and thus to remove these temptations to evil out of their way ; the tea-gardens being the place of resort for these disorderly females ; and the evils produced by the gin-shops being opened, as was the case in the neighbourhood of the poor, at four or five in the morning, which laid the foundation for the drunkenness so apparent in these neighbourhoods. We could not doubt a sincere desire prevailed in the minds of most we visited, to help these things which are so much out of order : but it was evident, if good in these respects

was to be effected, it must originate with the higher powers; the fines now allowed by law to be levied for misdemeanours, being so limited, were by no means adequate to remedy the existing evils.

Fourth-day, accompanied by my friends Luke Howard and Thomas Richardson, we waited upon the lord mayor at the Mansion-house, who received us in a courteous manner. My endeavouring faithfully to lay before him various subjects as they presented, afforded me a peaceful reflection.

Sixth-day, accompanied by my friend Luke Howard, we proceeded to Lambeth Palace, and obtained an interview with the Archbishop of Canterbury; to whom I opened my concern on various subjects, as I had done to the different magistrates: informing him, that a disposition of mind generally prevailed with them, towards remedying these evils, were their hands made sufficiently strong for the work: I pointed out the need there was for their hands to be strengthened by the higher powers to induce this necessary reformation; laying before him the necessity of his exerting his influence with the rulers of the nation toward such laws being framed, that would prove an effectual means of checking these existing evil practices. We parted, I trust, under feelings of goodwill; and I was reverently thankful, that strength had been given me faithfully to acquit myself.

Seventh-day, we waited on the Bishop of London, who also received us in a respectful manner; with whom I enlarged much on the subjects I had laid before the magistrates; to which he appeared to give agreeable attention, uttering as I proceeded frequent expressions of assent. I endeavoured in a becoming manner to lay before him, how much it might be in his power, from the situation in which he stood, to promote the application of proper remedies for the evils existing in the nation; exhorting him to do his very utmost towards its being brought about. The interview afforded me relief; and I left the bishop under feelings of regard, for the candid opportunity he had afforded us.

First-day morning, attended Winchmore-hill meeting; where I trust I was favoured to acquit myself faithfully: attended Tottenham meeting in the afternoon, in which I kept silence; but I left the meeting-house under a fear I had not been right in so doing; yet Divine mercy and tender compassion, when our disobedience is not wilful, fails not again in due time to manifest itself; whereby my unfaithfulness was not suffered to remain as a sin unto death against me. Second-day, attended the morning-meeting of ministers and elders,—to me a low, exercising time; although from testimonies borne by others, it proved a time in which the wing of Divine regard was stretched over the meeting. My intended companion continuing anxious to be moving towards the Continent, I felt not a little on his and his family's account;

with respect to myself, although a release from further service on this side the water would have been acceptable to my own mind, yet, through adorable mercy, I was favoured to know a centering in quiet resignation to the Divine will; not doubting, but that in due time, way would be made for such release. Fourth-day, no answer being received to the note to the privy counsellor, a second note was forwarded; his indisposition continuing, placed me in a trying situation, as it respected my intended companion; although I believed I clearly saw, if I kept in the patience, way would be made for an interview. Fifth-day, a reply to the note to the privy counsellor was received, appointing Seventh-day for the interview with him; and a note from the secretary of state for the home department, appointing the afternoon of Seventh-day for our interview with him. What a fresh call was this to unite with the Psalmist, in the pathetic language, "Good is the Lord, and worthy to be praised," and patiently waited upon. Seventh-day, we waited on the privy counsellor, who received us respectfully, allowing a full opportunity for laying before him the various subjects that arose in our minds; we acquainted him with the agreeable manner we had been received by the different police-magistrates, and the willingness they had manifested to unite in endeavouring to further such measures, which the higher authorities should see right to adopt, for remedying the evils I had laid before them: and that to effect this desirable reformation, the hands of the magistrates required in some way to be strengthened; well assured as I was, if there was a waiting on the part of those who were to strengthen their hands, for Divine wisdom to direct them in applying a remedy, and a willingness to move under its influence, Divine strength would be afforded to rise above the reproach of the libertine part of the people.

My way, after this opportunity, opened to make efforts towards my leaving for the Continent; and we proceeded to the foreign-office, to procure passports. Agreeably to appointment, we waited on the secretary of state for the home department, who gave us a full opportunity to relieve our minds. I had prepared a card with the names of the different police-magistrates we had called upon, which we presented to the privy counsellor and secretary of state: we also presented to the bishops, the members of the privy-council, the secretary of state, and each of the magistrates, a work on the principles of Friends, which appeared to be well received. I came away desirous of being preserved from anxiety, as to the result of my many secret baptisms, both before and during, the prosecution of this short but humiliating engagement.

First-day morning, 20th of 6th month, attended Hoddesdon meeting; walked to Hertford, attended their afternoon meeting. Second-day, proceeded with my dear wife to Hitchin; then pro-



ceeded by mail to Sheffield. Fourth-day, to Barnsley ; some outward affairs there claimed my attention, which brought me under fresh exercise of mind, fearing I should become improperly involved in them. Earnest were my cries, whilst on my way there, for preservation from any of the wiles of the evil power ; to escape which, I was strengthened to make some temporal sacrifices.

First-day morning, attended meeting at Sheffield ; then taking leave of my dear daughter and grand-children, accompanied by my son-in-law John Heppenstall, I proceeded to Doncaster ; attended their evening meeting. Second-day, whilst at my breakfast, I was seized with a violent attack of spasmodic affection in my throat, which appeared to alarm my friends : this so enfeebled my bodily strength, that I feared being able to proceed on my journey ; but feeling the necessity now laid upon me to press forward, I was made willing to commit my enfeebled body to the care of Him, who is abundantly able to renew strength, and give ability to accomplish all he requires of us. We proceeded to Thorn : on our arrival at the steam-boat office, and inquiring for my luggage, which had been sent forward by the coach, I was assured it was in the steam-boat. On landing at Hull, and inquiring for my luggage, it was not to be found in the boat ; nor any account of it could be obtained. This involved me in considerable embarrassment, fearing it should prove the means of our losing our passage in the next vessel sailing for Hamburgh. After considerable exertion on the part of my friends, it was traced to an out-building at an inn on the road, where it had been left by the coachman.

## CHAPTER IV.

FIFTH-DAY evening, my kind companion Thomas Christy and myself proceeded on board the *Laurel*, Captain Morgan; and after a passage of three days we were favoured to land safely at *Hamburgh*. On Second-day morning, soon after our landing, I proceeded to *Altona*, where I called upon an old acquaintance. On his hearing of my views of wintering in *Petersburgh*, he proposed introducing to me a friend of his, who termed himself a primitive Catholic, and who had been residing in *Petersburgh* a considerable time. The prospect of such an interview at first appeared desirable; but I soon felt in my own mind, I had not sufficiently weighed the proposal; for whilst the messenger was gone to invite their friend to give me his company, it came out, this person had been banished from *Russia*, in consequence of his religious principles clashing with the established religion of the country, and his having brought over to himself numerous followers, as well as published some works obnoxious to the established clergy. This account alarmed me not a little, not knowing how I might be drawn out into conversation by him, and what might result to myself, should he keep up a correspondence with those there who were his followers. I felt so fully convinced of the necessity of my remaining ignorant altogether of his situation, both here and there, that I begged of my friends on no account to encourage a disposition in their friend to give me the least information on either of these heads. From a fear I should be in danger some way or other of being involved in difficulty, by my continuing in his company, if I did not take the greatest possible care, I therefore, in as handsome a manner as I was capable of, refused his kind offer of introduction to his friends at *Petersburgh*, and soon left him again, thankful that I continued as ignorant at our separation as to any detail from himself, relative to occurrences in his case, either there or here, as when we first met.

Leaving the residence of my kind friend, it appeared to me, if I acted consistently with my duty, I must call upon the police-master who arrested me when here before, and committed me to prison, (whereby my bodily health sustained

some injury,) and to give him my hand of love, for I felt nothing but love towards him as a man; this I accordingly did. He received my hand with marks of kindness. I also called upon the governor, who welcomed me again to Altona. Third-day, accompanied by my kind friend Thomas Christy, we proceeded to the senate-house to call upon the chief magistrate; we were received with great respect by the different officers of the state, and were introduced to him, although he had many persons with him, and others waiting in an anti-room, also crowds of people at the entrance, waiting to be admitted to him. At the sight of us, his countenance manifested the pleasure which our meeting once more afforded him, and I could say it was mutual: he suspended his business to give us some account of the state of things amongst them, since my first visit to Hamburgh; saying, with apparent satisfaction marked by his expressions, that improvement in morality was making progress in the city; that twelve young women were about leaving the penitentiary, some to return to their own homes, and others to service; and in order that such as had no parents might be sheltered from the danger of falling into the like temptations again, a house was provided to receive them on leaving the penitentiary, and work provided for them, until suitable situations could be found for them; which house was solely under the management of some of the respectable female inhabitants; and he added, that hopes were entertained of further improvements taking place. I had previously heard a similar report, and also that some progress was made in the better passing of the First-day. Previously to our landing, papers were brought on board our vessel, by an officer of the police, for the regulation of the behaviour of the sailors on shore, which produced no little cheering in my mind, hoping, from this circumstance, something good was at work at Hamburgh; and however slow it may advance, yet, if it keeps proceeding, hopes may be entertained, that in time this improvement will become yet more conspicuous. Feeling tender of the time of the magistrate, and of the time and feelings of the numerous persons waiting to have a hearing, we concluded to withdraw, and make him another call. At our parting he furnished us with an order to inspect their new establishment for the reception of the sick, presenting us each with a handsome engraving of Cuxhaven, the lighthouse, bathing-rooms, &c. which I cheerfully accepted, from a belief that he designed it as a token of his respect. Understanding that the old senator on Hamburgh Burgh had been removed by death since I was last here, and the power of remedying the evils still existing on the burgh now rested with his son, as senator and bailiff of the burgh: feeling my mind drawn to make him a visit, I found I must either cheerfully give up to it, or endanger my incurring the displeasure of that Almighty power, who never yet had failed



to be strength to me in seasons of the greatest weakness: I therefore informed my dear companion, Thomas Christy, how it was with me.

Fourth-day, Thomas Christy and myself, accompanied by Morris Birkbeck, of Hamburgh, proceeded to his residence on the burgh; but he was from home. The task of paying him this visit, was so truly humiliating to the creaturely part in me, that I would gladly have excused myself from any further attempt to see him; but a mode of procedure like this, I was soon fully satisfied would not prove likely to secure for me, that future aid and assistance, which, from the nature and extent of my religious prospects, I should stand in great need of from Israel's Shepherd; I therefore endeavoured to ascertain when he was most certain to be at home; which being done, we left a message, proposing to wait upon him at a time likely to be the most suitable.

Whilst I was on a religious visit to the Continent of Europe before, I was informed there were pleasure-gardens of considerable extent in the neighbourhood of Altona, which the proprietor was in the practice of setting open the whole of the First-day of the week for the amusement of the public; which had a tendency to draw multitudes of persons from their homes, to herd together in the drinking-houses in the neighbourhood, and to neglect the attendance of a place of religious worship. This subject took such hold of my mind, that I was led to apprehend I should not acquit myself faithfully, either towards my great and good Master, or the proprietor of these pleasure-gardens, unless I was willing, when the way clearly opened for it, to make him a visit on the occasion. Although I felt myself at times weighed down with exercise, when the subject came before me on a former occasion, yet the way never opened with clearness to obtain an interview when I left Altona before.

On our leaving the residence of the police-master at Hamburgh Burgh, I told my companion, Thomas Christy, how it had fared with me when here before, relative to the proprietor of these pleasure-gardens; and that I believed now was the acceptable time for me to make an attempt to obtain an interview with him: we therefore proceeded to his house; but on inquiry found he was gone to business: this circumstance of our not finding him at home, as I had hoped at this early hour in the morning, for the moment discouraged me, fearing an opportunity with him in his counting-house might not be attended with that quietness of mind I was so desirous of finding him in. We however proceeded to his counting-house, where I had hoped to find him in a room alone; but we were introduced to him amidst numerous other persons, who gazed upon us, I suppose on account of our keeping on our hats. On requesting an interview with him he readily consented, but did not leave his desk, as I expected he would have done;

this occasioned me fresh discouragement, as it did not appear to me it would be right to say, what I might have to communicate to him, before others. I therefore requested a private interview with him, to which he appeared readily to comply, and took us into another apartment. Strength being given me, I laid before him the different views which arose in my mind, of the sorrowful consequences likely to result, from his opening the gardens on the First-day of the week for the amusement of the public, and more especially so in the early part of that day : he appeared to receive what I had to offer in an agreeable disposition of mind ; saying, he was fully sensible of the purity of my motive, and what I had thus thrown before him would become a subject of his consideration. I returned to our hotel, making sweet melody in my heart to the Lord, in that he had not only given me courage to press through every discouragement, and favoured me with strength to discharge this debt, but had also opened a door in the mind of our friend to receive what I had to offer.

Fifth-day morning, agreeable to our appointment we waited upon the police-master and senator in Hamburgh Burgh. I found I must endeavour to acquit myself faithfully towards him, if peace of mind was to be my portion ; although I should find it hard work, yet I believed there must be no attempting to palliate any thing I might have to lay before him. I informed him of some observations that were made to me by the president and police-master of Altona, relative to the very notorious manner the First-day of the week was abused in the Burgh, and the wickedness from week to week I had seen practised there the whole of that day, which should be set apart for the purpose of religious worship ; giving it as my firm belief, that unless he, the senator, did his very best towards removing these evil practices, he would find in a future day, that a great load of the iniquity thus practised, would rest on his own shoulders. He informed us attempts had of late been made to remove some of the evils I had enumerated ; that the females who used to sit in front of the houses to entrap the unwary, were compelled to keep close in their houses : this improvement I thought I had noticed as I passed over the Burgh. He further informed us, that much lay with an old senator, who lived at Hamburgh, towards making further improvement in the state of things ; and he declared his willingness to do his part towards it, provided his said colleague, was willing to strengthen his hands. I had been informed that the great saloon, which is very much resorted to on First-day evenings by disorderly women, and many of the houses in the Burgh, which harbour those females, was the property of this young man's father : finding this property had chiefly fallen to him, I believed, if I did my Divine Master's work faithfully, I must tell him that the

money produced to him by these means, would never prosper with him, and that he would not be permitted to have any enjoyment of it. We parted, as far as I was capable of observing, in a friendly manner; for which I felt truly thankful. I found I must discover the residence of the old senator at Hamburgh, to whom he had alluded; which we accordingly did. We then paid a visit to the great hospital, which we were informed was capable of accommodating fourteen hundred patients, male and female: one of the committee, in addition to the apothecary, conducted us through the different apartments: the cleanliness, comfort, and order of the institution, together with the magnitude of it, was, I believe, truly gratifying to all our company. In one of the wards, something arose in my mind to leave amongst them: it was pleasant to observe the quiet and attention manifested on the occasion, and the affection shown at our parting.

Sixth-day morning, accompanied by my dear companion, Thomas Christy, we proceeded to the residence of the old senator, the colleague of the young man above mentioned—the senator on the Burgh; but I was under considerable embarrassment of mind; for Morris Birkbeck, whom I had looked to for our interpreter, was prevented attending upon us: which ever way my attention was turned for help, all seemed in vain: when reaching his house we were not able to make ourselves understood by any of the family. We therefore came away again; but discouraging as our prospects were, I durst not give up the matter, as one not to be accomplished, if I persevered in doing my very best towards it; yet my greatest fear was, lest, while I was in search of an interpreter, he should leave his house, and so slip away from us: but we had not gone many yards from the house, before I met with one of the principal officers of the police, who had always carried himself handsomely towards me when at the Stadt-house; he was a German, and spoke English well. I thought I felt that in my own mind, which would warrant me to stop him, and tell him, I arrested him into my service; which I accordingly did. Being taken by surprise, and unacquainted with the subject I meant to impose upon him to translate, he appeared, at first, rather to hesitate; but he soon readily consented to render me the help I might require of him. We all proceeded to the house of the old senator again, and were shortly after introduced to him. I endeavoured, as matter arose in my mind, to lay things close home to him, which he appeared to bear more patiently, than might have been expected, from his apparent marks of consequence and his advanced life.

Feeling my mind drawn to make a visit to the prisoners, we obtained liberty for it; and on Seventh-day morning, accompanied by my companion, Thomas Christy, and a merchant of the city, who gratuitously fills the office of inspector, we proceeded to the prison; which, being under considerable repair, did



not admit of the prisoners being generally assembled: there was no other way, therefore, but to visit them in their cells; where we found ten, sometimes twelve, confined together. On the men's side of the prison, in the first cell, we found ten men, nine of whom we were informed were desperate characters: the first sight of them, together with the confined space within which we were locked together with them, felt to me trying, as I concluded, the keeper (who was with us) could do very little to effect our safety, should they be disposed, from any thing that might be communicated, to take offence, and resent it upon us: but being enabled to flee to the great Keeper of us all, who had never yet failed to care for me in my most trying moments, He was pleased to give me the unshaken assurance, that if I was faithful in delivering his whole counsel, not a hair of my head should be suffered to be harmed; and strength was given me to put on courage and trust in his name, in breaking silence. On requesting our kind friend the merchant, to interpret for me, he at first appeared at a loss to understand my views; but hesitation did not long remain with him, for he soon manifested zeal in the cause, being evidently helped by best help: his ready flow of expression was striking to us both, as well as the effect which appeared on the minds of the prisoners; so that if the prisoners felt evil-disposed towards us, that evil disposition was chained down. I had many hard things to say to them, yet accompanied by a language of encouragement to seek for Divine help, to be enabled so to conduct themselves towards each other, as that, by their example, they might be instrumental in improving each other's minds; and thereby become improved, under the trying situation in which they were placed, by learning obedience to the Divine law, by the things they were now suffering. From the countenance of one of the prisoners, I was led to apprehend he hardly could bear some part of what I had to communicate; but they parted from us respectfully. Our feelings of sympathy were much excited on hearing of the situation of one of the prisoners, a young man about thirty years of age, neat and clean in his person, of a very interesting countenance, and of agreeable manners, who was sentenced to this mode of confinement for life, in consequence of a murder which he had committed when about sixteen years of age: during and after this opportunity, the tears kept rolling down his cheeks; his heart seemed so full, he had not power to express a word of his feelings. We were informed his character for good behaviour stood high in the estimation of the conductors of the prison, and that attempts had been made to have some part of his sentence remitted; but the attempt had failed. Although I felt much for him respecting his future prospects of confinement, yet not sufficient to warrant any interference on my part; for watchfulness was necessary, lest the affectionate part should be set to work unbidden. After visit-

ing more of the men's cells, and some of the women's apartments, my bodily strength so failed, notwithstanding the increasingly animating manner in which my interpreter conducted himself, that I was obliged to retire to the parlour of the prison; where every kind attention was paid me. Feeling myself a little recruited, but not equal to endure further excitement, nor did I feel pressed in my own mind to attempt it, we took our leave, acknowledging the kind attention that had been shown us: our obliging interpreter also expressed, in a feeling manner, the satisfaction which he had had in accompanying us. We were much gratified by the cleanliness and order which we observed in the prison, and in the persons of the prisoners, and in finding that every prisoner was in possession of a Testament and other religious books, and that at a stated time every day, the practice of having the Scriptures read in each of the cells was obligatory. I returned to my hotel, with the heart-felt language of "Bless the Lord, O my soul, and all that is within me, bless his holy name:" may I never be suffered to forget all his manifold benefits; may the help he has condescended to vouchsafe to me this day, both immediately and instrumentally, be so imprinted on my mind, and be remembered in my future seasons of conflict, as that dismay may not be permitted to prevail; but that the language of my soul may continue to be, "Draw me, O Lord, and I will again run after thee."

Feeling clear of Hamburgh, about mid-day we crossed the Elbe to Harburgh, in the Hanoverian dominions. First-day intervening, by travelling hard on Second-day, we reached Hanover in the evening. I apprehended it would not be safe for me to leave Hanover, without attempting to obtain an interview with the Duke of Cambridge, who is governor. We inquired how an interview was to be obtained; but this inquiry did not afford us much encouragement, understanding that the duke had arrived late the evening before, from a long journey, and that matters of state would be likely to claim his immediate attention, as he was to leave Hanover again the following day: we however took such steps towards it, as we were directed. We made a call upon my friend, who, when I was travelling from Cassel to Frankfort on the Main, rendered me his kind assistance: our thus unexpectedly meeting again, appeared to be mutually gratifying. He informed us he had been at the palace, and was struck with seeing my name in the book there. A messenger soon informed us an audience would be granted, at the time concluded on by the Duke. This introduced me into fresh exercise, and earnest were my cries to the Lord for help, to be found faithful in delivering his whole counsel, however in the cross to the creaturely part; and to deliver it as well as to hear and receive it. These engagements, if rightly entered upon, from the nature of the situation occupied by the parties visited, tend much, very

much, to reduce and humble the creature; great care being necessary to give no just occasion of offence in word or deed, and also to be preserved from daubing as with untempered mortar, and sewing pillows under the arm-holes, crying peace, when war is the word to be proclaimed against Babylon, as it respects either spiritual or carnal things.

Third-day morning, accompanied by my kind companion, we proceeded to the palace, to be in readiness when called upon: it was soon announced that the duke was in readiness to receive us. My feelings, at this moment, may more easily be conceived by such as have been placed in a similar situation, than words can describe; for all that ever I had aforetime experienced, of the puttings forth of the great and good Shepherd of his sheep, seemed to flee away, as if I never had been acquainted at any time with it: but Divine mercy did not suffer me to sink below hope of its being again renewed; and that he who had thus called to the work, would care for its completion, and not only be to me mouth and wisdom, tongue and utterance, but also would open the way in the mind of the duke, to receive that which was given me for communication. The duke received us in a very respectful manner. Feeling it laid upon me to remark on the grievous abuse of the First-day of the week in Hanover, I endeavoured to do it faithfully, giving him a detail of my proceedings respecting it since I was there before, by addressing the king at home on the subject. I presented the duke with a book on the doctrinals of Friends, and a German copy of the address to Hamburgh; which he obligingly received. I thought, as I proceeded, I felt the way open in the mind of the duke, for receiving what I had to communicate; I could not refrain offering my hand at our parting, which the duke accepted; and I can say, it is with feelings of near affection towards him that I make this record. We were afterwards informed, through a channel of which we could not doubt the correctness, that our visit had been an acceptable one to the duke.

One woe is passed, but another has risen up. I found the way would not open for us to quit Hanover, until I attempted to obtain an interview with the head police-magistrate. On my informing my kind companion hereof, we proceeded to the police-office, where we found him. We were received by him in a courteous manner; after taking our seats, strength was in mercy given me to impress on his mind, the necessity of his feeling the responsible situation in which he had placed himself, by accepting as he had done the office which he now filled under the government; that he might be able to see how much lay in his power to do, towards remedying the evils which I had enumerated as existing in Hanover; giving it as my firm belief, that so far as he fell short in faithfully doing his utmost towards their being



removed, the evil consequences resulting from their continuance would rest on his shoulders, and he would have a sad account to give in that great day, when all would have to render an account of their time and talents. It was no easy task to be found faithful, when hard things were given me to communicate, lest he should rise up in opposition, as we were completely in his power : as a man, I also felt not a little for my dear companion ; but I was thankful, as I proceeded, in believing such fears as these were groundless ; and what was communicated to him was received in love. He took an affectionate leave of us, and refused the usual fees on granting us our passports.

Feeling my mind released from further service in Hanover, we proceeded on our journey, and reached Minden that night, about thirty-five English miles. Fifth-day morning, we called upon our ancient friend, Frederick Smidt, who, although fast declining as to the body, appeared in a sweet, tender frame of mind. After he had recovered from the surprise the sight of us occasioned, he appeared cheered at once more seeing Friends from England. Feeling drawings in my mind to sit with Friends in their families at Edenhausen and Hilla, accompanied by Lewis Seeböhm of Pymont, and John Rash of Minden, we proceeded to Edenhausen, and entered on the work ; accomplished four visits that evening, and returned, not a little fatigued, to our quarters ; where our kind hostess had done her best in providing beds for us. I was favoured to pass the night better than I had anticipated ; although my weary body was not much refreshed, yet I hope I was not deficient in cherishing a grateful disposition for this very best accommodation, which our friends could with their slender means afford us ; for truly nothing appeared to be wanting on their parts to add to our comfort. Sixth-day, we visited the remainder of the families, and reached Minden that evening.

Seventh-day, we proceeded to Hilla, about ten English miles from Minden, sat with a single man, also with one large interesting family, the children being all grown up to man's estate, and then with a man and his wife ; these being the whole that compose this meeting. Recurring to a consideration that frequently arrests my attention, as the day is closing upon me—" Here is another day passed over to give an account of ;" the retrospect of which afresh excited in my mind feelings of gratitude, for the help mercifully vouchsafed to us by the great head of the church.

We returned to Minden, and had a sitting in one family ; but my companion finding himself much exhausted, which was the case also with myself, we were obliged to relinquish our intention of proceeding further in the visit that evening. Feeling my mind engaged to sit with such of the inhabitants of Edenhausen as had separated themselves from the national place of religious worship, which circumstance had taken place since I was in this neighbour-

hood before, I proposed the same to Friends of Minden; and if way opened for it, for them to conclude about the time. First-day afternoon appearing the most suitable for holding this meeting, the two months' meeting falling in course on that afternoon, it was concluded for a few Friends to meet as usual, and adjourn it to Second-day. First-day morning, the meeting for worship at Minden was numerously attended by Friends and others: considerable labour fell to my lot. When the meeting broke up, the people generally, appeared loving towards us, especially some military officers. Although to the creaturely part in me, it was hard work, to acquit myself faithfully amongst them, so that I could gladly have taken my seat again earlier than I did, (if I durst have done so,) the retrospect afforded a consoling hope, that I had been in the way of my duty; which was fresh cause for thankfulness, that my great and good Master had counted me worthy, by strengthening me, to advocate his glorious cause amongst men. In the afternoon, accompanied by my kind companion, Thomas Christy, we proceeded to Edenhausen; the meeting was held with much quiet in a long hall: about eighty Friends and others assembled. I was led humbly to hope that it proved a season of profit to many. We returned to Minden in the evening. Second-day morning, Friends met; and after a suitable time spent in quiet, the business of the two months' meeting was proceeded with: it was consoling to our minds to observe such a willingness to allow ample time for deliberation, on the several subjects that came before the meeting; also the unanimity that prevailed, and the care to make way for us, who were strangers, fully to relieve our minds.

One of the Friends of Edenhausen, Earns Pytesmyer, having been under prosecution for military demands, and we being desirous to come at a clear knowledge of his case, we invited him to our hotel. In the course of our investigation of his case, it appeared that he had prepared a petition to the king of Prussia; but from his very remote situation from Berlin, and the want of means to undertake the journey, his case seemed a very hopeless one. As we had a prospect of being at Berlin, and feeling much for the Friend under his sufferings, which appeared to afflict him sorely, we obtained a sight of his petition. Friends again met in the afternoon, according to adjournment; the queries were answered; the meeting continued to be conducted in much harmony, and separated under a thankful sense, that Divine goodness had condescended to be near for our help. Third-day morning, we called upon an individual who had forfeited his membership in the Society of Friends, when I was here before: my mind had then been introduced into a feeling for his situation, but suffering the right opportunity to pass by, when I should have relieved my mind towards him, the way did not clearly open afterwards

for it: but his situation coming again fresh before me, I thankfully embraced this opportunity of endeavouring to discharge this duty. Although I had no reason, from my own feelings, to suppose, that what I had to offer was resisted; yet a fear attended my mind, that it found but little entrance into his. What a mercy it should be esteemed by us, when our unfaithfulness, in not observing the right time of moving in our religious duty, does not cause our Divine Master quite to turn his back upon us; but that he is willing to employ us again. But O! the care which is necessary that we do not presume on this his unmerited mercy; as our faithfulness out of season deprives us of that fulness of reward, which otherwise would be our experience. We returned to our hotel, and by the help of our kind friend, Lewis Seeböhm, entered into the consideration of the petition of Earns Pytesmyer (the Friend of Edenhausen) to the king of Prussia, against whom it appeared judgment had been given, but not executed. We endeavoured fully to investigate the nature and several bearings of the judgment of the tribunal, that had passed the cruel sentence against him;\* and after making some alterations in the petition, it was put in a train to be transcribed, and to receive the signature of Earns Pytesmyer. When at times looking towards Berlin, apprehensions kept rising up in my mind, that it would be required of me to endeavour when there, to obtain an interview with the king: from information we had received, it appeared he was at a watering-place, a great distance from Berlin, where he was to take up his abode for some time: this occasioned me fresh conflict of spirit, from the strait I felt myself brought into, how to proceed when I was clear of Pymont; whether to proceed to the watering-place, where report said the king had taken up his abode for some time; or whether we should go to Berlin. Earnest were my secret cries to the Almighty, when my mind was free from exercise on other religious accounts, that I might be directed herein by my Divine Master. If we proceeded from Pymont to the watering-place, and the king should have left it for Berlin, our following him there would occasion us some days' unnecessary travelling; but after all my anxiety on this subject, if I was favoured to prosecute what I at present had before me, so as to afford a peaceful retrospect on my leaving Pymont, the business of the morrow must be left to the morrow; with the assurance, that as was the day, so would be the counsel and help for the fulfilling the business of the day; if there was but a moving forward one day at a time in simplicity: and here I was enabled to leave this subject for the present. Fourth-day, our visit to the families of Friends here was brought to a close. Fifth-day, I

\* [That his property should be confiscated; that he should be incapable of inheriting any property, and of carrying on any business in that country.]



went to meeting, very unequal to face a crowd—poor, blind, naked, and miserable indeed; gladly would I have been, could I have found a sufficient excuse from the indisposition I laboured under from a sleepless night, to have remained at our hotel; but this could not be: the meeting was numerously attended by Friends and others; and in it strength was afforded me to labour, and to obtain relief to my own poor, tried mind. The people separated in a quiet, solid manner,—many manifesting an affectionate regard towards us.

After taking rest and refreshment, we took an affectionate farewell of Friends there, which caused many tears and expressions of deep heartfelt sorrow, to which their countenances bore witness. We proceeded towards Pymont: our first halt was at Buckenburgh. We called on the counsellor of the chamber of the prince and his sister; her countenance appeared placid, and her mind much more quiet than when I saw her before: our unexpected visit was very grateful to them. We proceeded to Hameln, where we took up our abode for the night. Fifth-day, we reached Pymont, and proceeded with a visit to the families of Friends. Sixth and Seventh-day, we continued our visit to the families. First-day, the meeting was numerously attended by strangers; the frequent going out and coming in of such, was an exercise of patience. At the reading meeting in the evening, the members and attenders of meeting very generally gave us their company: a sense of holy solemnity was mercifully to be felt near to us, during the time of silence, of reading, and of verbal communication; for which favour I believe most of our minds experienced a sense of thankfulness.

Fourth-day, we began to make preparations for our departure from Pymont; attended the usual meeting, and took an affectionate leave of Friends: finished packing our luggage. We proceeded to Hameln that evening, where we lodged. Fifth-day morning, by starting early, we reached Brunswick to lodge, weary in body, but I believe we could say, peaceful in mind; which was cause for great thankfulness on my part. Sixth-day, we left Brunswick, where we had been informed the king of Prussia was to leave Toplitz for Berlin, but that his stay would be very short there: this information made it needful for us to use our utmost endeavours to reach Burgh that night, a journey of seventy-five English miles, which we were favoured to accomplish at a late hour, much exhausted through the shaking of our waggon over the bad roads. The nearer we approached the capital, the more the weight of the prospect before me increased.

Seventh-day, we left Burgh, intending to reach Potsdam, a journey of sixty-five English miles, by night, which we were favoured to accomplish. First-day we remained quiet in our hotel, until we understood the places of worship were closed. Ne-

cessity appearing to compel us to leave Potsdam for Berlin, a journey of about twenty English miles, we were favoured to arrive there safely, late in the evening. We had been addressed to private lodgings; but when we arrived at the house, the whole of the family were from home: fatigued in body, and under increasing exercise of mind, I had been looking forward with some degree of comfortable hope, when we reached Berlin, I should be favoured to witness some outward quiet in private lodgings; but, alas! my disappointment in this respect was very trying to the fleshly part, as night was fast approaching. Persons who passed the streets observing we were strangers, and labouring under difficulty, proposed to our interpreter different places for our accommodation; at last we proceeded to the place we understood the most likely for us to find shelter, which proved to be only a common waggoners' house, and so full of guests as scarcely to allow of our finding beds: here we were glad to lay down our weary bones, although our bed-room windows looked into the common stable-yard, and the traffic which was going forward there during the night allowed of but little quiet: our bed-rooms were very small, and abounded with fleas and flies; the weather was extremely hot: this, together with the smells from the numerous stables, and a violent storm of thunder and lightning, occasioned my having a very distressing night. Second-day, we procured lodgings which promised us more comfort: about mid-day, accompanied by my kind companion and Lewis Seeböhm, we proceeded to one of the universities in search of a professor, with whom I had made an acquaintance when at Ham-burgh; he not being at home, we left our address. In the course of the evening he made us an agreeable visit, and offered to give me the names of a few serious persons in Berlin, which I gladly accepted, under feelings that led me to hope they would prove the means, in some way, of helping me in the prosecution of my religious prospects there, as I had come without reference, except being in possession of a letter from a kind friend in England, addressed to a person who, it appeared, was one of the chaplains in attendance about the court. Having heard of William Hoffman, who, by the inhabitants of Berlin, was reputed to be of our religious Society, we made him a call that evening. We found him living in a poor, miserable apartment; his room so small, we could scarcely sit down to be comfortable. We learnt that his means of subsistence were derived from teaching a few young men the French and English languages. It appeared, during our conversation with him, that he was one amongst many more, whose minds had been awakened, when Sarah Grubb visited these parts; most of whom, he told us, were now removed by death, and others had sorrowfully made shipwreck of their faith. Wil-liam Hoffman, it appeared, did not associate for worship with any

of the different professors, but secluded himself very much from society : from reports we received, he was much esteemed for his circumspect conduct. He had several Friends' books in his possession ; we added to his little stock as far as our means allowed, and left him under feelings of regard. Third-day morning, we called upon an individual, towards whom my heart glowed with feelings of religious love, although quite strangers to each other : by endeavouring to abide under these precious feelings, willing, should any little service be called for, to be faithful therein, matter was given for communication : by yielding obedience I found peace, accompanied by a belief that my offering was well received.

Whilst on my way from Pymont, my mind was at times tried with the consideration of how I was to proceed, should my prospect continue with me of a visit to the King of Prussia, in order that an interview might be obtained ; for want of introductions, having nothing but the letter given me by a kind friend in England, I endeavoured at times to console myself with a hope that this letter would be able to do the needful for me ; but the event proved this was not to be the means through which my help was to come. We next proceeded to the residence of the person to whom this letter was addressed ; but he was not at home. This disappointment produced fresh cause in my mind to seek for Divine help, to be preserved in a becoming manner in the exercise of faith and patience ; earnestly craving of the Lord that all my movements might be directed by Him. We concluded to make another attempt to present this letter, and proceeded accordingly, under anxious feelings of mind, to meet with him. The subject of an interview with the king pressed now with increasing weight on my mind, accompanied by a fear, lest the want of prudent promptness on my part, or a too hasty movement to attempt its being effected, should mar all my hopes of a faithful discharge of duty, and involve me in condemnation of mind, from which I never might be able to rise ; but adorable mercy did not leave me to become a prey to the temptation of despair, but awakened afresh in my mind the assurance, that, although some bitter cups would be meted out to me to drink, before the way would open with clearness for me to take my departure from Berlin, yet if I maintained a full and perfect reliance on that never-failing arm of Omnipotence, which thus far had carried me through my many provings, I should still find it to be all-sufficient, and know of a truth the Lord's strength to become perfect in the times of my greatest weakness. When we reached the residence of this person, again we were alike disappointed ; and from the feelings of my own mind, I believed it would be safest for me, at present, not to make further attempts to see him.

We returned to our hotel, and endeavoured to sit down in



quiet : after awhile the way seemed to open on my mind with a degree of clearness, that it would be right to read over deliberately the list of names of serious persons given us by my friend the professor, who called upon us from the university ; this we accordingly did, and with a care on my part whilst they were being read over, if the feelings of my mind were particularly directed to one name more than another, to keep that name in view ; and when the list was gone through, to see how far it would be right for me to make such individual a call. Whilst the list was thus read over, my mind was in a particular manner bound in spirit to an individual therein named, I therefore proposed our proceeding to his residence, which we accordingly did ; but he was absent from home. Although I felt some disappointment, yet I was not discouraged ; for a secret hope attended my mind, that I was now in a proper channel for help : we then made inquiry when we should be most likely to meet with him at home, which having learned, I was favoured to return in quietness to our hotel, and I retired to rest ; enabled under holy help to renew covenant, to be willing to do my very best, in accomplishing whatsoever appeared to be the Divine mind and will concerning me, whilst resident here.

Fourth-day morning, 4th of 8th mo. 1824, we again proceeded to the residence of the individual, who yesterday was absent from home ; finding him within, we sent a request by the servant, that when it was convenient, he would allow us to have an interview with him ; on which we were soon shown to his apartment. I presented him with my certificates, which he appeared to read with attention : feeling as I did the evidence in my own mind that I had now taken the right course towards way being made for the discharge of apprehended duty ; I felt as if I was with a well-disposed friend, although, as to the outward, we were total strangers to each other. During the time he was reading my certificates, I was afforded a suitable opportunity for retirement of mind, with a view to my seeing with some degree of clearness how I was to proceed, in order to my receiving that help from him, which it was the design of my Divine Master he should afford me. I then informed him of my apprehensions of duty, to obtain, if possible, an interview with the king, and that I must throw myself upon him for help, in pointing out the most certain way for me to proceed to obtain an interview : this appeared to affect his mind with momentary embarrassment, but as it regarded myself, the belief I was favoured with, that these my movements were thus far ordered by the Lord, gave me confidence, that all would work together for good at last. After pausing, he gave us the address of Count ———, who, we were informed, filled a station about the court, as likely to afford me help, and he encouraged us to call on the countess, and make use of his name. This interview thus

far was cheering to my mind, and acted as a spur to my exertions.

The king, we were informed, was expected at Berlin that day for a short time. The call was proclaimed in the ear of my soul, to lose no time in the attempt to obtain an interview with the Count ———: we therefore made the best of our way to his residence; but on our arrival we found he was from home. We made application for an interview with the countess, which was readily granted us: she spoke good English, so that our interview promised more satisfaction than otherwise might have been the case; and the more so, from the proof she gave us in conversing with her, of her genuine piety and true humility of manners, standing in the exalted station which she did. Whilst we were in conversation with her, a person advanced in life entered the room, who, from the ribbons and stars which hung about his person, appeared to be a man of some distinction in the government: he took his seat amongst us, and we found he spoke some English, which I had a fear would prove an obstruction to my having such a full and select opportunity with the countess as appeared desirable: but I was assured in my own mind I need not be afraid, before this person, to present the countess with my certificates to read; as this appeared to me to be the best way to proceed preparatory to my informing her of my views in calling upon her. Being desirous of having as early an interview as could be well allowed us with the count, after waiting awhile, not knowing but our new comer-in would soon depart, which not taking place, all my fears respecting him vanished, and I could no longer hesitate to present my certificates to the countess, and afterwards to our new comer-in: the latter appeared to read them with much interest, making his observations on parts as he went along, so that it was evident that his mind was favourably impressed towards our religious Society. My good Master having thus in mercy condescended to open a wide door for me, to lay before the countess and her visitor my apprehensions of duty to have an interview with the king and his son the crown-prince, I accordingly did so; during which, I thought I felt as I went along, that they were in degree permitted to be dipped into a feeling of my situation, and that interest was excited in their minds on my account. I presented the stranger with a copy of the address to Hamburgh, which he read; and having finished the reading of it, he said, he was to meet the king on his arrival, to whom he should present the address, and inform him of my request to have an interview with him. At his departure he expressed in a feeling manner the desire which he entertained, that the Divine blessing might attend my engagements. We then took leave of the countess, concluding to wait on the count the next morning.

Fifth-day morning, we proceeded to the residence of the Count

——— ; on our getting sight of the house, I observed a carriage drive swiftly from the door, which led me to fear we should be disappointed in seeing him, which proved to be the case. The countess hearing we were in the hall, had us invited into her sitting-room ; and we passed a considerable time in conversation with her and her female companion, which perhaps at another time would have been very interesting to me ; but being made somewhat sorrowful because of our having missed the count, I was deprived of that pleasure, which I was led to apprehend my dear companion T. Christy partook of : we returned to our hotel, and in the evening we made a further attempt, and found the count at home. On our being introduced to him, I thought it was evident the countess had prepared his mind for the business we were come upon, as he received us with open arms. We sat down together under feelings of much solemnity ; I gave him my certificates to read, and then laid before him my prospect of duty to attempt an interview with the king and his son, the crown-prince ; telling the count I must throw myself upon him for help, and requesting his utmost exertions for my relief. I felt such an evidence, after I had thus expressed myself, of his willingness to do his part faithfully towards my views being accomplished, that I was fully satisfied with the matter being thus left under his care. We returned again to our hotel, and shortly after this interview with the count, information was received that the crown-prince had been applied to on my account, and that the time for our waiting on him was concluded upon ; at which the creaturely part in me began to feel dismay : but O ! the merciful evidence I was favoured with, that the all-sufficient arm would be near to sustain me in the needful time ; whereby I was enabled to hold up my head in hope, that neither the cause in which I was engaged, nor my kind friend the count, who had thus been in part instrumental in making way for me, would become disgraced through me.

Fifth-day, 11th of 8th mo. this day being appointed for our having an interview with the crown-prince, we left our hotel accordingly,—I may say of myself, feeble in body and feeble in mind ; and arrived at the castle. The prince's apartments being under repair, he had taken up his abode in a different part of the castle, and our guide not being expert in inquiring for the prince's new apartments, we lost much time in finding the entrance to them ; this added not a little to the discouragement of mind I was suffering under, fearing that we should be behind the time appointed by the prince. At length we made out the entrance, and were shown into an anti-room, in which were several livery-servants, attendants on the prince, one of whom took charge of us : our passing through the rooms with our hats on, appeared to excite surprise. After waiting awhile in the room, in which we were left by the servant, our



kind friend, the count, gave us his company ; and shortly after introduced us to the prince. On our entering the prince's apartment ; he received us in an affable manner, offering me his hand : having seen my certificates, he was by them acquainted with my views in coming to this country. After he had put some questions to me, and I had made replies, I informed him, that during my residence at Berlin, my mind had been renewedly impressed with a belief, that the present day was an important one to Prussia,—a day of renewed visitation from Almighty God,—a day in which the light of the glorious gospel of Christ Jesus our Lord, was afresh dawning in the hearts and minds of many of the inhabitants of that nation : to which the prince replied, he believed so too. I then added, “ earnest had been the prayer of my soul, that nothing on the part of the prince, the clergy, or the people, might be suffered to prevail, that would have a tendency to retard the progress of this good work ; but that Prussia might become the beauty of nations, and praise of the kingdoms and states that surround her : and in order that this good work might go forward in a way that I believed was consistent with the Divine will, there were some matters that must claim the proper attention of those who were in authority ; one of these matters had appeared to me to be, that endeavours should be used on the part of the government, to bring about a proper respect for the day called Sunday ; not a superstitious, but a correct religious observance of it, in a manner consistent with its original design ; otherwise, if things were suffered to go on as they then were, I was led to fear they would be the means of drawing down on Prussia the displeasure of Almighty God, and not his good pleasure.”

The prince appeared to receive kindly what was offered on this and other subjects ; and I concluded with expressing the desire which attended my mind, that the prince and princess might become true help-meets to each other, instrumental in the Divine hand in furthering each others' present and eternal welfare, and uniting in a concern to be found holding out, by their example, this language to each other and to the people at large, of, “ Come, let us go up to the house of the Lord, to the mountain of the God of Jacob ; who will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths.” At our parting, the prince taking hold of my hands, in a feeling manner said,—“ Do not forget me,—do not forget me.” On my saying, I hoped our keeping on our hats had not hurt the prince's feelings, he handsomely replied, “ If I had suffered my feelings to have been hurt by it, you would have had cause to have thought badly of me.” We presented the prince with several Friends' books, and the address to Hamburgh. The prince then informed us, he understood from the king, that arrangements were making for my having an interview with him also.

We made an early call on our kind friend the count, he being in attendance on the prince, when we made our visit to him, and for whom I felt much at the time, from his not being able to understand what passed ; and the responsibility that would attach to him, should any thing I might have had to say give offence: but on my informing him how it was with me in this respect, he replied, he was glad to be present at the opportunity ; for although he could understand but very little of what I had to say, yet he was satisfied that he was made sensible of the substance, from the feelings he had here, putting his hand to his heart. The prince also, after our departure, he said, told him, he rejoiced at having made acquaintance with those good men ; the count further adding, the desire which he felt, that we might remember him in our prayers to Almighty God.

## CHAPTER XXV.

No information having been received of the arrangements for our visit to the king, we waited on the Prince Witgenstein, who is in attendance on the king: he received us in an affable manner. On his being made acquainted with the cause of our thus calling on him, he informed us that the king had left Berlin for his palace at Charlottenburg, but was expected to return on Second-day; but as he should be with the king before that time, he would use his endeavours that my wishes should be accomplished. Having felt drawings in my mind to pay a visit to the prisoners in the state-prison at Spandau, about ten English miles from Berlin, to which criminals are removed after sentence is passed against them; and the subject coming before the view of my mind with increasing weight, whilst we were sitting with the Prince Witgenstein, and in a manner that led me to believe it would be right for me to open my prospects to him in this respect, I therefore mentioned the subject to him, requesting his advice how to proceed to obtain permission. I had rather doubted the liberty being granted us, as I understood that one of my countrymen, who had obtained this permission, had made such unfavourable reports in print, relative to the state of the prison and prisoners in various respects, that it gave great offence to those in power. The prince however put the question to me, whether curiosity was my motive for desiring to visit the prison; but when I told him my real motives for making the request to him, he appeared agreeably disposed to enter into my views, and gave us a letter. From the many titles upon the address of the letter, we supposed the person to whom it was addressed was a person of consequence in the government. With this letter we proceeded as directed: but, from the manner in which we were received, it did not give me a favourable opinion as to our reception by the person to whom the letter was addressed. I concluded our standing in his presence with our hats on, caused him to treat us with a kind of hauteur we had not before met with: this I found, without great watchfulness, the creature was ready to recoil at; but feeling the evidence in my own mind, that the cause which had brought us to him was not my own, but my Divine Master's,



I endeavoured to rise above noticing his treatment of us. We were ordered to be with him again the next morning. Seventh-day morning, we proceeded to ascertain the result of our visit with the letter presented yesterday. I was not wholly without apprehension, that our request would not be granted, from the manner in which we had been received: had this been the case, I could have sat down satisfied with a refusal, believing my movements thus far in the business, had been under the influence of best Wisdom, and that the will would be taken for the deed. Although the individual carried himself with as much distance towards us as before, yet he furnished us with two letters, one addressed to the governor of the prison at Spandau, and one to admit us to the town-prison; that for the town-prison we were ordered to present to the chief magistrate of the city for his signature. We accordingly proceeded to his residence. I may remark, that the town-prison is for the reception of those who are waiting to take their trial; here great caution is used in admitting persons of any description, before the prisoners have been tried. At first he spoke rather sharply to us; but when he enquired of me, was curiosity my motive for desiring to go to the town-prison, and I presented him with my certificates, and he had read them, he appeared cheerfully to add his signature to our order, saying, had not his engagements with government concerns required his attendance elsewhere, he would gladly have attended us himself. We proceeded to the prison and produced our order; the person in authority met us at the gate, and asked us, had we not called at his house, and been disappointed at not meeting with him at home. To our agreeable surprise, he proved to be the magistrate, whose name, amongst other serious persons in Berlin, had been furnished us by my kind young friend, the professor before mentioned. The countenance of our kind friend, the magistrate, bespoke the pleasure which the prospect of having to attend upon us afforded him; and from the feelings of affection awakened in my mind towards him, his company felt equally grateful to me. Our first visit was to a man about twenty years of age, in a room by himself; his legs were chained to the floor, and one arm to the wall; the cause of which, we were informed, was, that he had repeatedly made his escape from prison: he was committed to this prison for having twice wilfully set fire to buildings, whereby a whole village was destroyed; for which, about two years ago, sentence of death was passed upon him: but the merciful laws of Prussia, and the merciful disposition of the king, had thus far prolonged his life: his present coerced situation, notwithstanding the greatness of his crime, awakened in me every feeling of pity I was capable of. I endeavoured, as ability was afforded, to lay before him the awful situation he was placed in, through his own evil conduct, not knowing how soon an order

might come for his execution: he appeared very calmly to hear what I had to say, without, as we could observe, manifesting signs of sorrow for his conduct, or a sense of the awful uncertainty of his life, until, at our leaving him, I gave him my hand, when a change took place in his countenance, and he grasped my hand very sharply. I have since been informed, that the severest part of his sentence is, by the mercy of the king, remitted. We next proceeded to the women's department, consisting mostly of young persons: with them we had an interesting opportunity; most of them were brought to tears, manifesting at our parting, a grateful sense of this token of Divine regard: after which, we were conducted to a large room, in which, by order of our friend the magistrate, the keepers brought out the prisoners from their places of confinement, and collected them together. In addition to the magistrate, the keepers, and prisoners, we had the company of several genteel looking men, who remained until the opportunity closed, which was conducted with great quiet. At our parting, the prisoners generally evinced tenderness, giving us their hands at our leaving them.

After this we called upon the pastor, to whom my friend's letter was addressed. I was struck with his fine person, and the very polite manner with which he received us, and his great profession of pleasure it gave him in meeting with us. After he had read the letter of my friend, I presented him with my certificates. On my remarking to him the reproachful manner in which the first day of the week was occupied in Prussia, by business going forward in the day-time, and the theatres open in the evening, with dancing and card-parties, he expressed his surprise these practices should not be considered allowable; saying, it was his opinion people might be in such practices as these on the Sunday evening, and not be doing wrong; and should any of his hearers question him on the subject, he should not hesitate to give them liberty to do so. I requested him to consider the awful and important situation he had placed himself in, by accepting of his appointment as pastor, adding, if such were his real sentiments, which he had now been advancing, I hoped he would be very careful not to express them in future. He appeared confused, and as if he hardly knew how to bear what I had been offering to him; although the time spent with him was very exercising to my mind, yet I was thankful the opportunity had been afforded me, to testify against such unsoundness of principle, and to acknowledge the mercy it had been to me, that I had been disappointed by not being able to meet with him at home, in the more early stage of my being in Berlin; the probability would be, that instead of his helping my cause, I should have had to experience my way made more difficult from his situation and views.

First-day morning, my dear companion Thomas Christy, our kind interpreter, (a young man who had shown us much attention,) and myself, left Berlin for Spandau, where we arrived about ten o'clock. Whilst our breakfast was preparing, we made inquiry when (what is called) the service would be likely to close at the prison; apprehending if I could sit with them before they then separated, it would make less of a difficulty in my visiting the prisoners than by their being specially assembled for the purpose. Hearing the bell begin to chime for the prisoners to assemble in their place for religious worship, I placed myself at the door of our hotel, where I had a full view of the entrance into the prison: and when I observed a person I supposed to be the chaplain of the prison, making towards it, with my interpreter we met him before he entered the prison, to whom I proposed my sitting with the prisoners, after he had done with them. He informed us it rested with the governor to grant such permission; this being the case, we proceeded to the prison, and were introduced to the governor, who received us kindly. I informed him what my motives were for wishing to see the prisoners, and my desire to have them as much as possible all together; on which we were requested to attend at the prison at twelve o'clock, that being the dinner-hour of the prisoners, and then we were assured an opportunity of seeing them should be afforded me. I felt it right for me to request, that the pastor of the prison should be informed of our intention, and if he inclined to attend, his company would be acceptable.

We proceeded at the time appointed, and found the governor, at sight of us again, considerably agitated in mind, and alarmed at the prospect of my intended visit to the prisoners so generally together: he appeared to bring forward every excuse he was capable of, to discourage me from making the attempt, telling us that many of the prisoners were such desperately wicked creatures, that it would be dangerous for us to venture in amongst them. From that assurance I was favoured with, which never yet had failed me, I was persuaded that they would not be suffered to harm a hair of our heads; so that I felt as if I should not have hesitated to have gone in amongst them alone, could I have made them understand my language. Notwithstanding all the difficulties which the governor threw in our way, I found I must persist in my determination to see the prisoners, if it could possibly be allowed; when he observed I continued so firm in my determination, as that none of his arguments were sufficient to overcome me, and cause me to yield to his fears of consequences, he trembled, but at length yielded, and introduced us to the women prisoners; the pastor also gave us his company. Here we found about seventy assembled, which we understood were all the female prisoners, except a few who were ill. The pastor placed us on a flight of steps, and the governor



gathered them in a circle around us: quiet soon prevailed, such a quiet as I have not often known to be exceeded. Before I had expressed much of what I had to offer amongst them, the tears rolled down their cheeks: this tenderness spread nearly over the whole company; with some it appeared an effort to avoid crying out, under the sense they were favoured with in their own minds, of Divine conviction: one young woman was obliged to be borne away by some of her companions. This opportunity proved the most heart-melting which I ever was before a witness of: and on my informing them of my desire at our parting to give each of them my hand, they crowded round me in an affectionate manner for that purpose. The large portion of good wholesome provisions served out to the women, with the clean, neat appearance of their persons and apparel, and the order that appeared to be preserved, did great credit to the managers of this prison.

On our quitting the women, although I found the pastor and governor were well satisfied with our visit to them, yet I was aware that fear still predominated in the mind of the governor, and that a consultation was going forward how we were to see the men together, their yard not being considered a safe place for them all to be collected together: it felt evident to my mind that hesitation was still working in the mind of the governor, against our seeing the men all assembled; and he still expressed his fears, that a disturbance would take place amongst them, adding, that some of them were such terrible characters. However, I continued to feel that which I thought warranted me in saying, my confidence had not left me, and I was not afraid of going amongst them. The governor, finding his arguments did not prevail with me, proposed, that instead of admitting us now, as I had expected, we should come again to the prison at three in the afternoon, when he would have the men collected in the chapel: the event proved this delay was only to allow time to separate such prisoners as they feared were the most likely to commit outrage. I requested our interpreter to tell the pastor, I should be sorry to give just occasion of offence to him or any present by our keeping on our hats in their chapel, to which he replied, we were at liberty to use our own freedom in that respect. On entering the prison in the afternoon, we were followed by several persons of genteel appearance, besides the police-master and the principal officer of the military department. The governor then informed us, that the prisoners were collected in the chapel. Seeing a convenient seat near the pulpit, we took our seats there; quietness soon prevailed; the prisoners generally appeared solid and attentive to what was communicated: some of them were tendered to tears. The opportunity being over, the governor arranged the prisoners on one side of the chapel, as I had requested, to give each of them my hand at our parting, notwithstanding the flesh had pleaded against it, lest I should by such

means take a disease, or if any of the prisoners should be maliciously disposed, it would be affording them an opportunity of doing me an injury. They however passed away in a very orderly manner, and appeared grateful, pressing their hands in mine, and would have saluted it, had I not put them by from so doing. The number of men thus collected appeared few to what I had expected to have seen, and why it was so, I was at a loss to understand; and it so happened that I did not feel that relief to my own mind on leaving the men, as I had done when leaving the women. We retired to the governor's apartment; shortly after we had been there, he surprised me by laying before us, taken down in short-hand, what had been communicated in the chapel to the prisoners; this circumstance occasioned me some momentary embarrassment, but the retrospect afforded a peaceful reflection as far as I had gone. There still felt in my mind a shortness in our visit to the men, which I could not account for: however, we returned to Berlin, thankful to Almighty God for the help he had in mercy vouchsafed to us this day. As far as respected my visit to the women, my mind continued to feel fully relieved; but my visit to the men did not afford me that full relief I had hoped for, but why such should be the case I was still unable to understand.

Second-day, as the concern still remained with me to make a call on the Stadt-director and chief police-master, I again looked at attempting the discharge of this duty; but the way did not open for it with sufficient clearness to justify my proceeding. No intelligence as yet being received relative to an interview with the king, was indeed, an exercise of patience; and such were my plungings, that I was led to conclude, should a messenger arrive fixing the time for it, that I was not equal to the task. We received agreeable visits at our hotel, from the magistrate who attended upon us at the town-prison, and from the young man who accompanied us to Spandau, which proved a little cheering to my mind; believing they were, as well as others we have met with in Berlin, rightly concerned to be found seeking the way to Zion, with their faces thitherward. The cause of my mind not feeling fully relieved by my visit to the men prisoners at Spandau, now became developed: for it came out that the governor had separated the most desperate characters, and kept them back, so that we were not allowed to see them. This circumstance would, I feared, from my feelings, involve me in the necessity of attempting a further visit to them, which would be trying to my mind, as well as to my dear companion, Thomas Christy, who was soon expecting to leave Berlin for Hamburgh on his way home. I had at times entertained a hope, I should have been at liberty to have accompanied him thus far, on my way for Cronstadt in Russia; but every gate of Berlin appeared in my view closed against me: my prospect of a visit to the Stadt-director, and police-master, making

calls on persons I had not yet seen, and appointing a meeting for such as inclined to give their attendance, still remained with me ; but no authority was felt to move towards the accomplishment of them. My dear companion, as well as my friend Lewis Seeböhm, for whom my sympathy was excited, (as their calls home were now become very pressing,) were both solicitous, as well as myself, to be able to come at something definite with regard to an interview with the king : a further application to the prince Witgenstein was therefore proposed, but my way did not appear clear to move in it.

Third-day, on our way to the hotel, we met our kind friend who had given us the address to the Count ———, who informed us he had understood from very good authority, that the king had so many engagements before him, he would not be able to see us before he left Berlin. This report coming from an attendant at the court, my companion wished me to consider as decisive information ; but from my own feelings on the occasion, I could not give up the hope that the way might be made for me to obtain the desired interview ; and I believed that nothing would be so likely to bring it about as quietness and entire confidence, (if my concern was rightly begotten,) that the same Almighty Power who had thus begotten it in my mind, and in whose hands the heart of the king was, would, in his own time, make way for the accomplishment of it. We had not long returned to our hotel, before, to my humbling astonishment, a messenger arrived from the prince Witgenstein, requesting our interpreter to wait upon him : after waiting a considerable time to know the result, Lewis Seeböhm returned with a message from the prince, saying, that the king would receive us at Charlottenburgh the following day ; that all things would be arranged at the palace for our reception, and that the prince would introduce us to the king. Although, as far as respected the prospect of my more speedy release from Berlin, this message was relieving to my mind, yet the increased load of exercise of mind it occasioned, can only be felt to the full, by those who have been placed in a similar situation : to appear before an absolute monarch, whose word is law, to plead the cause of Him who remains to be King of kings, and faithfully to deliver His counsel, be it what it may, involves the mind in many awful considerations. The reception of this message, was followed by such a stripped state of mind, that I was tempted to conclude the movement I had thus made, was under the influence of the adversary of all good ; in order that my weakness might be exposed to those, in whose minds I had already found a place ; which brought on a severe attack of nervous cough, that tried me much ; yet under all these discouragements, I was favoured with strength to crave of the Lord my God, (who is all-sufficient to fill the vessel of my mind in the needful time,)



to empty and strip me, as he saw best for me, and best for the honour of his cause, when my faith and faithfulness to his requirements were to be put to the test. Oh! the earnest cries I was enabled to put up to be preserved, faithfully delivering that which I was favoured clearly to see to be the counsel of my Divine Master, without yielding to those slavish fears of man; which, if yielded to, more or less disqualify for doing the Lord's work faithfully.

Fourth-day morning, the fore part of the night I was favoured to sleep well, and to have my mind preserved quiet, which was another great favour; but I found that to witness this quiet state of mind, which was so essential to the well ordering of my steps in the prospect of duty now before me, unremitting watchfulness was indispensably necessary; as the adversary of all good was diligently watching his opportunity to set my mind afloat, with considerations of what I should say to introduce myself to the king; but Divine mercy bore me up against this torrent, which rushed upon my mind; for, indeed, had it been yielded to, it would have robbed me of the heavenly quiet in mercy dispensed.

We left our hotel this afternoon for Charlottenburgh, about four English miles from Berlin: on our arrival at the palace, the sentinel brandished his naked sabre to us to come forward, when a person, who spoke English, took charge of us, and conducted us into an apartment of the palace. As soon as the palace-clock struck three, the person in attendance upon us informed us the king had finished his dinner, saying, the king's practice was to sit down to the dinner-table at two o'clock, and rise again from it at three, allowing himself only one hour to take his dinner. In this respect I thought this monarch set a good example to the great men in my native land. The person in attendance upon us requested us to follow him into the garden, where the king would see us, as I had requested to be excused from an introduction in the usual form: this mode to me felt a pleasing one. Waiting at the spot where the king was to meet us, the person in attendance announced to us, "The king is now advancing up one of the avenues towards you," and immediately withdrew. The king then approached us, attended by the prince Witgenstein and his aide-de-camp: on coming up, he inquired, "What is your business?" We then first presented to him the petition of Earns Pytesmyer, which he took and handed it to his aide-de-camp: on the king's being informed the petition was on behalf of a member of our religious Society, who had been under prosecution on account of his conscientious scruples against serving as a military man, he replied, it was not his intention they should have proceeded thus against the Friend. On the king's being reminded, on a former occasion he had said, conscience with him was a sacred thing, he replied, "It is so, and the man shall not suffer." We afterwards heard that he remitted the whole of the sentence. I then re-

quested the king would accept of some Friends' books, which his aide-de-camp took charge of. Observing the king made use of some English expressions, on my saying, "I perceive the king does speak English;" he replied, "A very little." The important moment was now arrived, when I believed I was called upon to address the king in the Lord's name: on my taking off my hat when I began to speak, the king took off his cap. After I had expressed a few words, the king replied, "I see what he wants,—Sunday to be well observed; tell him I have read his address to Hamburgh, and it has pleased me much;" adding, "I wish the Lord may bless you in these your undertakings." I then declared it to be my belief, that the present was a very important day to Prussia,—a day of renewed visitation from Almighty God,—a day in which the light of the glorious gospel of Jesus Christ our Lord, was dawning in the souls of many of his subjects, and the desire which attended my mind was, that nothing might be suffered to retard the progress of this glorious gospel-day in his dominions; but that it might so spread and prevail, that Prussia might become the beauty of nations, and the praise of the surrounding kingdoms; setting an example of holiness to the rest of the Continent; that in order for which there are some matters in the state which must be remedied, amongst which is the sorrowful abuse of the day called Sunday, which loudly calls for a remedy. To which the king replied, "I am one with you in this respect, but it requires time; such disorders are not easily remedied." I then replied, "I am not wishing to promote a superstitious observance of that day, this would be of little avail; but an observance of it agreeable to the design of its first institution; and that it was my firm belief, by the king's thus endeavouring to do all in his power towards promoting true religion and righteousness amongst his subjects, it would do more towards his being preserved in a peaceable and quiet possession of his dominions, than all the fortifications or armies he could possibly raise. To which the king replied, "I believe so myself:" to which I found I must add, "Except the Lord keep the city, the watchman waketh but in vain, except he build the house, in vain do they labour who build it:" to the truth of which the king by his countenance and motion of his head gave a solid assent. Before we parted, I felt constrained to lay before the king the reproachful manner in which the First-day was passed at Minden; informing the king I had made a visit to the police-master on that occasion: the king inquired what the police-master said; on hearing his reply, the king said, "It shall be attended to."

We were now, as we supposed, left alone in the garden; but the person who took charge of us here soon joined us again, and gave us to understand he had received orders from the king to attend upon us to the mausolcum, a new erection in the garden of the

palace, the burial-place of the late queen; and to conduct us about the palace. This mark of respect we could not but feel grateful for, although I should have been willing to have passed quietly to our hotel, on leaving the king; as our inclinations would not be more gratified by what we should see, than it had been by the handsome, patient hearing, the king had indulged us with: but fearing, as the person who was in attendance upon us, was very urgent that we should go through the palace, if the king should question him, and he could not say we passed through it, the king might think our guide had neglected us, and he might come into blame, we concluded to follow him. The great simplicity of the furniture in a suite of rooms occupied by the late queen, was gratifying, showing the humble state of her mind: a table stood by her bed-side as she left it, on which remained the Bible she used. Her memory I found was still precious to many of her subjects, on account of her good example. Feelings of reverent gratitude filled my heart, in the belief, that, through the extension of holy help, this day's work (although very trying in prospect) was well got through: the retrospect afforded fresh cause for making sweet melody in my heart to the Lord, and singing, "Hitherto the Lord hath helped me." May He alone have the praise from the visitors and the visited, is the prayer of my grateful heart!

In the evening we were visited by an interesting young man, who had been educated in the Jewish persuasion, whose mind had been awakened in consequence of a Testament having been put into his hands: his countenance and demeanour bespoke the divinely-gathered state of his mind, which appeared the more evident as we became further acquainted with him. My dear companion, Thomas Christy, continuing to feel anxious to return home, I no longer durst attempt to detain him; and I began to believe that the time for my own departure was not very distant: the thoughts, however, of my being left alone, felt trying. I also found that my kind friend, Lewis Seebohm, would be glad to be released, on his family's account; but I saw no way of safety for me, but to endeavour after patience, and entire resignation to my present allotment; and to move forward from day to day, as the clear pointings of duty may require of me.

Fifth-day morning, my companion engaged his place in the diligence to Hamburgh; after which, returning to our hotel, and feeling in our minds that something was due from us to the prince Witgenstein, for the kind attention and assistance which he had afforded us, we drew up the following address:—

"TO THE PRINCE WITGENSTEIN.

"It is with feelings of gratitude, we request thou wilt permit us to acknowledge thy kindness in making way for us, who are



strangers, to express to the king, whose confidence thou enjoyest, the words that were in our minds, and which we think nothing less than the feelings of religious duty would have warranted us in doing.

“ We are thankful for the opportunity, and thankful to the Almighty Creator of all things, and to the king, that we came away with our minds relieved, and we trust thou wilt share with us in the peaceful reward.

“ We are desirous of expressing a little matter respecting the prisoners at Spandau, believing thou hast their welfare much at heart. We wish to suggest, how well it would accord with the king’s kind disposition towards these poor creatures, for the governor to be directed to furnish a Testament to each of the prisoners, male and female, who shall desire to have one, and who the governor is satisfied are likely to make a proper use of it; and as a further reward for good conduct, a hymn-book and other small books which may be approved; and those who have books, to be allowed a small box with lock and key, which may be made in the prison. A prisoner, when his work is done for the day, would then have a book to resort to, instead of spending his time in hurtful conversation.

“ We further suggest, whether an advantage would not arise from one of the best readers reading to the rest of the prisoners every evening: the prisoners at Hamburgh, we observed, were each furnished with books, and we think to great advantage.

“ We are, with feelings of sincere regard,

“ Thy affectionate friends,

“ THOMAS CHRISTY,

“ Berlin, 10th of 8th mo. 1824.”

“ THOMAS SHILLITOE.”

After signing the above, my dear companion took the diligence for Hamburgh, leaving me to fill up my measure of suffering and exercise, which I thought still awaited me here. The circumstance of the governor at Spandau having kept me from seeing those prisoners who were considered to be the most desperate characters, began now so to operate on my mind, as to lead me to apprehend it was one of the matters that detained me at Berlin; and yet I was ready to fear attempting another visit, when I considered the difficulty that might attend a second application for that purpose, and the blame that would attach to me, should any of the governor’s fears be realized; and yet I felt a dread on my mind of the consequences of my rebelling against that conviction, (which was gaining so much ground on my best feelings;) I therefore found I must be willing to attempt a further visit to the men prisoners at Spandau. Great and powerful were the struggles between flesh and spirit on this occasion; but seeing no

way for me to come at a peaceful, quiet state of mind, but by cheerfully surrendering my life and all into the Divine keeping, I was enabled to breathe forth the language of, "Here am I, Lord, send me whithersoever thou pleasest." This resignation being thus brought about in me, the way appeared to open for me, to make a second application to the prince Witgenstein, for liberty to visit the men prisoners again at Spandau: our address of acknowledgment of the prince's kindness being still in my possession, I made the following addition to it:—

"So far as my visit to the prisoners went, when at Spandau, it was to me satisfactory; but as this visit was only partial—those considered to be the most desperate characters amongst the men not being present at the opportunity, from a fear they might prove unruly—and my mind still feeling anxiously engaged for their welfare, I do not see I can leave Berlin comfortably to myself, without making another journey to Spandau, and visiting these also, if I may be permitted so to do. If the prince should feel his mind easy to assist me in this matter, (as I am not sure that my former letter will be sufficient to admit me for that purpose again,) I shall feel truly thankful for it."

"THOMAS SHILLITOE."

Sixth-day, having made this addition, my kind friend Lewis Seeböhm proceeded to the prince's residence; he being from home, the letter was left. Seventh-day morning, a messenger from the prince came to our hotel, requesting Lewis Seeböhm would wait upon him at his own residence. On his being introduced, the prince told him, that on the receipt of my second request to visit the prisoners at Spandau, he himself waited on the minister of justice, and read my request to him, in order that no difficulty should be laid in the way of my making a second visit to the prisoners at Spandau; he then desired Lewis Seeböhm to call on the minister of justice for the order of admission; and added, that directions were forwarded to the Bible Society to furnish the prisoners with Bibles. The order for admittance not being prepared, the minister of justice engaged to send it to our hotel in the course of the evening. The way opening in my mind this morning, to make a visit to the commandant of the city and to the minister of the police, we proceeded to the minister of the police. On our first interview, from the distant manner in which he carried himself towards us, I felt discouraged; there being something in such a carriage that is humiliating to the carnal nature; but as we are willing to suffer Divine grace to rise into dominion in our own minds, it raises us above the slights and scornful looks of man. By endeavouring to keep to my own exercise, the way opened for me to lay before him my motives in making this visit to Berlin; to

which he appeared to give agreeable attention, allowing me an opportunity to express what came before me in the line of religious duty: he then kindly conducted us to the door himself, and parted from us in a very friendly manner. We next waited on the commandant of the city, who received us courteously. On my laying before him various occasions of immorality, which were within his sphere and power to remedy, he united with me in my views, and expressed his willingness to do his best towards their being remedied; but added, that such were his difficulties in attempting any thing, that it was discouraging. I felt as if I could give him full credit for what he said, and could not but sympathize with him. He said, the subjects I had mentioned to him, he hoped, when a suitable opportunity occurred, to lay before the king. These two visits being thus comfortably gone through, I enjoyed a peaceful quiet. Whilst walking along, I was accosted by my friend the chief magistrate of the city, saying, "So you are about to make another visit to Spandau. I would wish you not to go again. Are you not afraid?—Don't you know some of the prisoners murdered the last governor?" Although I received his counsel as a mark of his kindness towards me, I found it safest for me to say as little as possible in reply, having heard of this circumstance since our last visit, and that a bowl of scalding liquor had been thrown by one of the prisoners into the present governor's face; nevertheless this caution of the chief magistrate caused me, for a time, to feel keenly on the occasion, and to consider there was not only my own life, but that of my interpreter, the governor, and perhaps other attendants, at stake. Nature was roused, and all within me capable of it became as an army set in battle-array, pleading to be excused from the attempt of a second visit to Spandau; but He, who I was led to believe required this service of me, well knew my sincerity, and the earnest desire that attended my mind (if this service really was of his requiring) to be enabled to stand firm to my post: He mercifully condescended, after he had suffered the discourager to assail me for a short season, to raise up my head, in hope that strength would be given me in the needful time, to proceed in this awful and important engagement before me; and that neither hurting nor destroying should be suffered to come upon me or any one of my helpers therein.

This evening a messenger arrived with an order from the minister of justice, [of which the following seems to be a rough translation: ]—

"There is no hesitation that the institution for correction and improvement, and all the prisoners, at Spandau, including those that are separated, may be shown to the gentleman of the deputy\*

\* Probably *and the deputy*, meaning his interpreter.

of the communion of Quakers in London, and be presented before him, that he may converse with them ; which the director has to mind.

“ KIRCHEIN, Minister of Justice.”

“ Berlin, 14th August, 1824.”

“ To the Institution for Correction and Improvement.”

This order being received, I found it best to engage a carriage to take us to Spandau in the morning, in order to return in good time in the evening, when I proposed to sit with such individuals as were disposed to give me their company ; for which purpose our landlord furnished a large room ; and some serious persons had engaged to give suitable notice. This step being taken, I began to feel as if my work at Berlin was now nearly brought to a close.

It was difficult to have my mind divested of the circumstance of the murder of the former governor at Spandau, and the recollection of the alarm of the present governor, on my former request to see them all together ; these considerations, I found, without great watchfulness, were in danger of producing such agitation of mind as would be very unprofitable for me. I had concluded, in the course of the night previous to our proceeding to Spandau, to empty my pockets of my money, watch, pocket-book, and my penknife more particularly ; for, by having my penknife about me, I might be the cause of furnishing them with the means of my own destruction : this I accordingly did. But on mature deliberation on the step I had thus taken, I was mercifully led to see, that it was the effect of that departure from a full and entire reliance on God's arm of power, which the enemy was endeavouring to bring about in my mind. I sensibly felt the performance of this very act had produced weakness, causing the hands that had been made strong, through the power of the mighty God of Jacob, rather to fall again. I therefore returned to my chamber, and replaced each of these articles as they were before, taking particular care that my penknife was not left behind.

Early in the morning, Lewis Seeböhm, also the young man who was our former companion, and myself, left our hotel for Spandau : on our arrival there, we were told our former visit had excited astonishment in the minds of the people of the town, that our love should be such as to induce us to leave our families and cross the ocean to visit their land, and that we should remember the poor prisoners of Spandau, who seemed to be forgotten by every body. After taking our breakfast, we went to the prison ; but the governor was not to be spoken with before ten o'clock : however, we met with our old friend the pastor of the prison, who received us kindly, and conducted us to the chapel, where we found about fifty young men prisoners receiving instruction, which we were



informed was closely attended to; some of them appeared to have made considerable improvement in writing, as we were told was also the case in their reading. The quiet and order observed was pleasant to behold, as well as the agreeable countenances many of them exhibited, as if they rightly appreciated the privilege of being thus cared for. Feeling something stirring in my mind towards them, my interpreter informed them thereof, on which the pastor kindly requested such as were reading to cease. What I had to communicate appeared to obtain attention. At our parting, the pastor invited us to take our dinner with him, but this we respectfully declined, for my dinner now felt the most distant thing from my mind. At the time proposed for us to see the governor, we returned to the prison. On being introduced to the governor, I presented him with my fresh order from the minister of justice, to visit the prisoners again: his countenance bespoke the effect it had on his mind, as he showed himself uncomfortable and much agitated, probably from two causes—the peremptory manner in which the order was couched, and the fear still prevailing in his mind of those, whom he called the most desperate of the prisoners, being loose together in the yard. For a time he appeared like a man recovering from a violent electric shock, and then again stood like a petrified subject. During this season of proving to the governor and my companions, I trust I was not void of a proper feeling for him, and for them; but I found I must maintain my post with firmness. After the governor had a little recovered himself, he brought forward, as before, many reasons to prevent my seeing the prisoners; but as his excuses did not prove effectual, he next tried what he could do by persuasion, saying, that from his knowledge of the disposition of some of the prisoners, it would be dangerous to attempt to have them assembled as I wished. No such apprehensions, however, prevailed with me, in whatever way I viewed the matter; yet I humbly hope I may say, I was not lost to a feeling of sympathy for those who were to accompany me, and who were not able to see and feel the subject as I was enabled to do. The governor seeing there was no other way, yielded to my request, and ordered all the men prisoners to be assembled in the great yard of the prison. On entering the yard where they were assembled, I observed that the number assembled far exceeded what I had met with in the chapel at my first visit, there now appearing from three to four hundred prisoners: many forbidding countenances I could not recollect to have seen before, whose legs were loaded with irons, but not their hands. Had they been disposed to have injured us, I thought, as I viewed those who were placed in front, we should only be like so many grasshoppers amongst them. Besides ourselves and the governor, we had the company of the head-officer of the town, several military officers, and

some of the inhabitants. Our kind friend the pastor placed us on a flight of steps, very suitably for the occasion, and the prisoners formed a circle in front of the steps. After a pause had taken place, the governor addressed the prisoners: although I could not understand a word which he expressed, yet I had a clear evidence that his matter was appropriate to the occasion, and that he was assisted by best help in doing it: his observations produced such a remarkable quiet over the whole assembly, that not the motion of a foot or clink of a fetter was to be heard. This address of the governor seemed very much to open my way in the minds of the prisoners: I cannot call to remembrance a time when I have found a more open door to receive what was communicated, than in this opportunity; the countenances of many of the prisoners appeared sorrowfully affected, and bathed in tears; and the quiet solid manner in which they behaved during the whole of the meeting, considering what a rough, uncultivated company they appeared to be, was a striking proof of the sufficiency of the power of God, now as formerly, to controul and bring into subjection, the evil power in man; that thus He alone, whose right it is to reign, may have the dominion. Having been favoured with ability fully to relieve my mind towards them, I found I must propose to give each of the prisoners my hand of love, before I left them; the governor then arranged them for that purpose: in this step I was led to believe the prisoners generally sympathized, for, although they were not able to express themselves on the occasion in my own language, their countenances and the manner of their pressing my hand, I thought fully indicated this disposition of mind.\*

Having thus taken a farewell of the prisoners, we retired to the governor's apartment, who seemed now at a loss to know how to manifest his kindness sufficiently towards us. The pastor not following us, I felt anxious to take our leave of him; but before we had finished the repast which the governor had kindly set before us, the pastor joined us again, informing us he had been

\* In a letter written from Berlin, to our dear friend T. S., some years after this period, his correspondent thus expresses himself:—"I am sure your visit at Berlin, and especially the attention you paid to the prisoners, has been of very great benefit. Since that time, there has been formed a society for instructing and amending the prisoners. This very important branch of Christian charity has formerly been too much neglected. The society has done much good already, and will do much more, if they keep a single eye, and do all they do, to glorify Christ."

In this and other letters written to T. S. from the Continent, (several from persons of rank,) are often to be met with, expressions of much warmth of feeling towards their much esteemed, aged visitor; indicating how closely they became united in the bonds of Christian love to our friend. "As often as I happened," says the above letter, written after his return from America, "to speak to Friends coming from England, I used to ask them, I may say in some degree with the tender feelings of Joseph, '*Does my father Shillitoe yet live?*'"

detained with the prisoners, who had requested him, in the name of the whole of them, to express their thankfulness for the visit, and that many of them could say, the words that had been delivered amongst them reached to their very hearts, and they hoped, would, in a future day, produce good fruits. May all the praise be given, where alone it is due, is the prayer of my soul ! We parted from the governor very affectionately ; and the pastor accompanying us to our hotel, expressed the regret which he and others felt, that our stay amongst them was of so short a duration. We were informed, a man of considerable account in the world, was much in the practice of asserting it to be his belief, there was no such thing as people being actuated by the love of God in their conduct towards each other. Our first visit to Spandau having excited much conversation amongst the town's-people, from the manner in which our motive for making this visit was viewed by some, as proceeding purely from the love of God, this man took up the subject in support of his own opinions ; in the course of his arguing, his mind became so convinced that nothing short of the love of God to the poor prisoners could have influenced our minds to leave our homes and families, endure the hardships by sea and land which we must have done, that he acknowledged he must now abandon his former opinions on this subject. I returned with my companions to Berlin, thankful that my good Master had not suffered my manifold discouragements to cause me to rebel against Him. My great care now was, how I should get through the evening's work before me, viz. the holding a meeting with such individuals as were inclined to give us their company. I fancied I could have been glad to have been anywhere else rather than at this occasion, notwithstanding I had so recently had cause to bow in reverent acknowledgment to the mercy and goodness of the Lord, in helping me through the last scene of trial. Oh ! how did my poor mind, in its reduced and stripped condition, crave after a willingness to become any thing or nothing, that so I might be found keeping my proper place amongst the people this evening ! I found, whilst the meeting was gathering, a young man was preparing to take down in short-hand what might be communicated ; but I prevailed on him to desist. The meeting gathered early, and soon quietly settled down : the room was as full as it well could be : the people appeared serious and attentive, and we understood, that they were well satisfied with the meeting.

Second-day morning, my prospects of being liberated from Berlin began to brighten ; the gates were now set open for my departure, which rejoiced my heart, on account of my kind, companion Lewis Seeböhm. I proceeded to the post-office, and secured my place in the diligence to Hamburgh on Fourth-day.

Third-day, my friend Lewis Seeböhm left me for his own home. I was now alone, no one in the hotel being able to understand me, except at times by signs : this made it trying, when

visitors came, with whom I was deprived of the opportunity of an exchange of sentiment. My mind having been frequently introduced into exercise, on account of some pious persons that were about the court, I believed, if the way clearly opened for it, I must be willing to try to have them brought together in a meeting capacity: but there appeared such insurmountable difficulties in the way, that I gave up the prospect, and I had reason to believe properly so: yet my exercise continued, and by endeavouring to keep patient under it, the way in due time opened for my relief, by taking up my pen, and committing to writing that which arose in my mind, which was done as follows:—

“TO THE SERIOUSLY AWAKENED MINDS, WHO ARE MOURNING,  
IN THE HIGHER CIRCLES OF LIFE, IN BERLIN.

“Berlin, 16th of 8th Month, 1824.

“The more exalted the situation of life we are by Divine Providence permitted to be placed in, the greater need there is for humility of heart; a virtue that never appears more conspicuous than when it is really to be found imprinted in the general tenour of conduct and converse of such as are travelling on in the higher walks of life; nor is its influence ever so likely to be productive of real good to others; because, the more elevated our situation of life may be, the more extensive will be the influence of our example, whether it be good or whether it be evil. I have therefore, in my solitary moments, earnestly craved, that all who may be placed about the person of the king, and every branch of his family, and others who may be placed in affluent situations in life, whose lips may have been mercifully touched, as with a live coal from off the holy altar, may keep humble, little and low in their own estimation; for this will be the way, and the only way, for such to experience the Lord to teach them of his ways; and by keeping in meekness and true fear before him, know him to direct their steps, guiding them in the paths of true judgment, causing such who thus love him to inherit substance. It is the great that must set an example of faithfulness to God, and an entire dedication of heart to him and his cause, before those who are moving along in more humble life; it is these who must lead the way into the paths of holiness of life and conversation, if the Lord's work goes forward and prospers in this land, as he designs it should; and my soul craves it may do. And now, with the feelings of Gospel love and thankfulness, for the kind reception of my feeble endeavours, and the assistance I have met with, I take my last farewell of those amongst you. I have made acquaintance with many, of whom I can say, they are as bone of my bone.

“THOMAS SHILLITOE.”

The above being put into the hands of a faithful, pious individual about the court, for circulation amongst those to whom it was addressed, my services here closed.



## CHAPTER XXVI.

FOURTH-DAY morning, accompanied by some of our newly-formed acquaintance, I took the diligence for Hamburg, which I was favoured to reach on Fifth-day, with songs of praise in my heart to that Almighty Power, who had so mercifully cared for me every way. On my arrival at Hamburg, I felt disposed to spend some time amongst my friends there, expecting it would be the last time we should be likely to meet on this side of eternity ; but I found Hamburg was not to be a resting-place for me : my halting there, longer than was necessary for me to recruit my strength and to prepare for my journey, would subject me to danger. My friends in England had proposed my making an overland journey to Petersburgh, and forwarded me letters to Dantzic, Memel, and Riga. On my reaching Hamburg, some captains at my hotel advised my going by sea, to Cronstadt, in Russia, to escape the difficulties of an overland journey, in consequence of my not being acquainted with any language but my native tongue ; and to sail from Lubeck, in preference to Elsinour, the Lubeck vessels to Cronstadt being well fitted up for the accommodation of passengers ; but if I sailed from Elsinour, I must take such accommodation as the merchant-vessels afforded ; and my sailing from Lubeck would occasion me much less travelling by land ; Lubeck, therefore, had the preference in my mind, independent of that reluctance which I felt to set my feet again in Copenhagen, which I should do if I sailed from Elsinour ; but the more I inclined to go by Lubeck, the clearer I thought I saw my taking shipping there would endanger my being in some way (I knew not how) involved in difficulty. I therefore endeavoured after a willingness to take shipping at Elsinour ; but fresh difficulties presented : a diligence left Hamburg daily for Lubeck, and arrived the same day ; and when my fare by it was paid, I should have no further difficulty. I had already experienced the inconveniences attending a journey by a conveyance from Hamburg to Kiel, and feared to attempt to encounter this mode of getting forward again ; but after all these considera-

tions, they were not found sufficient to warrant my proceeding to Lubeck. There appeared, therefore, no other way for me but travelling by extra post, and advertising for a companion to share in the expense; which I accordingly did. No reply being made to the advertisement, I applied to an English coach-master to send me forward the first stage, trusting to a kind Providence to care for me the remainder of my journey.

On Second-day, I left Hamburgh, in hopes my driver would be one who understood my native tongue; but in this I soon found myself disappointed. We had a considerable extent of water to pass through, which, from the careless manner of the driver, I was in great fear that an accident would occur. A short distance before our arrival at our first station, a respectable-looking man came out of a house, asking me questions; but we could not understand each other, neither could the driver help us out, upon which he drove on: this person, however, followed us to the post-house, for what I was unable to make out. I found, also, none of the family could help me. Observing a person standing at the door of one of the rooms of the hotel, waiting to have his horses put to his carriage, although not of a very prepossessing countenance to apply to for help, yet I ventured to step up to him, and put the question to him, could he speak English? He replied, by pointing his finger for me to go into the room, where I found an agreeable-looking female sitting, to whom I addressed myself; on which she made me understand the person who had thus followed me was the inspector of the customs, to whom I must open my luggage: she also cared for my being sent forward the next stage. I presented her, the inspector and the post-master, with some books, which appeared to be well received, and went on my way again, rejoicing in being thus far cared for; and yet, at times, I was made thoughtful how I should be able to manage when night came on; but a kind Providence so ordered for me at every station I came to, that I met with all the help I stood in need of, until I came to my lodging-place for the night, agreeably to the route made out for me by the coach-master at Hamburgh, whose kindness had sent me to a clean, comfortable hotel. Two females in the family spoke English fluently, which was consoling. After passing a comfortable night, next morning I proceeded on my way, and reached Kiel that evening, under feelings of gratitude to that Almighty Power, whose mercies are over all his works. I drove to the Packet-hotel; my kind friend, Christian Bauer, would not suffer me to remain there, but had my luggage taken to his own house, who, with his very kind wife showed me every attention in their power. Our thus unexpectedly meeting again, afforded mutual gratification; which appeared to be the case with the Professor Teonsen and his wife, and others I had made an acquaintance with. The Countess Bernstorff having

heard of my being at Hamburgh on my way to Kiel, wrote to request I would inform her of my arrival, and she would come to her town-residence; whereby I had much of the interesting company of this pious, aged woman; who, I was led to believe, felt it a great privilege to retreat from the bustle and pageantry of the court, to which she was exposed in her husband's time, from the high station which he filled in the Danish government.

Fifth-day, 26th of 8th month, I took leave of my friends at Kiel, and went on board the steam-packet for Copenhagen. After being some time on board, a young man, who I supposed was of some account in the world, having his servant attending on him, showed a disposition to be familiar with me. As he spoke my language, I was cheered at the prospect of making his acquaintance. We had also on board a person advanced in life, who, from the star he wore on his coat, and the great attention paid to him by the captain and crew, I concluded was a person who stood high in the government, with whom my new-formed acquaintance appeared to be in company. The young man manifested so much interest in my comfort, as to show me every attention in his power: the elderly man also carried himself as handsomely towards me as circumstances would allow of, (from our not being able to understand each other,) having me to sit down with them at their dinner-table, and partake of their provision—a separate table being provided for them, from the rest of the cabin-passengers. The secretary of the English ambassador at Berlin, entrusted me with a packet to the English ambassador at Copenhagen, which I engaged to deliver myself, provided I went that way; otherwise I was to put it in a channel for delivery. As I was directed, I informed my new acquaintance of the charge I had in my possession, and the desire I felt to get quit of it before I slept that night, requesting him to put me in the way so to do. The young man informed his elder friend of this, and they kindly offered to take charge of its delivery; but I informed them that I had engaged, if I reached Copenhagen, to deliver it myself, gratefully acknowledging their kindness. When we came within a short distance of Copenhagen, a boat came alongside of us, which I soon perceived was for my friends, who had shown me so much attention, whose company I had looked forward with pleasure to have had on my landing, and to have received their assistance at the police-office and custom-house: but now my hopes, it appeared, would be disappointed in this respect, as no boat came out that I could hire to land me with them; but, to my agreeable surprise, they informed me of their wish I should take a seat with my luggage in their boat, and they would take care to clear my luggage and passport for me; which offer I gratefully accepted. On our landing, I observed great attention was manifested by those who had assembled to see the packet

arrive, to the company I was in. My elderly friend, on our reaching the shore, kindly gave me his hand, and we parted; the young man cleared my luggage and passport, then put me into a carriage, with directions to take me to my hotel, and we parted. On reaching my hotel, I procured a messenger to accompany me to the English ambassador's, and delivered my charge into his hands. The longer I am spared in mutability, the more clearly I am convinced of the necessity there is for us to attend to such intimations, whilst thus moving about in religious service, as we may be favoured with from place to place, and to abide quiet and in patience, where our lots are cast, until the time for our departure is fully come: had I yielded to the kind importunities of my friends at Kiel, to pass another week with them, and go by the next packet-boat, I should have deprived myself of the help I have received, and afterwards received, from the young man, and his uncle, (as he proved to be,) Count Shoolburgh, the commandant of the city of Copenhagen.

Seventh-day, on my way to my kind friend Dr. Brandis, I observed a person before me in the uniform of those who attend on the king; on coming up to him, he addressed me familiarly in English, which a little surprised me, until I found it was the Baron Pichlien, my kind young friend when on board the steam-packet; who very kindly invited me to dine with him. I made a very interesting visit to the doctor and his wife, who were under great affliction in consequence of the death of the attendant on the queen, with whom I had made an acquaintance when here before; they informed me, her bodily sufferings had been very great, which she bore with exemplary patience; that her sick-bed and closing moments had had an awakening effect on many about the court. I presented the doctor with some books: some I had which I wished to put into the hands of the princess, I mentioned this to the doctor; he gave me a note to one of the attendants on the queen, of whom I had some knowledge, and ordering his carriage out, he gave his coachman instructions to drive me to the palace of Fredericksburgh. When we arrived, the coachman left me in the carriage, whilst he went with the note; when he returned, I found myself placed in difficulty, not being able to understand a word he said, but Copenhagen; by which I supposed my friend to whom the note was directed was at Copenhagen.

Whilst I was musing in my mind to know how I was to proceed, not feeling easy to give it up as a matter not to be accomplished, (although I could not see how it was to be brought about,) two handsomely-dressed young women came out of a door of the palace, and crossed a grass-plot: the coachman called out to me, "Crown-princess," on my repeating, "Crown-princess," he replied, "Ya." I sprang out of the carriage with my books, and hastened towards them: on my advancing, the princess halted,



looking pleasantly at me, and gave me her hand ; but not being able to understand each other, the attendant on the princess not speaking English, as I hoped would be the case, we all appeared disappointed. The way not opening in my mind to leave the books with the princess, I again withdrew, and was driven back to the doctor's residence. It appeared the princess was going to take breakfast with a family, whose gardens abutted against the doctor's gardens, and where my friend would be in attendance ; this induced me to inquire as to the propriety of my going there with the books ; on which a servant was sent with me, and instructions given how to proceed. At first I doubted whether any advantage would result from the step I had thus taken, until a person, like an upper-servant in the family, came and took my note, manifesting, after he had read it, some interest on my behalf : he informed me I must wait ; he then returned, and conducted me into the garden, where my friend expressed much satisfaction that we were permitted to meet again. The princess and the female head of the family soon made their appearance ; each in a kind manner gave me her hand, as also did the rest of the company ; a livery-servant soon entered the garden with chocolate and cake for the princess and the rest of the company ; on which I drew back ; being solicited to partake with them, I hesitated, but on again being entreated, I accepted their kind offer. Breakfast being over, I presented the princess with the books ; she requested her attendant to inform me, she regretted she could not converse with me in my own language, also the pleasure it afforded her that they were still remembered by me : apologising for my having thus intruded myself, I was requested not to consider it an intrusion : then feeling it best for me to withdraw, they each gave me their hand.

On my return to Copenhagen, I overtook my kind friend the Baron Pichlien, one of the attendants on the king, who kindly offered to take me to the great royal library, which I accepted. It is a handsome and very commodious building, well adapted for the purpose, and furnished with a great store of books : I found a shelf set apart for books printed by our religious Society, and regretted to see it so barely supplied, not more than four books, which when all were put together, would not make a volume larger than the *Apology*. The librarian regretted they had not a better supply of Friends' books, which he thought would be read : I therefore furnished him with such books as my means afforded. This evening I waited on my kind friend the Count Schimmilman, with some books ; he received me with his usual affability : on giving me his hand, he expressed in warm terms the pleasure our once more being permitted to meet again afforded him, adding, with apparent feelings of sorrow, " We have had a great loss in one of your old friends, one of the ladies of the court is deceased, since you were last here ; her experience in religious

matters was great: her bodily sufferings during her indisposition were great beyond description, but these she bore without ever uttering a complaint: she often spoke of you, and her mind appeared much occupied about you: she became more and more one in sentiment with you in matters of religion, and made a very peaceful close; her loss is greatly felt by all about the court. This was the individual who was in waiting to receive me in the grand saloon, when I made a visit to the queen on my last journey. After spending some time agreeably with the count, we parted affectionately.\*

Having a prospect when I left England of proceeding to Russia by way of Dantzic, I had requested my friend at Petersburg to address my letters to the former place, for my instruction how I was to proceed when I reached the Russian territories; but now having changed my route to go by sea, I feared that the letter to my friend at Petersburg would not reach him in time for my having his reply before I left Elsinour; and doubts were also in my mind whether the address of the letter was correct;—these considerations came over me like a flood, and as if they would overpower every good desire; but from this perplexity of mind I was in a very unexpected manner released, by a person at the hotel, to whom I was an entire stranger, coming into my room who spoke English well; he proved to be a merchant from Petersburg, travelling on account of his health. On his understanding which way I was bound from Copenhagen, (unsought for) he kindly offered his services, and gave me a letter to his brother at Cronstadt, the port in Russia at which I was to land; requesting that every attention should be shown me, as if it was done to himself. This I received as a further token of the watchful care of my Divine Master, afresh exciting in my mind earnest desires to be found faithfully serving him, whatever might be the dangers that might threaten me in the prosecution of clear prospects of duty. I still pleased myself with the hopes of being able to proceed on the morrow for Elsinour; and having some books yet to dispose of, I concluded the early part of the morning would be sufficient for that purpose. Apprehensions were awakened in my mind of danger, if I took any of my books with me to Petersburg, although I had not heard of any prohibition in this respect. My friends considered it necessary that my passport should be signed by the English ambassador; but it being First-day I hesitated going to him for his signature; but considering that my friends deemed it to be so very necessary, and the uncertainty of what to-morrow might produce, by his being from home, and as it did not appear to me like going to him in the regular course of his business, but amongst the things that might be termed an act of necessity, I proceeded to his residence. On my way there I passed by the royal theatre; the doors being

open, my attention was arrested by observing carpenters, bricklayers, and others publicly at work, preparing for the diversions that were to take place in the evening of the day : this sight altogether struck as at my very life, and great fear came over me that my liberation from Copenhagen was not so near as I had expected : sighing was my lot, and crying for help to be found faithful to whatever should be the result of this morning's walk. The ambassador signed my passport, in addition to the signature of the police-master, and sent it for me to the Russian ambassador for his signature, which he considered most advisable. I returned to my hotel, and found after all I had not obtained my great Master's passport to leave on the morrow, as I had been expecting ; the gates of Copenhagen appeared closed against me, and this warning voice arose, " Go not out by haste or by flight, but fulfil the whole of the appointed time ; " this I found must be attended to, if I secured a safe guidance back again to my native land.

I saw no way for me, but to endeavour to labour after entire resignation, to be willing to do all that appeared to be the Divine requiring respecting me : after sitting down in quiet, with my mind turned inward to the Lord for his counsel and help, a visit to the crown-prince and his princess came again before me, and I found that I must be willing to do my part towards its being accomplished, if I left with a peaceful mind. By thus waiting to be directed herein by Him, who remains to be the wonderful counsellor, my attention was turned to my kind friend the Baron Pichlien, as a person who might help me through this difficulty. I therefore waited upon him, and informed him how I was circumstanced, and that I was come to throw myself upon him for help : he informed me, he was under engagement to dine with the prince that day, and he would take care to make my request known to them. My room being very close, and the weather extremely hot, I turned out of the town for fresh air : the day was beautiful, scarcely a cloud to be seen,—all nature appeared alive to that enjoyment the great Creator of the universe designed ; but such were the feelings afresh excited in my mind from the remembrance of my morning's walk to the ambassador's, and what arose with me on the occasion, that I felt unequal to participate in these things as I gladly would have done. I also felt my situation here, being without any friend qualified to sympathize and counsel me in my movements.

I apprehended it to be required of me in some way to lay before the king, my views on what I had observed at the theatre on First-day, also other matters which I had noticed, whereby that day had been publicly abused : after turning the subject of an interview over again and again, I felt fully satisfied, that if a suitable channel could be found, whereby I could be assured that what was offered to my mind to commit to writing for the king, would be put into his own hands, this would be the best way for me to pro-

ceed: but how it was to be effected with certainty, I at present was not able to see.

In the evening I waited on an individual, whom I was satisfied I could make a confidential friend; to him I made known my situation, and the mode I proposed to adopt; with which my friend fully united. It was his opinion, that the parliament being now sitting, there would be some difficulty in obtaining such a quiet, suitable opportunity with the king, as was desirable. On my inquiring of my friend how I should be able to procure a translation of what I might have to commit to writing for the king, he was fully of the judgment, that it would be better for it to be conveyed to him in my own language, whereby no one would be implicated in it. He also gave it as his opinion, when the king observed my signature, he would put it into the hands of a suitable person to be translated: I returned home to my hotel, and after again being favoured with a time of quiet, with my mind turned inward to the Lord for his counsel, I took up my pen and wrote an address to the king, from which the following are extracts:—

[He addresses the king chiefly on the manner in which the First-days are passed at Copenhagen, shops being open, public works going on, theatres opened, and other frivolous diversions observable.]

“A fear continues to attend my mind, that the judgments of a great and terrible God, may again manifest themselves on the Continent of Europe, in a very different way and manner to what has been experienced heretofore; for notwithstanding the slaughter and bloodshed that then took place, and the distress which the different nations were in many ways exposed to, tending to humble the stout-hearted amongst the people; yet time may prove, notwithstanding all that such had to endure, it was but the beginning of sorrows, to that which may yet be in reserve; without there is, through Divine aid, more of a willingness manifested on the part of the people, than has as yet appeared, to be found walking more consistently with the doctrines and precepts of the gospel of Christ Jesus our Lord. And should the Almighty see meet, because of the impenitence, and rebellious disposition of mind, which so evidently prevails over too many of all ranks amongst the people, to suffer others of his yet more terrible messengers to enter again the borders of this Continent, the pestilence,\* or famine, or even both of these messengers of woe; with what confidence can the people be able to approach his Divine Majesty for support under their afflictions, or to supplicate that his all-powerful arm may again be stayed.

“Are not those who have it in their power to remove such temptations out of the way of the unwary and inexperienced

\* [It will not be forgotten, that a few years after this period the cholera spread its fearful ravages over Europe, &c.]



youth, loudly called upon to do their very utmost toward the effecting of it? inasmuch as I believe, so long as these temptations to do evil remain, those who have the power invested in them to remove them, and are not thus engaged to do their very best towards its being brought to pass, are placing themselves in an awfully responsible situation, by making themselves parties in the sight of Almighty God, to all the evil consequences that may follow their continuance. Feeling, as I do, such a lively interest in thy present and eternal welfare, O king, and for every branch of thy family and every one of thy subjects, accompanied with earnest desires that Denmark may for the future be found setting an example of righteousness to the Continent of Europe, and hereby become exalted in the Divine estimation, and in the estimation of surrounding nations, I trust, if I may seem to have expressed my feelings on these important subjects a little warmly, thy kindness of disposition, O king! will, I believe, give me credit for my assuring thee, it proceeds from an apprehension of religious duty, and from that true love and affection which have so frequently glowed in my heart towards thee; craving, as I often have done when at my own home, that the greatest and choicest of all blessings, a double portion of the good Spirit of God and our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, may more and more descend and continue to rest upon thee and all thy counsellors, in the conducting of these and all other matters relative to the well ordering of thy dominions; which continues to be the fervent prayer of my soul.

“ I remain, with all due respect,

“ THOMAS SHILLITOE.”

“ Of Hitchin, Hertfordshire, Old England,  
but now at the Royal Hotel.”

Second-day morning. Having thus far been enabled to obtain relief to my mind, the prospect appeared fearful of putting into the hands of an absolute monarch what I had penned, situated as I was, a stranger to the language of the country, and thereby rendered unequal, except through an interpreter, to plead my own cause should offence be taken against me; but Divine mercy graciously condescended to compassionate my frailty and momentary want of confidence in Him; and again enabled me to hold up my head in hope, that He who had required this offering at my hands, if I was but willing to move in it in faith, would not suffer any harm to come upon me in consequence.

Third-day, I received information from my kind friend the baron, that the crown-prince would receive me at his palace in town that morning, and that his servant should conduct me there; and that the Princess Caroline would afterwards receive me at

the palace at Sorgenfrey. At the time appointed we proceeded to the palace of the crown-prince, who received me in an affable manner: the books which I presented him with, he pleasantly accepted. I was constrained to lay before him the abuse of the First-day, which I had myself witnessed; the prince favoured me with a full opportunity to relieve my mind. I informed the prince I had prepared something to lay before the king on these abuses, which I had witnessed the preceding First-day, requesting his advice as to delivering it, that I might be fully satisfied it would come into the king's own hands: he advised my sending it under cover to the king's daughter, the crown-princess, whom the prince called my friend. The prince appearing to have much business to attend to, a care was necessary on my part not to overstay the right time; I therefore took my leave of him, and at our parting he expressed his satisfaction with the visit, inviting me to make him a second call. I then proceeded to Sorgenfrey: on my way there, the subject of my sending the address to the king, under cover to the crown-princess, closely occupied my mind; after mature deliberation, I could see no way for my full acquittal, but my putting the address myself into the hands of the princess for the king; then it appeared I should have done all that my great Master required of me; but short of this I saw clearly I must not satisfy myself. On my arrival at the palace, a person was in readiness to receive me, who spoke English, who introduced me to the Princess Caroline: the princess speaking my native tongue, made the visit more interesting; for speaking through another, I have found to be a great take-off from the enjoyment of an interview of this sort, especially with pious characters, whose sentiments it feels so desirable to have genuine. The princess received me in an affable manner. Having paid a visit to England, she became acquainted with some members of our religious Society: it appeared to afford her pleasure in having this opportunity of inquiring after their welfare. On the princess taking her seat, she requested I would do the like, which I complied with. After taking chocolate with her, we entered into serious conversation on various subjects, particularly the manner which the First-day was abused in Copenhagen; and I informed her of the necessity I had been brought under of addressing the king on the subject, which address I saw no way for me to forward to the king, but by putting it in the hands of the crown-princess for that purpose: to which the princess replied, the crown-princess was coming to her in the afternoon, on which I requested the princess would inform her, that it would be the means of affording great relief to my mind, if she would allow me to put the address into her own hands, to deliver it herself to her father, the king; and I would wait on her at the palace of Fredericksburgh at nine the next morning: this the

princess appeared gladly to undertake for me. After a religious communication, which obtained her solid attention, and presenting her with Hugh Turford's *Grounds of a Holy Life*, it being the only remaining book in my possession, we parted; the princess saying, that the conversation and visit altogether had been to her an interesting one; with which I could freely unite on my part. I returned to my hotel, and on reading over the address to the king, I found I must copy it over afresh; for such was the state of my nerves at the time I wrote it, that in some places it was hardly legible; and yet my nerves were at this time in such a state that I doubted my mending the matter by attempting to recopy it; but by being willing to do my best, I was helped beyond my expectation at this time to accomplish my task. I retired to bed weary both in body and mind; yet I humbly hope not forgetful of the help that Divine mercy had condescended to favour me with, in the course of this day.

Fourth-day, rose early and put myself in trim to proceed in time to Fredericksburgh; my bodily strength had become much enfeebled through exercise of mind and want of sleep; the weather was also very sultry, so that my walk looked discouraging. On my way thither, I clearly saw I had nothing but Divine interference to lean upon, to make the way easy to me; earnest were my secret petitions to Him, who I believed had called to the work, that he would be pleased to continue near to me in the needful time. The adversary, however, did not fail to endeavour in various ways to divert my mind, from being centered where only my help was to be found; for he would be setting my mind at work in contriving to sail from Elsinour as speedily as possible, to reach Russia before the equinox; but I was mercifully enabled to withstand his assaults, having the assurance afresh sealed on my mind, that if I simply attended to what appeared to be my proper business, he who calls to the work, and can command the equinoxial gales at his pleasure, will waft me safely over to the Russian shore; and when my appointed time there is fulfilled, give me a safe passage back again to my native land; which assurance brought tears of joy from my eyes. Having time to spare, on reaching the palace I walked into the gardens, which are open to the public, hoping to meet some persons there of whom I could inquire the way to the apartments of the crown-princess; but in this I was disappointed. The time drawing near at which I had proposed to wait upon her, I advanced towards the palace in fear, lest I should be found exceeding the bounds allowed to such as were not of the family. I continued walking in the front and at the side of the palace, hoping if the princess had concluded to grant my request, she would see I was under difficulty how to obtain admittance to her. As no person came to my help, seeing an entrance leading to a court-yard, I

ventured in, when a servant came up to me, saying, "Are you an Englishman and a Quaker?" which comforted me not a little: he then conducted me up a flight of stairs, at the head of which were placed two sentinels; but to whom, I found from my conductor, the necessary caution had been given, not to interrupt me because of my hat being kept on; they suffered me to pass without noticing it. I was then conducted to the apartment of the princess, who was attended by one of the females, with whom I spent some time so agreeably when at Copenhagen before. The princess received me with her usual affability of manner: on my informing her the cause of my intruding on her kindness, and putting the address into her hands directed to the king, she assured me she would deliver it herself into her father's own hands; which assurance gave me a full discharge on this subject. After passing a short time in serious conversation with the princess, through the means of her attendant, she inquired after my family, expressing her desire that I might reach home in safety: she then gave me her hand, and I withdrew, and returned to Copenhagen, with heartfelt gratitude to that Almighty Power, who had thus in mercy made way for me through the cloud and thick darkness, which at one time spread over my mind. In the afternoon I called upon the bishop; but he not speaking English, I left him under expectations that I might be excused making him another call. I returned to my hotel, endeavouring after that state of quietness and confidence in which our strength consists; whether it be to abide in our tent whilst the cloud remains on the tabernacle, or to move forward when the cloud is wholly taken away again.

As the way did not open with sufficient clearness to warrant my making preparations for my departure as yet, I endeavoured to know patience to have its perfect work in me: at length a fresh line of service opened before me of a humiliating nature, that of visiting the prisoners. Upon inquiry I found it was very doubtful, whether liberty would be granted. I called upon my kind friend the baron, and again informed him of the trying situation of mind in which I was, not being aware that the granting liberty to visit the prisoners rested with his uncle, the Count Schoolburgh. The baron manifested a disposition to enter into my religious engagements; so that I felt fully satisfied to leave the matter with him, and returned to my hotel to wait the result of his application to his uncle. In the evening the baron called upon me to say, all matters were arranged for my seeing the criminals, and also to see the military prisoners if I had a desire so to do. I had no idea the military prisoners would have been considered a part of my request, nor could I see I had any thing to do with such, whose confinement solely proceeded from disobedience of military orders; but my trials were



not as yet over. I had now to look towards a suitable interpreter, one who was thoroughly acquainted with the Danish and English languages: my kind friend the baron would have been competent to the task, but his various engagements in government concerns at that time, claimed his whole attention; I therefore could not feel easy to press on him to engage in the task. As far as my slender means would allow me, I made efforts to procure an interpreter myself, but all proved fruitless, and dismay seemed as if it would have covered me as with a garment; for I could see nothing before me, but that after all the kindness of the baron and his uncle in granting me this privilege, I must relinquish further attempts to have my prospects accomplished: thus closed as trying a day as most I have had to pass through. But if all does but move and work together to humble self, so as really and truly to be of no reputation at all; this will be well worth suffering for, even should the cups, yet to be handed out to me, be more bitter than those I have had to drink.

Third-day, 31st of 8th mo. 1824. After a sleepless night from the discouragements I was under in procuring a suitable interpreter, it occurred to me I might apply to the English consul for help, he having carried himself kindly towards me; but the way not clearly opening for my so doing, I found it would be safest for me to relinquish it. Earnest were my prayers in this critical moment, to be rightly directed in my choice of an interpreter; my peacefully quitting Copenhagen, and proceeding on my way, seemed so much to depend on my getting through what I had then before me, in a way so as to secure the stamp of Divine approval on it. Endeavouring to keep quiet under my discouragements, my attention was turned to my kind friend Dr. Forrchambre: I went to his residence, but I was unable to make out whether he was at home, or where he was to be found. I returned to my hotel, feeling an evidence in my own mind I must try again to see him. I made another attempt without success: after remaining at home several hours, as quietly as the nature of my situation would allow, I made a third attempt, but without succeeding; on which I concluded not to attempt any further to see him. I then called upon my kind friend Dr. Brandis, and informed him of my trying situation; one of his family gave me notes to two persons, each of whom would be competent to help me: the notes were sent as directed, but neither of the parties were to be met with. It then appeared to me, that it would be right for me to make another attempt to see Dr. Forrchambre; I therefore proceeded to his residence, and found, as before, his door was made fast, the house being let out to different families. I resolved to traverse the house from the bottom to the top, to try to make him out, when coming to a room-door, I heard a voice as if a person was lecturing. I con-

cluded to remain until the lecture closed, when I knocked at the door, and the doctor himself opened it, and took me into his own apartment. We were soon followed by another agreeable-looking man, who took his seat with us. After some conversation had passed, I informed the doctor what had brought me in search of him, at the same time claiming his help: he pleaded his inability, from not being thoroughly acquainted with the English language; but he assured me his friend, who had given us his company, whom he considered a serious character, was fully competent to afford me the help I stood in need of. His friend at first requested to be excused from taking upon himself so much responsibility, but on my informing him of my circumstances, he at length yielded, and agreed to attend upon me on the morrow in the afternoon.

Fourth-day, having at times felt drawings in my mind to make another visit to the bishop, to the minister of police, and to my kind friend Count Shoolburgh, the doctor kindly offered to accompany me to these places. We proceeded to the Count Shoolburgh's: our meeting appeared to afford him pleasure, which I could truly say it did to myself; he informed me he had given orders for such of the prisoners who worked on the fortifications to be detained at home, that my views of seeing them together should not be thwarted; and that the officers in the prison had orders to meet my views in all respects. After taking an affectionate farewell, we proceeded to the minister of the police, who received me kindly, saying, every thing at the prison was ordered to meet my wishes in all respects; he requested, if I had any observations to make, I would do it. I laid before the minister of the police the views which had come before my mind, on the improper manner in which the first day of the week was spent, and conspicuously so in Copenhagen; with my continued belief, because these things were suffered thus to go on uncontrolled by those in authority, the Spirit of the Lord was grieved thereby. He assured me considerable improvement had taken place, and he hoped would yet go forward. I presented him with the address to Hamburgh, which he said he received with pleasure. We next called on the bishop, to whom I opened my views on the evening amusements on First-day, with my full persuasion, that if the clergy were willing, faithfully to do their part towards the removal of these evil practices, their influence alone would be likely to do much toward it. I also laid before him, the need there was for him to be found faithfully doing his part in this necessary work. He appeared patiently to receive what I had to offer, assuring me, he was desirous of doing all in his power towards remedying these things. I cannot feel myself acquitted in the Divine sight, without laying these subjects before those who are in authority, and whose example is looked at on account of

the station they are filling amongst the people May I be preserved faithful in doing what my hands find to do, with all my might, (leaving the result to the Lord,) is the travail of my soul.

At the time appointed this afternoon, my kind helpmeet in the work waited upon me; the assurance in my own mind before we proceeded, that I might confide in his doing his best in giving the correct sense of what I might have given me for the prisoners, afforded me some consolation. Our first visit was to the city prison, called the Jugshuuset: we found the governor had received orders to admit me, but he could not at first be made to understand my views for desiring to visit the prisoners. This placed me in a trying situation; and when this was in degree brought about, I had to contend with the same difficulty I met with at Spandau with the governor there, for the governor objected to the prisoners being assembled, they being what he called such desperate characters. I hope I was not void of feeling for my interpreter and the governor, who appeared so much intimidated at the prospect of going amongst them assembled in a body. I found a considerable number of those the governor considered the most orderly, were working in one room together. I requested to be conducted to this apartment; on which we were attended by the governor and some of his officers. I observed (as is the case on some parts of the Continent) a strong military guard dispersed about the prison; but my dependence I found must be firmly fixed on that Divine power, that is able to chain down the evil dispositions in the minds of the prisoners, should there be a desire in any of them to harm us: and that I must not lean in any degree to these arms of flesh. It occurred to me, should the prisoners rise up against us, (which I had not the least fear would be permitted to be the case,) if the military were to fire, I should stand no better chance of my life than the prisoners. In this apartment we met with eighty men prisoners, employed in preparing and dyeing worsted for the manufacturers: the governor having informed us there was another company in an adjoining room; I persuaded him to have them brought to join these eighty, who were now with us, and he ordered his officers to unlock their door and bring them to us: quietness soon took place. What I had to communicate appeared to be generally well received: heart-felt sorrow was in a striking manner imprinted on many of their countenances; and great quietness continued throughout the opportunity. At our parting I gave each of the prisoners my hand. He then conducted us into another large work-room without my making the request, and ordering his officers to unlock the doors where the rest of the prisoners were, they were assembled with the rest in this room. After the governor had arranged them for all to hear, as my interpreter's voice was not strong, the governor addressed them, I

was afterwards told, in a very appropriate manner, endeavouring to impress their minds with a sense of the difficulties I must have passed through, to come to visit their country and them in this way, from the purest of motives; he then exhorted them in an impressive manner to give attention to what I should have to say to them. This proved a quiet solid opportunity, both to the prisoners and the officers of the prison, most of them giving me their hands, I was led to hope, with feelings of gratitude to that Divine power, who thus influenced my mind to make them this visit. The governor then conducted us to the women's department, where seventy prisoners were assembled; the chief of whom were prisoners for life, except their good behaviour should merit the interference of the king, who has the power of remitting any part of their sentence. The women were variously employed; they were very clean in their persons and apartments, generally appearing healthy, which was also the case with the men. The governor arranged the prisoners in order before us, and the opportunity was quietly conducted: the prisoners were so generally broken into tears, that I found it hard work fully to obtain relief of mind: on parting from them, one woman very far advanced in life, clasped my hand so very tight that I had great difficulty in getting away from her. It was pleasant to observe the respect which they manifested for the governor and the officers of the prison. We parted under feelings of affection for the governor and his officers, and proceeded to the great prison, called the Stockhuuset, where those who are considered the most desperate of the criminals are confined: many of them are chained together, and employed under a strong military guard on the fortifications. On our arrival at the prison, the captain of the guard was waiting to receive us; we were, however, kept some time, which to me might appear longer than it was, from the solicitude I laboured under to have this last part of my work accomplished: it appeared that the cause of our detention was, a mistake as to the time of our visit, and that the men who worked on the fortifications, had been kept in the prison the whole of the morning awaiting our visit; but of this arrangement I had not been informed, so that in consequence of not attending at the time appointed, they were liberated in the afternoon to go to their work, and had not all returned. The prisoners were at length assembled in a large court-yard, whither the captain of the guard, my interpreter and myself proceeded: the sight of so many hundreds of my fellow-creatures, very heavily loaded with fetters and chains, was truly affecting to me, so much so that I felt as if I should have sunk under this exhibition of human woe and misery. I could not help deploring the wretchedness and depravity observable in many of their countenances, which I was led to fear proceeded from the hardened state of their hearts, induced from



long imprisonment, and the degraded state into which they felt themselves brought, by being so publicly exposed to view, when marched to and from their work, chained together under a military guard; indeed the countenances of some appeared as if they were ripe for committing the most heinous acts of barbarity; nevertheless, the fear of danger from them was not permitted to have any place in my mind. Great pains were taken to arrange them round the yard, and we were placed in a situation the most favourable for all the prisoners to hear: but on taking our station I observed, that the military guard of the prison was placed behind the prisoners, who were arranged before us: this, for the moment, made rather a terrific appearance, and led me, as before, to consider, that if a disturbance were to take place, and the military were ordered to fire, it was very unlikely we should escape with our lives. But being favoured to resume my former confidence in that arm of Divine power, which remains invincible, I was borne up above all these discouraging considerations; feeling my mind centered where alone help is to be found, to aid me in faithfully discharging that which appeared to me to be my duty, towards these my poor wretched-looking fellow-creatures. The quietness that soon took place, was such that had it not been for the objects before me, I might have supposed I was standing beside the grave of a Friend.

I thought I had a sense given me that my interpreter was favoured with best help, and would be enabled to get through with peace to his own mind, as he afterwards acknowledged, expressing the thankfulness he felt, that this opportunity of assisting me had thus fallen to his lot. The behaviour of the prisoners during the whole of the time we were with them, was<sup>t</sup> becoming the occasion. The countenances of many appeared solid, and, as if sorrow for their misconduct filled their hearts, the tears stood in the eyes of some, and trickled down the cheeks of others. It being rather late in the evening, and feeling myself much exhausted, I requested that the prisoners might be informed that I felt unequal to give them each my hand as I wished to have done, and therefore I hoped they would excuse my not doing so: but this omission of mine has often since occasioned me some severe plungings of mind; and from what I at times feel when this visit comes up into view, had I to pass through the same opportunity again, I would rather it was necessary from exhaustion to carry me off the spot, than to omit, as I did, giving these poor creatures each one my hand of love. Before we parted, the captain of the guard addressed the prisoners, my interpreter informed me, in a very impressive manner; recommending them to attend to the advice which had been giving them. We were then conducted by the captain of the guard to his apartments, where wine and fruit were provided for us. Before we left the captain, as a token

of remembrance of this opportunity, he requested I would write on a sheet of paper my name and place of abode. Recollecting that I had one of the pamphlets, "Thoughts on the Importance of Religion," at my hotel, I told him I should be glad to present it to him, if I had the means of conveying it to him: on my reaching my hotel, a person from the captain was waiting to convey the book to him. And now I was made fully sensible, it was through the superintending care of Israel's Shepherd, that my service in this place was brought to a peaceful close. The gates of Copenhagen appearing set wide open to me, I ordered a carriage for the morrow to take me to Elsineur.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

SIXTH-DAY, 9th. mo. 1824, I proceeded to Elsinour. I do not know how to describe my state of mind at the present time more correctly, than by saying, that I felt like one of the porters employed in London to carry heavy burdens, who, having finished his day's work, lays by his knot. Being released for the present from the heavy load of exercise of mind I have had to endure since coming into the city, I was favoured to reach Elsinour in the afternoon. The prospect of embarking upon the great deep, led me further to consider my motive for undertaking a voyage to Russia; but there appeared no other way for me to come at true and substantial peace, but quietly to subject my poor nerves to such perils as Divine wisdom might see meet should attend me on my passage there. I waited on my kind friend Charles Fenwick, the English consul, with whom a letter was waiting for me from Daniel Wheeler, giving me instructions how to proceed on my arrival at Cronstadt, and conveying an invitation to his house, which was truly acceptable; for I was sensible of the need there would be for me, when at Petersburg, to try to find a safe sheltering-place, where I might be out of the way of much company, and in an English family. I informed the consul of my desire to take the first vessel for Cronstadt, whenever he could recommend to me a suitable one; but the wind was now contrary for a passage to Russia. I was told the wind had been for some time favourable, but now it had tacked about, I might be detained here some days. I found, without great watchfulness, and endeavouring through holy help to cast my care on that Divine Power, who had in such a wonderful manner cared for me, that I should become involved in so much anxiety and perplexity about getting forward, as to rob me of that consolation, which, I had reason to believe, the retrospect of my late religious movements was intended to afford me.

Seventh-day, feeling my mind impressed with a sense of the necessity of sending my papers and memorandums to England, I lost no time in making up a packet for that purpose, which I gave

in charge to the consul to forward by post, lest the wind should suddenly tack about again : my books I had disposed of, except my Bible, in a way I was led to hope would be useful ; for I had a sense given me before I left Copenhagen, that it would be unsafe for me to take more books with me to Russia than my Bible, and that a jealous eye would be upon me when I arrived at Petersburg.

About four o'clock on First-day morning, I was called up, and informed that the vessel, in which the consul wished me to go, was in sight. I had to take a boat to get on board, and was truly thankful when I was safe on the deck of the *Henry*, of Hull, Captain Meggat. There being no passengers in the cabin, I had it to myself : sickness keeping off, I passed the day comfortably.

Second-day, the wind was contrary, which proved an exercise of patience to our ship's company. I retired to bed, and got some sleep until near morning, when I was awoken by a violent shouting, with great uproar on the deck, as if all hands were in full motion to escape some danger, and the vessel I sensibly felt had whirled round ; but I could feel nothing so proper for me as keeping quiet in my bed : after awhile I found the vessel resumed her station again, was under sail and all was quiet. On inquiry next morning into the cause of this awful alarm, the captain informed me that a foreign vessel under full sail, instead of keeping her right course, when in full sail, had crossed our course near us ; the probable consequence of which was, had not our captain used the precautions which he did, that one or other of the vessels would have gone to the bottom. This merciful escape produced feelings of gratitude in my mind for the care of Him, who thus in mercy watches over us by night and by day, and in times of danger prepares a way for our escape.

Third-day, the wind in our favour, but the weather so foggy that our captain considered it dangerous attempting to make much way through the Gulf of Finland, the passage being narrow and the coast dangerous. Night coming on, and our captain fearing a storm, the necessary preparations were made against danger from it ; the forked lightning that appeared in the horizon was truly awful ; yet after all these trying circumstances, I was favoured to retire to rest in full confidence that I should be watched over, and cared for by that Divine Power, to whom I found I could appeal for the sincerity of my motives, in thus exposing myself upon this unstable element.

Fourth-day, the wind much in our favour ; about midnight we cast anchor abreast of the guard-ship, stationed in the channel.

Fifth-day, the regular officers came on board to take down our names, and seal up our luggage ; we proceeded again, but were detained some time before we could enter the harbour of Cronstadt, in consequence of some vessels having arrived from Lubeck,



which sailed about the time I should have taken shipping there ; had I sailed, as I was advised to do, from that port, I should probably have been a passenger in one of them. On my landing, I found the passengers, who came in these vessels from Lubeck, were all of them involved in great distress, their luggage being seized along with the vessels, in consequence of their having large quantities of goods concealed on board, for the purpose of smuggling them into Cronstadt. On observing the great distress some of the passengers were involved in, by their not being allowed to take from the vessel any thing more than the clothes they had on them, I felt a fresh cause for thankfulness on my part, and a further proof of the watchful care of Israel's Shepherd over me ; that this might be engraven on my heart as with the point of a diamond, never more to be defaced, was the earnest prayer of my soul. After our vessel had made her way into port, amidst the confusion these Lubeck vessels had occasioned, we were visited by another set of officers ; the captain accompanied me on shore to the different offices to clear my luggage, and procure my passport ; on which occasion I met with civil treatment, except from some inexperienced young men in the long-room, one of whom took my hat from me and detained it for awhile. Having procured my passport and cleared my luggage, accompanied by my kind captain, I went on board the steamboat for Petersburg : here we also met with some of the passengers who came in the vessel from Lubeck, whose situation appeared a pitiable one, especially some females, as they had not been suffered to bring away with them the least change of apparel of any kind. My kind friend Samuel Stansfield was waiting on the quay to take charge of me, a poor wanderer in a strange land as I felt myself ; and he hired a *droskey*, the carriage used here for hire, which took me to his store ; we then proceeded on foot to the house of my kind friend Daniel Wheeler, who met me on the road, and, with his wife and family, gave me a kind reception. I felt grateful to be once more in the company of members of our religious Society ; and nothing appeared to be wanting on their parts, in endeavouring to make their house a comfortable abode for an Englishman. This retreat out of the city felt to me very desirable, concluding in my own mind I should escape many callers, whom I might otherwise be exposed to the danger of meeting, which at times I had been led to anticipate with a sort of dread that proved distressing to my feelings ; for I was aware of my open communicative disposition, and I knew not how far I might at unawares be drawn into conversation, and thereby be brought into difficulty. But, alas ! before the day closed, I was made sensible that this quiet abode was not to be my resting-place, during my tarriance on this part of the Lord's footstool ; but I must be willing to submit to take up my

residence in the centre of the city; under the assurance, that if I kept humble and simple in all my movements, Divine mercy would so watch over me, that I should not be harmed. The prospect of my being obliged to quit this quiet, and, as I viewed it, sheltered situation, caused me sadness of heart for a short time; but, after some sleepless nights, seeing no way for me to secure Divine protection but by yielding, I informed my kind friend Daniel Wheeler how I was circumstanced in this respect, and requested him to inquire after several lodgings in English families in the centre of the city, that I might have choice of the one which best accorded with what to me appeared to be Divine direction.

Sixth-day, I much enjoyed my quiet retreat out of the bustle there was in the city, and to breathe the clear fresh air of the country.

Seventh-day, I went to Petersburg in search of lodgings; made calls at several places; and, as far as respected the accommodation for my poor body, nothing was wanting but the sanction of my Divine Master, whom I had most earnestly supplicated to direct me in the choice of my temporary abode in this city: this was wanting, which with me was the principal thing to look to. A family was mentioned to me by my friend Daniel Wheeler, but on inquiry, it appeared they were not in the practice of taking in boarders. My mind, on first hearing of these lodgings, felt perfectly at liberty to accept of them, if I could have them; but this I found was a very doubtful matter. I requested to be taken to them, that I might try if way could be made for my accommodation: the owners of the house received me kindly, and on taking my seat in their apartment, such were the feelings of my mind that it was pronounced home to me. On my request being made known to the family, I was informed I could not be accommodated with two rooms, which I might have had at the other places I had seen, and that it would take a day to prepare the one they were willing to spare me; for this offer of one room I felt truly thankful, being persuaded in my own mind it was the right place for me to pitch my tent; I therefore agreed to accept it.

First-day, we held our meetings at Daniel Wheeler's, in all about twelve in number; it rarely occurs that any of the inhabitants give their company, although it is known in the city that such meetings are held on First-day morning, First-day afternoon, and Fifth-days.

Second-day, I took possession of my new apartment; from the kind manner I was received by my hostess, a cheering hope was raised in my mind that I should find myself much at home under their roof; and I resolved to put up with every inconvenience as to the body, rather than by seeking ease this way, to expose myself to dangers which might subject me to sufferings both of body and of mind; for I often felt myself placed as on a pinnacle,

which called for my watching well, not only all my words and actions, but my looks and appearance as I passed along the streets; the truth of which soon manifested itself.

Third-day, 21st of 9th month, having apprehended it to be required of me to make records, from day to day, of the wonderful manner the Lord my God was leading me about, instructing and confirming me in the never-failing all-sufficiency of his power, to effect for man all things essential to his salvation, I was much tried in my mind (after leaving Copenhagen) to arrange for continuing the practice, when I reached the Russian territories, in such a way, that should I come under difficulty, and my papers be seized, they might not prove a means of involving me in greater difficulty. After thinking on various modes of procedure, I believe I am safe in saying it was suggested to my mind by my good Master, that the only safe way for me to pursue, would be to make notes of my daily walks, the state of the weather, unaccompanied by observations on objects I passed; or when my attention was arrested by particular subjects or circumstances, and in order to bring them again before the view of my mind, to add, 'this day read such a chapter,'—taking care to make choice of one the most in accordance with my views at the time; as, for instance, the 23rd chapter of Jeremiah, and that part of the chapter which more immediately applied to the subject or circumstance which had engaged my attention; then to make a small ink dot in my Bible against the part so applying to my views at the time, to which I might refer on my return to England. By this mode, should my papers be seized, as I understood had been the case with one of my countrymen, a short time before my arrival, nothing could be made out against me, than what might be the practice of all who are desirous of preserving health of body and health of mind. I spent the afternoon at Ockter, about seven English miles from the city, the residence of George Edmunds, one of the English Friends.

People began to manifest an anxiety to know my inducement, at the approach of winter, for coming to Petersburg; on my examination at Cronstadt, before the admiral appointed for that purpose, relative to my motives for going to Petersburg, I could not say I was come to purchase their hemp, tallow, &c., and they could not suppose that to see my friends merely could have been my motive; and I found it was not in my power to advance any other reason, not being able to see, as yet, any line of religious service laid out for me: I therefore was led to crave, that through the superintending care of Israel's Shepherd, I might be preserved "by the word of truth,—by the power of God,—by the armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left; through honour and dishonour, through evil report and good report;"

being considered "as a deceiver, and yet true." (Cor. ii. 6.) With this desire closed a day of deep inward exercise.

Seventh-day, my mind was tried at the prospect of spending a long, dreary winter in this severely cold climate, without at present any clear view of good arising from it, either to myself or others; but believing that quiet submission to this and every requiring of my Divine Master, was my proper province, I laboured after it.

First-day I walked out of town to meeting: with gratitude we had cause to acknowledge, that Divine aid was near, uniting us together in labouring after a portion of that bread, which alone is able to nourish up the soul unto eternal life.

Third-day, the weather being very gloomy, I had concluded to pass my time at home; but I found my health required I should devote my usual time to walking, which I did with reluctance. On my way home I met four companies of prisoners under a military guard, some for depredations, others for strolling from the estate of their baron, and others for not being able to produce a passport; they were on their way to the police-office for examination. I looked at them with feelings of pity, considering it was all of Divine mercy, I was not suffered to be one amongst them.

Fourth-day, accompanied by my kind friend, Samuel Stansfield, I went to the custom-house about my luggage: our keeping on our hats excited notice; my luggage was examined, but not before the question was put to me, had I any books. I had been informed, since my coming to Petersburg, no English books on religious subjects were suffered to be brought into the country; this made me thankful that I yielded to the intimation in my own mind, either to part with my books in Denmark, or return them to my friends in England: I was therefore able to say, no; but before my luggage was opened, it occurred to me I had a small poetical work in the German language, the gift of a friend at Altona; therefore I had the officer informed to that effect; the book was taken in charge, until I had signed a notification, engaging me to present it to the censor for his inspection.

Samuel Stansfield being about to return to England, felt trying to me, as I should be left in the city alone, a stranger to the language and manners, and not knowing how to market for myself: as I was not permitted to remain at my kind friend Daniel Wheeler's to winter, and as I was so far removed from my friends in England, I found it hard work at all times to keep in that entire submission, in which I could adopt the language, "Not my will, but thine be done, O Lord."

Fifth-day, walked out to Volkova; attended the usual meeting. The days being very short, I walked home to tea; passed the remainder of the day in reading, and reflecting on my solitary situa-



tion, accompanied with desires that I might be preserved, labouring after becoming gratitude, that a kind Providence had put it in my power to procure all the outward comforts I stood in need of, —food, warm clothing, and things suitable to the climate, in which I was to winter.

Sixth-day, 1st of 10th month. During my walk this morning, I was favoured with a humbling sense of my being in my proper allotment; which enabled me to make sweet melody in my heart to the Lord, and to crave the continuation of his Divine counsel and help, to be able to keep my proper place amongst the people; whose eyes might be upon me, watching my actions and ways more than I was at all aware of. But this rejoicing was not of long duration; the enemy of all good found other work for me, by suggesting to my mind this query, what good was likely to result from the labour and toil I had passed through, and the expense which my coming to Russia had occasioned; but no way being open for me to spend my time otherwise than I was then doing, after having endured much conflict as the result of these suggestions, I was favoured again to experience a good degree of quietude of mind; and I had to witness in the vision of light, a glimmering prospect of duty to make visits to the emperor, who was now absent from the city on his travels. Whilst under the exercise of this humiliating prospect, I thought if the way should open for the full accomplishment of these visits, and if my example, in leaving all and coming, in the love of the gospel, to this country, had a tendency to convince and confirm the judgment of only a solitary individual, of the efficacious working of this love of God on the mind of man, when fully co-operated with, it would be enough; for, as the judgment becomes thus awakened, and a willingness is brought about to bow to the holy influence of this love, on the part of the awakened mind, fruits corresponding with its Divine nature will in due time manifest themselves; and the example of such, like leaven, may prove the means of leavening others into the like spirit and holy disposition of mind. I received an account from my own home that my family were well; which I hope I numbered amongst the manifold blessings, my heavenly Father has showered down upon me, during my painful pilgrimage in this land.

Seventh-day, the weather inviting, I commenced my usual walking: from the agreeable change in the weather, I rambled until I unexpectedly found myself in the summer-gardens in front of the palace of Peter the Great: I made a halt to take a survey of this humble edifice, which produced in my mind this conclusion, respecting the founder of it; that amongst the vices this great monarch had to contend with, he had not given proof, that temptation to splendour, was his besetting sin. I returned home, weary in body, but thankful I was made willing to be gazed at; for by

this time I began to attract considerable attention as a foreigner, and one called a Quaker; for I apprehended it to be required of me to choose the most public places for my daily walks. My breathing was to Him, who only could strengthen me patiently to yield to every dispensation, which he may permit me to be tried with; and thus, I trust, all things will eventually work together for good, even these humiliating seasons, in which we become a gazing-stock and wonder, because we cannot bow to the god of fashion, so much worshipped, and cringe to the Hamans we at times fall in the way of.

Third-day, took my usual walk. Oh, the superstition that abounds in this city! How is obeisance to crosses and pictures, substituted for that repentance and amendment of life, which God looks for! A heavy load of condemnation, I fear, will rest on the Greek clergy on this account; not willing to enter the kingdom themselves, through Christ the door, they are not promoting it amongst those they call their flock.

Fourth-day, I commenced my morning's walk; but by pursuing it too long, I found myself so weary as to unfit me to sit down to read to much profit; afresh reminding me of the language of the preacher,—‘to everything there is a season, and a time to every purpose under heaven.’ May I so aim to come at the knowledge of this right time and season, and regulate all my movements by it, as to escape that hurry and perturbation of mind,—the consequence of our movements, in civil and religious matters, not being thus rightly regulated and timed. My afternoon's walk I endeavoured to moderate. On my way home I was met by one of my countrymen, (who has taken a kind part in endeavouring to better the state of the prisons, and the condition of the prisoners,) who was on his way to make his usual visit to these abodes of human misery, and who kindly invited me to accompany him there; I was not a little tried on the occasion, feeling myself under the necessity, as heretofore, of refusing his kind offer, as my time for such visits did not appear to be fully come. I returned home, well satisfied that my friend's importunity to go with him, did not prevail. Oh, the need I feel, and in a particular manner since my feet have been set in this city, to know every inch of ground I am to travel on measured, before one step is taken in the line of apprehended duty!

Sixth-day, the weather rainy, yet I took my morning's walk. I begin to get bolder in venturing about the city alone, having by this time obtained the knowledge of several way-marks, which rise above the tops of the houses, to steer my course home by; otherwise, I find, I should frequently be brought under difficulty, for want of a knowledge of the Russian language: although at times the want of this knowledge places me in a trying situation, yet I often am led to appreciate my ignorance in this respect, because I

hereby escape the danger of being drawn into conversation, on things that do not concern me, nor comport with the sacred errand upon which I am professing to be come from home.

Seventh-day, the weather wet and gloomy; my mind partook of gloom also, on looking at the solitary situation, in which I am very soon likely to be left, by the departure of Samuel Stansfield: but by endeavouring after patience and confidence in Him, who was my morning light, the assurance was again vouchsafed, that if I on my part maintained my integrity, by being faithful in all things, I should be cared for to the end, and be safely conducted to my family again.

First-day, walked out of town to meeting. in both meetings, silence was the word of command given me: what a mercy to be able to understand the Master's voice, when to speak, and when to keep silence!

Third-day, the wind last night was very tempestuous, whilst I lay comfortably on my bed: I considered it a favour, when I heard it blow a hurricane, that I was not on the wide ocean. Thus should our inward exercises be great, and our outward condition and deprivations be such as not to be equalled by many, as we may think, if our minds are but centered on the sure foundation, Jesus Christ, the same to-day as yesterday, able to deliver to the very utmost, we shall often feel the need there is to endeavour to cherish a thankful disposition of mind, that our situation is not so trying to nature as otherwise it might have been; and thus be enabled to bless the Lord for his past favours, and humbly hope for more. During my afternoon's ramble, ruminating on the seemingly useless manner in which I am spending my time, Satan ceased not to bestow great labour and pains to promote a disposition in me, to fish for cause to condemn myself; but in adorable mercy, he was not permitted to effect his purposes; for, with respect to my not being engaged in much religious service at present, whilst the cloud rests, as it continues to do, on the tabernacle, it must be unsafe for me to go forth of my tent.

Fourth-day, the ground covered with snow: this sample of the approach of winter looks trying to my nature, considering the inclemency of the season here, when compared with that in my native land.

Fifth-day, accompanied by my kind friend Samuel Stansfield, I walked out to meeting, which to me proved a time of deep inward conflict of mind. I do not record this in a spirit of complaining, being well assured these seasons of inward desertion are in great mercy permitted by that Almighty Power, who deals with us, as a wise parent deals with the child, whose future well-doing he has most at heart; not always dandling his tender

charge on his knee, but letting him feel his feet on the ground which he is to tread upon.

Sixth-day, during my ramble this morning, I came to a Greek chapel, at the door of which stood a burial-car, the body being in the chapel; when the body came out, I paused and viewed the awful procession as it moved on to the place of interment; which awakened in my mind this deeply and affecting consideration, that no more sacrifice for sin can now be made, as it respects the poor individual, whose mortal remains are about to be committed to its mother-earth: this consideration was accompanied by fervent cries to the Lord for strength, to witness my day's work to keep pace with the day; that the work of salvation may, when the same awful period approaches me, be finished.

Seventh-day morning, the day being inviting, I enjoyed my walk in the afternoon. I received a visit from a young man, whose mind appeared awakened to a sense of good impressions; but my way felt very much closed up, so much so that I did not feel at liberty to enter freely into conversation with him on religious subjects, and therefore turned the conversation to the state of agriculture in Russia: before he left me, he informed me he had been a close follower of the person who was introduced to me in Altona, who had been banished this country, because of his religious opinions: it was the same person respecting whom my mind was at that time impressed with a caution, to avoid all conversation with him relative to his conduct here, and the conduct of this government towards him. The young man informed me, there were many in Petersburg, who still adhered to this man's religious opinions. I felt thankful, when I came to hear of these things, that I had been on my guard, and had not entered into much religious conversation with him; which, had I done so, might have proved one of the snares of the evil fowler.

First-day, walked out to meeting; at the close of which their three-months' meeting was held, in which the queries were read and considered.

Second-day, the frost was so severe that I was obliged to cut my walk short, and remain the rest of the day at home reading, having a supply of books from Friends here. How ought we to appreciate our privilege, who have received an education, to be able, through Divine help, to comprehend the various subjects, laid before us through the instrumentality of the scriptures, which are able to make wise unto salvation through faith, which is in Christ Jesus.

Fourth-day, much of my time is occupied in reading and walking: this appears to me to be my great Master's will at present respecting me, to which my mind has at times become reconciled, considering that my appearance, in parading the most



public walks in the city, (where many of the people spend much of their time,) excites notice. As I feel it a duty for me so to do, and am generally known to be one of those called Quakers, it is impossible for me to say how far some may be excited from curiosity, to wish to search into our religious principles and practices, and what may prove the result of such inquiry. But after all, it appears to be enough for me to know, I am called upon to make myself thus conspicuous.

Fifth-day, walked out of town to meeting; in addition to our own little company, we had the company of a Frenchman and a German. A lively interest was, I believe, excited in some of our minds on their account, that they might be favoured to know Jerusalem to be a quiet habitation; which we could not doubt they were desirous of being found aiming at.

First-day, walked out to meeting, accompanied for the last time by my kind friend Samuel Stansfield.

Third-day, after being favoured with a comfortable night's rest, and refreshed by a bountiful breakfast, for both of which blessings, I humbly hope I may say, feelings of gratitude were my theme, I pursued my morning's walk towards the Neva, where the ice was coming down in large masses from the lake; on this account great preparations were making to be able, at a short notice, to remove the bridge of boats that were near the admiralty: this occasions a great interruption to the foot passengers and carriages, and much confusion to those who had business to transact at the custom-house and other public offices on the island. The evening was a time of general illumination, but here it is not an act of the people individually, but a government concern, and performed by placing rows of lamps on the edge of the foot-paths: all was conducted with quiet.

As I was not giving proof that I came to this country to trade with the inhabitants, great jealousy was excited in the minds of some in authority respecting me; amongst whom, as I was credibly informed, reports were in circulation, that I had been travelling all over the Continent, and giving away a great deal of money wherever I came, and that my motives for so doing must be, to bring the people over to myself, in order to excite rebellion. When this report reached my ears, through a well-wishing Friend, who received this information immediately himself from a person very active in the government, it may well be supposed it awakened in my mind some painful considerations; more especially having heard of a recent circumstance of one of my countrymen being ordered out of his bed in the dead of the night into a carriage, and hurried away to the frontiers, without any previous notice of the cause: yet I was somewhat prepared to meet reports of jealousy being excited in the minds of the authorities respecting me, from the painful feelings of my own

mind in this respect ; which caused me to be very careful to give no ground on my part for suspicions, that my motives for coming to Petersburg, were any other than they were. I therefore carefully avoided at all times, except I could give ample proof I had business, setting a foot in any of their establishments ; I confined my walks to places of common resort, and then kept straight forward, avoiding, as much as I could, any intercourse with strangers ; and when I was accosted in the streets by such, I gave them a short civil answer, and left them, pursuing my walk again ; for I thought I clearly saw herein only I was safe.

Fourth-day, after a sleepless night, I turned out to take my morning's walk, but the frost had disappeared : the damp state of the air was such, it affected my breathing to that degree, that I found exercise out of doors became oppressive. During my short morning's ramble, feeling a precious benefit to result from a daily care over the mind, that I might be enabled, with the Psalmist, to say, " Bless the Lord, O my soul ! and forget not all his benefits," (Psalm, ciii. 2,) I had to recur to the exercise of mind I was frequently introduced into, whilst on my passage from Elsinour, when looking to my becoming a resident here, accompanied with earnest breathings of soul to the Lord my God, that he would be pleased, if the way did not open for me to become an inmate in the family of any of the Friends here, that he would provide for me a safe, quiet abode ; and I was led to admire his condescension in answering my prayers in the manner he has done : the petition was raised in me for the continuation of his watchful care over me, whose ear is ever open to such an innumerable company of petitioners, supplying all their manifold wants at one and the same time. Well indeed exclaimed the Psalmist, " his greatness is unsearchable," and he is " greatly to be praised ;" and well also might the inspired prophet break forth in the descriptive language, " Wonderful, Counsellor, the Mighty God, the Everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace !"

During my walk this afternoon, I called at the warehouse lately occupied by Samuel Stansfield ; on entering it, a young Englishman, an attendant there, pointing to a person standing at a counter, remarked, " That is a Russian nobleman, who speaks English well ; he has been making various inquiries respecting you, and has expressed a desire to make your acquaintance." I therefore offered him my hand, which he received ; on which he endeavoured to draw me out into conversation, manifesting an eager disposition to investigate narrowly my motives, for coming to Russia at this inclement season of the year. Not being able to make out any thing to answer his evil purpose of ensnaring me in my words, he next queried with me, could I give him any books. I was made thankful I had so attended to the intimation in my own mind, before I left Denmark, to dispose of them all

there, that I could therefore say in truth, that I brought no English books with me to Russia; on which he left me, never after manifesting any disposition, when we met in the street, to make my acquaintance any further; but passed me from time to time. This escape out of the hands of such a designing man, I considered I was in duty bound to add to the long list of proofs of that Divine mercy that has followed me: a prohibition being made against books being brought into the country, this request for them was a trap laid for me, (as I was afterwards informed,) had I been able to answer his demands: similar attacks I met with in my walks; but by following the caution given me in my own mind, of making a concise, civil reply to the questions put to me, and speedily leaving the parties again, I escaped their snares.

Fifth-day, walked out to meeting; the road was so deep in mud, as to occasion it to be laborious getting along. I took my tea with a family, the mistress of which had been educated in our religious Society, but who married out from amongst Friends; she retained the marks of a woman of orderly conduct, which I have found mostly continues to be the case with such; at least as far as the term orderly conduct comports with the ideas which the world attaches to it, however widely they may depart from that distinguishing badge of simplicity in their outward garb, which the consistent members of our religious Society feel themselves constrained to observe.

First-day morning, from a restless night, and the weather proving rainy to an extreme, a disposition to stay at home I found was gaining upon me, which I felt fully satisfied, if I gave way to, peace of mind would not result from it: I therefore resolved to try and do my best, and went to our meeting for worship. Our little gathering was owned by the good Master's presence, which the rightly-exercised mind will be constrained to acknowledge is enough, and will not feel anxious about instrumental help.

Second-day, 1st of 11th month, my mind has again been brought under exercise on account of the English residents in this nation, accompanied with desires that we may in all things be found setting a good example to the native inhabitants; I apprehended, before I am clear of the city, the way will open for me to cast off my exercise on their account. During my ramble this morning, my solitary situation much occupied my thoughts; and such discouraging prospects presented themselves to my mind, on taking a view of my remote distance from my family and friends in England, that I became almost overwhelmed in the contemplation of them; but Divine mercy condescended to renew to my mind the assurance, that if on my part I steadily maintained my integrity, He would not fail to care for me every day and every way: this afresh animated me to renew my covenant, and to say,

if, like the apostle, I am but favoured to finish my course with joy, I am willing to follow thee, my Divine Master, whithersoever thou mayest be pleased to lead me, even into prison, or unto death, so that thy good presence does but go with me.

Third-day, after breakfast and reading, I rambled round the outside of the gardens and palace built by the Prince Potemkin, a favourite of the Empress Catherine, and afterwards to the monastery. The weather was clear and inviting, and my mind being busily occupied, I exceeded so much my usual time in my ramble, that when I reached home, that which might have afforded relief to the body, tended to oppress it. Passing by one of the canals, at the time when the labourers on board the barges, which convey the rubbish from the city, were about taking their dinner, which consisted of black bread and salt, with either a poor drink they call quash, or water, I was forcibly struck, and somewhat reproved, by observing the uniform care they manifested, to fix their attention on a cross placed on the top of one of their places of worship, and devoutly asking a blessing on what we should consider a very miserable meal, before they attempted to taste it. The like care I have observed was manifested after they finished their meal, returning thanks for it, before they took a tool in their hand again to resume their labour. Although there may be reason to fear, with many of them, this, their devotion, is performed in the oldness of the letter, and not in the renewings of the Spirit on their minds; yet watching them, as at times I have done, I have not dared to doubt, but that sincerity was the governing principle, in the minds of some of this poor, degraded part of my fellow-creatures, in this act of duty.

Fourth-day, took my usual walk: retired early to bed; had a very restless night, through exercise of mind, with doubts, and fears, which Satan brought before my view. Towards morning I went to sleep, and dreamed I beheld a mountain on my right hand, whose top extended into the clouds, out of my sight; on the side of this mountain I observed a path, as if formed without the labour of man, very rough and rugged, and barely affording room for the feet of one traveller to go on it at a time. Abutting against the foot of the mountain, but considerably below this narrow path, was a broad, level gravel-path, very smooth and pleasant to look upon; at the entrance of this broad, level gravel-path, I perceived a vast cavity below, as if the foundation on which this path stood was not sound, and had given way, and let those who had been venturing on it into the cavity below. I was told I must take the narrow path, which I accordingly did; I then thought I heard a voice, (as clearly and intelligibly as ever I heard a voice with my outward ears,) saying to me, "This narrow path thou must continue to keep upon, although it will not allow of thy having a companion, to share with thee in the sufferings that



will await thee, whilst travelling on this rough and rugged narrow way. I observed there were great stones, standing up in places in the very track the feet must go. I was assured, if I observed great circumspection and watchfulness day by day, no harm would be suffered to befall me; but without this circumspection and watchfulness, there would be a danger of my dashing my feet against these stones, which I saw standing up in the path, and of being thereby precipitated into the vast cavity below me; and then it would fare with me as it had done with travellers on the same narrow path before me, who, by growing weary of the difficulties they had to encounter in their journey, and through a desire to make trial of the broad, smooth, level path, became indifferent and careless how they moved along, and in time were precipitated into the vortex below. I felt constrained, although with fear and trembling, to venture as far as I durst, to see its immense depth; and I observed at the bottom a body of water in continual motion, like a whirlpool; the sight of this, and the manner in which I was warned of my danger, (unless I maintained my daily watch,) made such an awful impression on my mind, that for days afterwards it continued to be the subject uppermost with me; I could not but view my dream as very significant of the path I have hitherto had to tread, and which I am led to believe I shall have to tread whilst I remain in this city, if I escape the hands of the police, (who I understand consider me a dangerous person;) and that it is designed as an intimation in mercy for my future government, and to confirm me yet more in the necessity of my having my mind stayed on God, and only on him, in all my steppings, without letting in discouragement. My situation may be said to resemble the owl in the desert, the pelican in the wilderness, and the sparrow alone on the house-top; for I passed days and days, and hardly exchanged a word with any one, except when I went out to meeting, or asked the family I was residing with, for my common necessities; for the way did not open in my own mind to hold converse much with them on other subjects. Why it is so with me, I have no right to query; my Divine Master knows there is cause for it, or he would not lay me under this restraint. I have no companion here I can feel at liberty to call upon for help, should I need it, assured as I am my motions are all as narrowly watched as they well can be; besides, should I be brought into difficulty through any stratagems of those who are watching over me with such an eye of jealousy, my friends might be brought into difficulty also; so that I find my solitary situation a matter of absolute necessity on my part, and I endeavour quietly to yield thereto, trying, as at times it is, to the flesh.

Fifth-day, walked out to my dear friend Daniel Wheeler's; attended meeting: we were favoured with a quiet, comfortable sitting together. On my way home, my kind friend, John Ven-

ning, took me to the Lancasterian school: a pleasing hope may be entertained, that through this and other such means going forward in this city, the work of reformation is making progress.

Seventh-day, rambled up and down the Newskoi Prospekt, a place of the greatest resort for the gentry in the city: it exceeds a mile in length. During this walk, my mind felt so sweetly centered in God, that the great bustle of people, carriages, and business that was going forward, were not suffered to interrupt that view given me of the character of our potent enemy: Satan is described by our Lord, (John, viii. 44,) as being a murderer from the beginning, a father of lies; to the truth of which I could set my seal, craving, as I have done this day, to be preserved, aiming continually at the character of the perfect and upright man, eschewing evil; if but, as it were, a grain of faith is at times dispensed to me, may I be found so faithfully occupying with it, as to know it to become efficacious to my escaping all the snares of this great enemy of good.

Another week closed with the language of, "Return unto thy rest, O my soul, for the Lord hath dealt bountifully with thee." First-day, I walked out to meeting; in both the morning and afternoon meeting, fresh cause was experienced to acknowledge, that the promise to the two or three had been in mercy dispensed. I returned home, and spent the evening quite alone; near my time of going to bed, one of my countrymen came to propose calling upon me on the morrow, and introducing me to the Prince Alexander Galitzin.

Second-day morning, visited the Prince Alexander Galitzin, who received me in an affable manner; being obliged to converse through an interpreter, was a take-off from my enjoyment, yet I felt well satisfied with my visit. On my return home I received a letter from a friend in England, the reading of which occasioned me some alarm for my personal safety, from some remarks it contained relative to my movements in Petersburg, lest my letter had been opened at the post-office, (which I had been informed was the practice with letters of foreigners,) and I be called upon by the police for an explanation of that part of my letter. It felt to me that I might be placed in a difficulty to give such an explanation as the police would accept; who would be more disposed to put their own constructions on the remarks my letter contained, and act accordingly, than to give me credit for any thing I might have to say on the occasion; independent of the tendency it might have, to increase that jealousy which had existed respecting me, from nearly my first entering Petersburg. I passed a distressing night in consequence of it, unable to come at that settlement of mind which I longed for, until I had written to my friends in England, requesting I might not be written to by Friends, or even by my own family, during my stay here; unless

sickness or death occurred in my family, and then to be careful to confine the letters solely to the case, without any addition whatsoever.

First-day, walked out to meeting, which proved a time of renewal of strength; for which favour I returned home well rewarded for the exertion my walk had occasioned. I passed the evening as usual alone, and retired to bed at eight o'clock, according to my accustomed practice. About ten o'clock, I was on a sudden awoke out of my sleep by the violent rattle of a carriage along the street, which stopped at the door of our house; upon which a person and my landlord became engaged in very loud and earnest conversation in the Russian language, for about a quarter of an hour; during which, as I was unable to understand what passed, the distressing feelings of my mind were indescribable. As it appeared best for me to ask no questions as to the cause of my being thus alarmed, I remained silent on the occasion; but next day I changed ten pounds of my paper-money into Dutch ducats, that I might not be destitute of money that would pass current to help me forward, should the jealousy excited in the minds of the police respecting me bring me into difficulty.

Third-day, was passed in reading and walking: I returned home cold and fatigued, yet under a humbling sense of the favour, that I had to return to a comfortable room, good supper and bed; my cup overflowed with gratitude to Him, who had thus bountifully given me all things richly to enjoy: may the exercise of my mind continue to be, "Search me, O Lord, try me and know my ways, prove me and know my thoughts, and if iniquity lodge in me, make use of such ways and means as thou seest meet, thoroughly to purge me from it, and keep me in the lowly valley of humility, and in the entire nothingness of self; that so all I am and all I may be through thy Divine help, may be to thy honour:" thus closed another day peacefully.

Fourth-day morning, a variety of concurring circumstances which occupied my mind, impeded my night's rest: may these waking hours in the night season, which so frequently fall to my lot, be profitably passed, is what I earnestly crave. On my turning out the next morning to take my usual exercise, I felt discouraged from having to contend with a severe frosty wind, which, in this northern clime, is very keenly felt by foreigners; a sample of what I may expect to have to bear, which led me to sigh and cry for strength, to be able patiently to endure every difficulty, which, in the ordering of Divine Providence, may be my portion during my stay on this side the great deep; then I believe, if I am favoured to know a daily abiding in patience, that cause for thankfulness will in the end be the clothing of my mind, that a willingness was brought about in me to spend the winter

in this cold, dreary climate. During my ramble, to-day, my attention was much occupied in viewing the awful situation of Uzzah ; who, unbidden, put forth his hand to the tottering ark, and what was the dreadful result of his presumption : I endeavoured quietly to dwell under the impressions this subject produced on my mind, in my present trying situation : being variously exercised, without a prospect of way opening for my relief, earnest were my petitions to my Almighty Helper, that I might be preserved in quiet submission to every dispensation of his wisdom, until the word of command for my relief was clearly and distinctly heard to go forth.

Fifth-day, I walked out to meeting : our little company was owned by the Master of all rightly-gathered assemblies ; for which favour, I believe it may be said, thankfulness filled our hearts.

Sixth-day, after breakfast and reading, I turned out to take my usual ramble under great depression of mind ; but Divine goodness was very merciful to me, and gave me to see, that, although not much visible actual service had yet fallen to my lot, Petersburg was my proper place of abode for the present ; and that I had no cause to be anxious about any thing, save to be preserved keeping my proper place amongst the people ; watching well my words and actions, keeping in the lamb-like disposition of mind towards all. O what confidence towards God, this doing our very best before him, and being found walking circumspectly before all men, gives us in times of close besetment, whether from within, or under the various trials we may have to pass through from things without ! amongst the things without, I find it hard work to be obliged to refuse the kind importunities of different persons in the city to take my dinner with them ; but I still continue to see with clearness, that if I am favoured to know all kept quiet within, I must take up the cross in this, as well as in every other respect, and content myself with my simple fare at home.

First-day, I walked out to meeting, and returned home in the evening, which, as usual, I passed quietly alone.

Second-day, pursued my usual exercise ; during which a degree of anxiety was excited in my mind, as to the mode of my returning to England ; but being made sensible it was not a subject for me as yet to suffer my mind to be taken up with, I besought the Lord for patience, until the way for my return opened more clearly on my mind, than is the case at the present time.

Third-day, after a very sleepless night, I turned out to take my usual ramble ; but nature was so feeble, and I was so disposed to totter as I passed along the streets, from the warm, damp state of the air, that I was obliged to cut my morning's walk very short ; I returned home, and commenced reading in the prophet



Hosea; and, if my feelings are correct, relative to the state of mind of the generality of the people in this great city, he sets it forth clearly in a very few words. "There is no truth, nor mercy, nor knowledge of God in the land; by swearing, and lying, and killing, and stealing, and committing adultery, they break out, and blood toucheth blood," (iv. 1, 2.)

Fourth-day, I turned out to take my usual exercise; but I was soon obliged to retreat from the place I had first aimed at, on account of the great bustle in the neighbourhood of the palace, the worthy emperor having arrived the preceding evening after a long absence.

Fifth-day, I walked out to meeting; the subject of my getting to my own home attacked me again, but it was soon put to silence, as I became earnestly desirous to be kept in patience, until the time of my stay here was fully accomplished; to be so helped, I hope I esteemed a favour, when I consider what a bundle of impatience I am by nature.

By accounts received to-day, the body of ice floated from the south coast, and collected at the mouth of the Mole, which rendered it needful to cut it away for vessels to go out to sea; this circumstance, I understand, threatens the approach of more severe weather than I have yet experienced.

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

SIXTH-DAY, 19th of 11th mo. 1824, but little sleep last night, from the most severe tempest of wind and some rain, which I ever remember. I little expected what an awful scene this city, in a few hours after I left my bed this morning, would exhibit. On entering the apartment of my hostess to request my breakfast to be sent into my room, she asked if there had been much rain in the night, as there was much water in the street; not supposing, as afterwards proved to be the case, that this water floated up the common sewers, from the swell of water in the river. After taking my breakfast, I proceeded to take my usual walk; but, to my surprise, I found we were so surrounded by water that I was obliged to return home. On telling my landlady that we lived in an island, she smiled at me, not aware of the fearful consequences that very soon followed. Observing the servant of an English-woman, who lived under the same roof, unable to reach home in her return from marketing, I proceeded to go and inform her mistress of her situation, and crossed the yard to her apartment dry-shod: although not five minutes had elapsed before I attempted to return home, every thing was floating in the yard. I stepped on a cellar-window, and from that into the door of a bakehouse, where the water followed me in such a body, that I concluded no time must be lost in making my way home: I waded through it, and had I hesitated many minutes longer, the rise of the water was so rapid, I could not have reached my home. A hole was afterwards obliged to be cut in the wall of the same bakehouse, to save the life of a woman who had taken shelter there. After I left it, getting quit of my wet clothes, I took my standing at the windows of our apartment: the streets very soon exhibited a scene of great distress; men wading up to their arm-pits in the water; one woman up to her neck: I watched her with no little anxiety, expecting to see her slip off the foot-path on to the road, where it would have been over her head. Horses and carriages were swimming in the streets, until they durst not venture forward, the passing being altogether dangerous. The water in a short time rose in the streets eight feet; and then to twelve feet. The ground-floor of the house in which I was a resident, was occupied

by a grocer; the water rose up to the ceiling of the shop and his other apartments, without allowing him time to move his goods or household stuff, its progress was so sudden and rapid. Until the water had reached its height, its advance was truly awful: it was to be seen hastening up the sides of the houses, first reaching the bottom of the window, then the top of one pane of glass, and so on until both doors and windows were quite out of sight. My landlady seemed to have no other expectation, but that it would cover the tops of the houses, and we should all perish.

About eleven o'clock the flood reached its height; from that time until about four in the afternoon, the most awful stillness I ever witnessed prevailed: as far as my eyes could see, not a person was to be observed at any window, nor any thing in the streets that had life, excepting a poor horse that was fastened to a small cart, and had made his way thus far towards home, but durst not venture further; he had preserved his life by placing his fore-feet on some steps, which lay high above the foot-path, whereby we could observe he was only barely able to keep his mouth above the water. About four in the afternoon, a policeman came in a boat, and let this poor prisoner loose, when he swam into a yard that was near: this policeman was the first person, except our own family, whom we had seen anywhere, from ten in the morning until this time in the afternoon, when the water began to retire. Consoling as the prospect of its retreat was, it was distressing to observe the devastation that had taken place: for as the water retired, it set the doors of those shopkeepers which opened out into the street wide open; whereby many of their articles that were floatable passed down the streets to the canals, and so out to sea. My landlady feared that the whole city would be so under water, as that none would escape with their lives; the shock she received from this apprehension was so great, that she never recovered from it during my stay in Petersburg. The impressions of my mind at the time were, that it was a visitation in mercy from Almighty God to the inhabitants of this great city. During the whole time when standing at the windows, and viewing the progress of this awfully awakening scene, my mind was in adorable mercy preserved calm and quiet, free from the least emotion of fear, that what my landlady so dreaded would take place. The darkness of the night, the impracticability of lighting the lamps, and scarcely a person or carriage passing along the streets, produced a quiet that was striking to the mind. This, together with the remembrance of the continued cries, for near two hours, of a poor man on his carriage, who was driven under the gateway of the house I was in, and to whom no assistance for a length of time could be given, had so pierced my ears, that it was some time before I was able to rise above it.

Seventh-day, 20th of 11th mo. the waters had left the streets: after breakfast I went out to view the calamity, which this extraordinary visitation to this magnificent city had occasioned. Scarcely a bridge has escaped uninjured by it, and many are carried quite off their bearings: part of one of the large bridge of boats across the Neva, was left standing against the walls of the palace: rafts, small boats, with two of the large steam-boats employed in going to Cronstadt, were left in the city, on what is called the island. Here the effects were more severely felt than in the city; houses, with the people in them, were taken off their foundation, and carried out to sea: some of these poor inhabitants were observed sitting on the roofs of their houses, to save life as long as they were able. On the Catherine Hoff road, in a row of cottages, two hundred and fifty women and children were found, to have fallen victims to this awful visitation; the men being from home at their work, escaped. The number of horses, horned cattle, and pigs, that perished, was said to be very great. In walking through the streets of the city, it was affecting to observe the sorrowful countenances of the shopkeepers, standing at their doors, whilst their servants were bringing into the street the remains of the wreck of their property; some of them appearing as if they had no power left to lend a helping hand, but stood as if they were paralyzed: others stood in awful amazement; scarcely a word was to be heard in passing through the streets. To exhibit to the full the dreadful consequences of this visitation seems to be out of the power of man.

Notwithstanding this awful visitation, and the distress consequent upon it to-day, yet so prevalent here is the French principle of keeping up the spirits of the people, in order to turn their attention from serious reflection; that the commandant of the city ordered all the theatres to be opened this evening; but this coming to the knowledge of the worthy emperor, the order was countermanded, and they were kept shut. According to various reports, the emperor proved himself to be the father of his people, not leaving the wants of such of his poor subjects as had suffered from the inundation, to the inspection of the police, or any other of his officers, but going himself in person, and attending to their wants; so that it was believed many were placed in a better condition than they were in before. First-day, I walked out to meeting: for two miles there was scarcely a fence standing, on one side of the road; the land was covered with glass lights from the gardener's grounds, also temples, summer-houses, boats, timber of various descriptions, crosses out of the burial-grounds, parts of coffins, the dead bodies of some who had perished from the flood, and a variety of cattle, that had perished also. My kind friend, Daniel Wheeler, and his family, in consequence of his high situation, had escaped.

This awful visitation, which had thus taken place in the city,



loosened my bonds; the cloud which had rested on the tabernacle seemed gradually removing. It appearing to me I must be willing to take up my pen, and address the inhabitants generally on the solemn occasion; I looked towards the abode of my kind friend Daniel Wheeler, as being likely to afford me a quiet retreat for the purpose, and put my nightcap in my pocket accordingly; but the way not appearing clear in my own mind for so doing, believing I must not risk involving my kind friend and his family in any of my engagements, but have the responsibility rest on myself, I returned to my lodging, with my mind fully prepared to take up my pen, should the concern remain with me. I retired to bed at my usual time; but the enemy beset me on every hand, to discourage and deter me from making an attempt towards this address, setting before me such a picture of the distress, which my conduct, (if I pursued my determination to address the inhabitants of Petersburg,) would involve me in, as words cannot fully describe; and when he found his discouragements in this way were of no avail, he held up in a yet more terrific manner, the certainty of my falling into the hands of the police, and that if offence were taken, it would constitute me a crown-prisoner, whereby the fort would be the place of my confinement, and perhaps one of the cells there, which are under the bed of the river, and which I had heard of as swarming with hungry rats; he could not have devised a stratagem more likely to have foiled me in my attempt. Between these assaults, and the striving in my own mind to be preserved faithful to Divine requiremgs, I passed a distressing night. Towards morning I became a little more composed, and favoured with a little quiet sleep; but such were the frightful ideas produced by the thoughts of being locked up amongst a swarm of hungry rats, (creatures to which I have a natural aversion,) that it was some time before I could shake off the effects of these ideas.

Second day, apprehending my friends in England would receive the intelligence of the awful visitation which this city had experienced, and be anxious on my account, I wrote to them, giving a short detail of it; and as some light now began to shine on my path, I thought I saw pretty clearly that it would be right for me to attend the next Yearly Meeting in London; and if so, I should be obliged to return overland, as the probability was, the port of Cronstadt would not be open in time for vessels to get out. I therefore requested my friends in England to furnish me with letters to Riga, Memel, and Dantzick.

Fifth-day, walked out to meeting; a great number of dead horses, cows, and pigs were being carted out of the city, in order to be burnt. Sixth-day, I was obliged to keep at home, having taken a heavy cold, from standing a short time in a shop that had been

under water. Seventh-day, not able to use my daily exercise. First-day, although much indisposed, I walked out to meeting; but feeling my cold getting worse, I did not stay the afternoon meeting. The accounts received to-day from Cronstadt state, that two vessels were dashed to pieces in the storm, but the crews were saved; and that great distress was occasioned by the inundation in that town.

Second-day, in my ramble this morning I was met by five English sailors, part of the crew of a vessel from Liverpool, which was wrecked on one of the islands in the Gulf of Finland during the late storm: although total strangers to each other, our meeting appeared mutually agreeable. Except men are churls indeed, I have found these feelings are generally excited, when we are permitted to meet our countrymen in a foreign land. On my way home this afternoon, I was joined by an Englishman, who was a resident in a part of the palace called the Hermitage, appropriated to natural curiosities and paintings: he gave me a kind and pressing invitation to make him a visit, and view the rarities which the Hermitage contained. My natural inclination would have prompted me readily to accept his invitation, but my duty told me, that to see rarities and paintings was not the errand that brought me from my native land to visit this city; I therefore was constrained to decline his kind offer, at which I thought he felt disappointed, as I could not doubt but that he was desirous of doing me a kindness.

Third-day, the weather threatening to be stormy, drove me home earlier than usual: in the afternoon I ventured out again, and walked to the Newskoi Prospekt; the crowd of people and carriages, many of whom came to pass away the time, was not suffered to dissipate that sweet covering of good desires, with which my mind was favoured; but amidst all this display of finery and bustle, I was enabled to strew my tears, and offer up my prayers before the Lord, that I might be preserved faithful in everything which he should see meet to require of me in this nation, more especially in this city; and for a safe return home, when the time for my departure should be fully come. Divine mercy condescended to dry up my tears, giving me the assurance, that if I continued faithful in doing his will, He would care for me every way to the end of my journey home, and afresh bringing to my remembrance the repeated intimations which I had received, that he had service for me to perform amongst my brethren on the American shore, with such clearness, that all my doubts about my safely getting out of this country, and reaching my own home, vanished out of sight, and as if I never had them to contend with. But, O! the messengers of Satan, how hard are they to endure; but they are, I doubt not, permitted, in great wisdom and unutter-

able loving kindness, to prove our faith in the all-sustaining arm of God, and our constancy towards him; in order that, by our patiently enduring them all throughout the Lord's appointed time, these tribulations may work patience, and patience experience, and experience hope, that maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost, which is given unto us. I returned home, and retired to rest, under a humbling hope, that another day of my pilgrimage in this city, (which has been a place of sore exercise of mind to me daily since my lot has been cast in it,) has been as well passed over as many days of my life; for which favour, under a thankful sense thereof, the exclamation, "What shall I render to the Lord for all his benefits?" was the language of my mind; accompanied with an earnest desire, that there may not be a failing in doing what may be called for at my hand, during my sojourning in this place; otherwise how will this inquiring language thus uttered, rise up in a future day, and condemn me.

Fourth-day, in my rambles this morning, I bent my course to Catherine Hoff, a village about a mile and a half from the city: had I made my visit to it previously to the late inundation, I suppose, from the remains left by that awful visitation, I might have fancied myself entering one of our well-built, well-planted villages in some of the flats on the banks of the Thames. I was informed, that large sums of money were last summer expended by the government on this spot, in order to form something similar to the Elysian Fields in the neighbourhood of Paris, to draw the inconsiderate inhabitants out of the city on the First-day, when the diversions were to be more generally going forward, to a greater abuse of that day, if possible, than takes place in the city: but, alas! how uncertain, how short-lived, have all these attempts proved, when the great and terrible One, who inhabits eternity and dwells on high, whose name is holy, who inhabits the holy place, sees meet to arise, and assert his power and sovereignty, fulfilling his determination, because of their wicked ways;—"I will overturn, overturn, overturn;" and it shall be no more. I stood and viewed with astonishment the remarkable manner, in which this declaration of the prophet had been fulfilled on this spot, in a more striking and destructive way, than in any other part of the city or its suburbs that I had seen or heard of; how all that the art, skill, and labour, which the invention of man was capable of producing, to gratify the evil imaginations and desires of the corrupt heart, had, as it were, at one stroke been hurled away together; not a vestige of these inventions was left standing anywhere, except part of a newly-erected building, where I was informed much of their wicked nightly practices went on: the stairs and part of the foundation of this building were carried away, the gravel walks thrown up,

the plantations destroyed, and the labour that had been bestowed as completely laid waste, as it is possible to conceive. Whilst viewing these remains of the Lord's judgments, I was led secretly to crave, that these things might prove a means of awakening in the minds of those, who had been the frequenters of this place of folly, dissipation, and wickedness, a more serious consideration of their ways and doings; but, alas! from the manner the people continue to conduct themselves, there is no ground for cherishing this hope on their account.

Fifth-day, I walked out to meeting, and was well rewarded for my labour in going to sit down with the little company I met with, independent of the enjoyment of having the opportunity of a little conversation, as I mostly pass the day over without exchanging a sentiment with any one, except, as necessity compels me, with the family I am in; towards whom the caution in my mind continues to be, to carry myself, on all occasions, with the greatest possible care as to conversation, and yet to manifest a kindness of disposition toward them, and gratitude for the attention I receive.

Sixth-day, my kind friend Daniel Wheeler sent his droskey for me, and with him and his family I spent the day, an enjoyment which I seldom have partaken of since coming to the city, except on meeting-days; for, understanding that I continue to be considered by some in authority as a suspicious character, I feel it necessary to be careful, not to expose any of my friends here to the danger of becoming implicated with me.

First-day, walked out to meeting; the wind setting strong across the road, I was greatly annoyed by the burning of the carcasses of the cattle and pigs, that were brought out of the city, where they had perished during the flood; it not being considered best to bury them, lest the wolves should be attracted thereby. The days being very short, I did not stay the afternoon meeting, having nearly five English miles to walk to my lodgings.

Believing the time to be fully come when I must be willing to take up my pen, and as matter rose in my mind, to commit it to paper, in an address to the inhabitants of Petersburg, I devoted the afternoon and evening to this service, which, when I had finished, my mind felt relieved from some of the load of exercise I had been brought under, since the awful visitation which this city had witnessed.

Second-day, my mind continued to be charged with an apprehension of religious duty to attempt a visit to the emperor. I waited on a merchant in the city, with whom I had made a slight acquaintance, who was on terms of friendship with the emperor's private secretary, through whom my request must be conveyed. On my informing him of the cause of my now waiting upon him, he engaged to call upon the secretary, and to inform him of my re-



quest: having thus far done my part towards bringing about that which I believed would be required of me, before the way would open for my quitting the city, I did not lose my reward of peace.

Third-day, brought me under fresh difficulty: my friend who yesterday had offered to assist me in obtaining an interview with the emperor, appeared to regret he had taken such a task upon him, as he requested to be excused from the performance of it. I therefore concluded it would be best for me to adopt my usual plan of doing my business myself, by addressing a note to the secretary, leaving the result to that Almighty Power, who, I firmly believed, was able to make the way easy for me, if it was his design I should be admitted to the emperor. I therefore wrote a note as follows: "I am one of the Society of Friends; and feeling, as I have done for some time, my mind exercised with apprehensions of religious duty, if possible to obtain an interview with the emperor, I shall feel myself greatly obliged to thee, his secretary, and served, by thy endeavouring to make such way for me, as may be in thy power." This note was forwarded to him by a messenger whom my friend provided for me for that purpose. The circumstance of my friend's refusal to fulfil his engagement, was at first trying; but I believed that Divine goodness was making way for my release from some of my weights and burdens, and that if patience were but enough abode in, these dispensations would be sanctified; although my faith, patience, and obedience never were more fully put to the test. Having forwarded my note to the emperor's secretary, from the peaceful feeling in my mind, I was enabled to hold up my head in hope, that my movements thus far were in the line of Divine appointment; and thus I was freed from all anxiety as to the result of it.

Fourth-day, patience is indeed very requisite, when we are lying, as it were, on our oars, waiting for the word of command to be clearly given to get under way again: although at times, I feel as if the time for my release from the field of labour here was hastening apace, and that an overland journey must be submitted to by me, yet I dare not at present take any step whatsoever towards arranging for it; having the assurance in my own mind, that every thing needful for my safe return to my family again, will, in due time, be provided for me.

Fifth-day, I walked out to meeting.

Sixth-day, I rambled to the great market; the snow was falling heavily, I walked under cover for near two hours, and then returned home. A person called upon me to-day, inviting me to make him a visit; although I could not doubt but that his invitation was given in great sincerity, I found I must decline it, which placed me under difficulty; but as it appeared clear to my mind my safety was in being willing to take up the cross by

declining, I endeavoured to do so in as handsome a manner as I was capable of, so as not to give just occasion for offence to be taken at it. The evening closed by reading in "Piety Promoted," and by mental prayer for strength to be enabled to hold on the way of well-doing, and bear the daily cross to the end. But, O! the fears that I am at times tried with; being almost ready to cast away the shield, as if it never had been anointed, or I had never known any thing of its miraculous sufficiency to ward off every blow of Satan. Before I retired to rest, a glimmering prospect was afforded of my safe landing on the shore of Harwich.

Seventh-day, 11th of 12th mo., such have been my secret plungings this day, and the fears and misgivings which I have had to pass through, that nature at times seemed nearly exhausted. Having finished a fair copy of the address to the inhabitants of Petersburg, I was not able to know, how it is to be disposed of, or who will dare to translate and print it; for nothing can go to press in the city, without first having the sanction of the censor. When my bed-time arrived, I saw no other prospect but that of my having a distressing night to pass through: my inclination would have led me to remain up through the night, but fearing that the family I was in would notice my so doing, and be anxious to come at the cause of it, which I should not be able to disclose to them; such was the state of nervous irritability I was sunk into, that I found it would be difficult for me to lie quietly in bed; my feet were more like the feet of a corpse than of one in whom a spark of life existed, yet there was no way but to go to bed, and endure the suffering that might follow. Divine mercy however failed me not, but continued to be my stay and staff during this long and trying night, for so I thought it; and I anxiously watched for the peep of day, when I might be able to rise from my bed without notice being taken by the family, and to parade my room. That the Lord alone who thus sustains, may have the praise and full dedication of the remainder of my days, is the earnest desire of my soul.

First-day, walked out to meeting; after again reading over the address to the inhabitants, I signed it: on inquiry, I was fully satisfied a translation could not be procured, nor printed copies, as no one would dare to attempt to undertake either of these offices of kindness: my mind continued to feel relieved as far as I had thus proceeded. There appeared no way for me but to keep in patience, until the way for disposing of it was seen with greater clearness, than at present was the case with me.

Fifth-day, I walked out to meeting; the change from a fine clear frost to close, damp, warm weather, occasioned my walk to be very oppressive; the next day was, however, fine, clear, and frosty.

Seventh-day, a time of close exercise of mind from various causes ; but the day closed quietly. What an unmerited mercy, when after a storm the calm comes. First-day, walked out to meeting.

Second-day, no reply to my note to the secretary ; yet I am preserved in patience as to the result, which I hope I esteem a favour.

Third-day, 12th of 12th mo. as I was turning out for my morning's walk, a messenger presented me with a letter, demanding forty copecks, which I cheerfully paid him ; supposing it came from the secretary, and would prove the means of determining the result of my note to him ; but this was not the case, as it only appointed a time for my waiting upon the secretary.

Fourth-day, agreeable to appointment, I waited upon the secretary, prince Alexander Galitzin ; who received me cordially, and informed me the emperor had concluded on seeing me ; the time for the interview however was not fixed, but timely notice would be given me. Apprehending it would be right for me to put the emperor in possession of my certificates, I left them with the prince for that purpose. The subject of disposing of the address I had signed, came again closely before the view of my mind : the way for me to obtain an interview with the emperor being now clear, it appeared to me I must place it in his hands as the father of his people, to dispose of it as in the wisdom of truth he might be directed.

Continuing to feel a lively exercise of mind on behalf of my countrymen residing in this nation, more particularly those who reside in Petersburg, Cronstadt, and Moscow ; and apprehending I should not acquit myself acceptably in the sight of my great Master, unless I was willing to commit to paper that which arose in my mind for them, in the love of the gospel, I took up my pen, and addressed them also ; and, as no printed copies could be obtained, a few copies were written, which I placed in the hands of the preachers of the English congregations here, and put some in train for Cronstadt and Moscow, requesting care should be taken to give them all the publicity possible ; which I had reason to believe would be the case, from the agreeable manner in which they were received, and from the conclusion come to of reading it at the close of their worship.

The address was as follows :—

AN ADDRESS TO THE ENGLISH PROTESTANTS IN RUSSIA, MORE PARTICULARLY TO THOSE RESIDENT AT PETERSBURGH, CRONSTADT, AND MOSCOW.

“ Since my lot has been cast in this city, I have felt a lively interest for the best welfare of the native inhabitants ; before land-

ing on this shore, my mind was warmly engaged on your account, my dear countrymen; accompanied with more than usual feelings of solicitude, that you may be found walking as becomes the gospel of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ; thereby proving yourselves instrumental, through Divine help, towards leavening the minds of the people, like the leaven we read of, (Matt. xiii. 33,) which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal until the whole was leavened. As far as my observation has gone in different places, the example of the English people is much looked up to; on which account I have felt the more solicitous, believing that the present is a day of great importance both here and elsewhere, upon the Continent of Europe: a day in which the light of the glorious gospel of Christ Jesus, has dawned in the souls of many scattered up and down, and will more and more dawn. It therefore appears to me of serious consequence to the prosperity of this great work, that you, who are placed here and there amongst the people, should keep in constant remembrance these expressions of our dear Lord, when personally upon earth, to his immediate followers, (Matt. v. 14, 15, 16.) "Ye are the light of the world; a city that is set on a hill, cannot be hid: neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel; but on a candlestick, and it giveth light to the whole house: let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven." Far be it from me to charge you with a want of care in this important respect, from any outward information or knowledge of how matters are with you. I came a stranger to all, and have felt it right for me to keep so. It would be uncharitable and unwarrantable in any, to doubt the propriety of your claim to your being followers of Christ; yet a jealousy, yea a godly jealousy—arrests my mind, on account of many of you in this respect; I fear, if my feelings be correct, ye are not an example to the native inhabitants, in an endeavour to come out of the spirit of the world; by keeping aloof from those national amusements, and from that total neglect of the Sabbath-day, so sorrowfully apparent in many of them. In a degree of that love, which desires the welfare of the human race all the world over; allow me to press the query individually: Art thou in health, my brother? art thou in health, my sister? has it been thy constant daily care to be found preserved in that watchful state of mind which the royal Psalmist was in, when he declared, (Psalm, i. 9, 10,) "I said, I will take heed to my ways, that I sin not with my tongue, I will keep my mouth with a bridle, while the wicked is before me." For it is only as this disposition of mind is abode in, that we can reasonably expect Divine regard and approbation. The enemy of all righteousness has none who serve his purpose better, no agents which more steadily or firmly support and promote his cause amongst man-



kind, than professing Christians, who are not willing to be found coming up in the practical part of true religion; for the greater profession such are making, the more they talk about religion, the more they deceive themselves as well as others; instead of coming to partake of that living and eternal substance, which will endure, they are but following an empty shadow. It matters little by what devices or stratagems Satan prevails, so long as he can satisfy mankind, and prevent them from coming to the true knowledge of God, and keep them from an acquaintance with that Power which can save. This great adversary of man's happiness, will let people go to their place of worship; he will not hinder their pleading for rites or ceremonies; he will furnish them with argument from the holy Scriptures to support their cause: so long as he can keep them worshippers in the outward court, and hinder the inward work from going forward in the temple of the heart, his purposes are fully answered. But to return to these worshippers in the outward court, they serve Satan various ways; they often become stumbling-blocks to the weak, but honest inquirers, who are anxious to know the feet of their minds turned into Zion's paths; and when difficulties present to those who have really felt a desire to be helped over them, the adversary brings forward to their view the example of these eager hearers of the word, but slothful doers of it; by this means he often checks the sincere desires that are begotten, and causes a stopping short of that which has been before aimed at.

“Now, seeing we are called unto glory and virtue, and that we have to contend with an unwearied adversary, ever on the alert, seeking whom he may devour: how great is the necessity for each of us to watch and be sober, using all diligence to make our calling and election sure, before we go hence and are seen of men no more. There is no work, nor device, nor wisdom, nor knowledge in the grave, whither we are all hastening; as the tree falls, so it lies; as death leaves us, so judgment will find us; and from the decision of our all-merciful, all-wise, and all-just Judge, there is no appeal.

“Let none be spending their time, that treasure of eternal consequence, in vain; but let obedience keep pace with knowledge, whilst the day of merciful visitation is lengthened out, lest the night come upon us; and those things which belong unto our peace, should be for ever hid from our eyes.

“The Lord is no respecter of persons; but in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted of him: it is also declared, that a manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal; if we walk in the Spirit, we shall not fulfil the lusts of the flesh: the primary means of immediate Divine help, the Holy Spirit, is freely administered unto all; the grace of God, which bringeth salvation, hath ap-

peared unto all, teaching all. The holy Scriptures are bountifully distributed; which are able to make wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus, and are profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness. These sacred writings, although a secondary means, were given forth by inspiration of God; designed, in condescending mercy, for the help of man; and they have the blessed tendency to direct our minds to the primary means, even Christ Jesus, the alpha and omega, the beginning and the ending, the first and the last, the way, the truth, and the life, the only way to God, as declared by himself, ‘No man cometh to the Father, but by me.’ (John, xiv. 6.) Are there not sufficient and reasonable grounds to believe and hope, my dear countrymen, that if you were found walking as becometh the gospel of our Lord and Saviour, your actions would speak louder than words, to the surrounding natives? When we consider the gracious means afforded, outward and inward, for the help of mankind, by an all-bountiful Creator; together with the laudable efforts of the Bible Society, and the labours of many pious Christians, can we attribute the small appearance of fruit amongst the Continental nations to any other cause, than the want of faith, and a fulness of conformity in the professors of Christianity to the doctrines, precepts, and example of the self-denying Jesus? The primary and secondary means are all-sufficient and abundant; it is the thread of Christian example that is so much wanting, to make a three-fold cord to the praise and glory of God—the promotion of the great work of righteousness in the earth, our own peace while here, and eternal happiness hereafter. Be intreated then to consider what I say, and the Lord give you understanding in all things.

“Whilst I am addressing others, I feel the need of taking heed to myself; which I humbly hope will never be lost sight of by your sincere friend and well wisher.

“THOMAS SHILLITOE.”

“Petersburgh, 12th mo. 1824.”

Fifth-day, I walked out to meeting, and returned home to tea, at times not a little thoughtful how I should acquit myself before the emperor; but this I found was not a subject for me to dwell upon: I therefore endeavoured, as much as in me lay, to leave this subject and retire to bed, in hopes of a night’s rest.

Sixth-day, I felt weighed down with the prospect of an interview with the emperor. I turned out for a short walk, fearing a long absence from home, in case a messenger should come in my absence. On my return home, I received a letter from the secretary, appointing an interview with the emperor, for six o’clock this evening; it stated that a carriage would be in attendance upon me, and a person to conduct me to the palace, who was unacquainted with the English language, whom I was to follow, after I left the car-

riage. After reading the letter, my feelings at the moment may be better conceived by such who have been placed in a similar situation, being about to make a visit in the name of the Most High, to an absolute monarch. I kept quiet at home the remainder of the day; I endeavoured well to consider the propriety of my putting into the hands of the emperor the address to the inhabitants of Petersburg, and leaving it solely at his disposal; and I apprehended my proceeding thus was the only way for me to obtain relief to my own mind. I enclosed it, with the address to the English Protestants, in a sheet of paper for that purpose. I had told a friend of mine, I was led to apprehend one interview with the emperor would not afford me a full opportunity to relieve my mind; to which my friend replied, he did not think a second could be obtained, giving me such reasons as satisfied me, that it would not be for want of a willingness on the part of the emperor to comply with such a request for a further opportunity, so far at least as prudence dictated to him. I endeavoured to be in readiness early, as I was requested by the letter to be punctual to the time. The carriage with my guide arrived at my lodgings an hour before the time my letter specified, which placed me in a trying situation, as I knew not how to account for it, fearing some alteration had taken place in the time since the appointment was first made, and that a second note had, by some means, not come to my hand. On inquiring, the guide informed my landlady his orders were to be with me in time, which was the cause of his coming to me thus early.

On our arrival at a back entrance of the palace, my guide left me in the carriage, where I was kept waiting a considerable time, I concluded from our being still too early: at length my guide returned, and took charge of me. At the entrance, I passed the centinel on duty; but no notice was taken, that I could observe, of my hat being kept on: my guide then conducted me through a long and very dreary passage, in which the few lamps that were lighted, gave but a very dim light, which cast somewhat of an awful feeling over my mind, until I came to an open space; here a young man was in waiting to take charge of me, who conducted me up stairs, at the top of which, one who, I suppose, is called a lord in waiting on the emperor, was in readiness to receive me, who conducted me into the emperor's private apartment, and there left me. As silence was strictly observed on the part of those who had taken charge of me, not a word passed, or a look from me, that could express any thing like surprise at this profound silence, thus so uniformly observed. After taking my seat in this room a short time, I observed the handle of the door, opposite to that by which I had entered, move, which led me to conclude some person was about to enter; on which I rose from my seat; when a rather tall person, with a placid countenance, came into

the room, so plain in his attire, as to ornaments generally worn by sovereigns, as to induce me to put the question to him, "Am I now in company with the emperor?" to which he replied, in an affable manner, "Yes, you are." He held out his hand to me, and taking his seat on a sofa, placed me by him. After he had inquired after Stephen Grellet and William Allen, for whom in warm terms he expressed his sincere regard, I laid before the emperor the manner in which my mind had been exercised, on account of the notorious abuse of the First-day of the week in Petersburg; I informed him the only way that had opened in my mind for my relief, was by taking up my pen and committing to writing matter as it came before me in the line of religious duty, addressed to his subjects generally; but as I had been well informed, the press was now so restricted, that even the Moravians were denied the liberty they had heretofore enjoyed, of having their new-year's hymn printed, it was not possible I could have the address translated and printed;\* that therefore I believed I should not be able faithfully to acquit myself in the Divine sight in this matter, but by giving the address in charge to him, whom I was to consider the father of his people; desiring, as I most earnestly did, that Divine wisdom would be pleased to direct him in the right disposal of it: on which he appeared cordially to receive it from my hands. After this subject was thus disposed of, various matters were entered into, during which I brought into view such subjects as to me appeared ripe to bring forward; other matters which my mind had been exercised with, I found I must as yet keep in the back-ground; yet I felt not a little tried, lest, as my friend had told me, there should be no probability of my having a second interview. However, a secret hope crossed my mind, that if these further matters, not yet ripe for communication to the emperor at this time, were subjects Divine wisdom saw meet I should lay before him, the Almighty was able, without any care of mine, to make way for it. Thus I was enabled to leave things, and simply to attend to the business of the present time; for I think I never witnessed my mind more unshackled, or felt more freedom from all restraint, and more at liberty to unbosom my whole soul, than I did on this occasion, to the pious emperor, on every subject as it rose in my mind to lay before him, both as it respected himself as sovereign, and his subjects he was permitted to rule over; feeling more as if I was sitting by the side of a servant dependent on me, than by the side of so great a monarch. Towards the close of this interview, the emperor very pathetically expressed himself in substance as follows: "Before I

\* On inquiry, I was well assured, if I procured a translation of the address in England, and had it printed there, they must be smuggled in, and then no one would dare to circulate them.



became acquainted with your religious Society and its principles, I frequently, from my early life, felt something in myself, which at times gave me clearly to see, that I stood in need of a further knowledge of Divine things than I was then in possession of; which I could not then account for, nor did I know where to look for that which would prove availing to my help in this matter, until I became acquainted with some of your Society, and with its principles. This I have since considered to be the greatest of all the outward blessings the Almighty has bestowed upon me; because hereby I became fully satisfied in my own mind, that that which had thus followed me, though I was ignorant of what it meant, was that same Divine power inwardly revealed, which your religious Society have from their commencement professed to be actuated by, in their daily walks through life; whereby my attention became turned with increasing earnestness, to seek after more of an acquaintance with it in my own soul: and I bless the Lord, that he thus continues to condescend to send his true gospel ministers, to keep me in remembrance of this day of his merciful awakening to my soul." He then added, "My mind is at times brought under great suffering, to know how to move along; I see things necessary for me to do, and things necessary for me to refuse complying with, which are expected from me. You have counselled me to an unreserved and well-timed obedience in all things;—I clearly see it to be my duty; and this is what I want to be more brought into the experience of: but when I try for it, doubts come into my mind, and discouragements prevail: for, although they call me an absolute monarch, it is but little power I have, for doing that which I see it to be right for me to do."

I feared my intruding longer on the time of the emperor, having, I believed, cast off the whole of what my mind was at this time charged with to deliver to him; and yet it felt trying to me to leave him, not knowing if I ever should have another opportunity of fully relieving my mind; however, as it appeared best for me so to do, I made the effort to be moving: on which the emperor requested we might have a quiet sitting together before we parted, which accordingly took place. When I rose from my seat to go, the emperor, taking hold of my hand, and, turning towards me in the most affectionate manner, said: "I shall not consider this as a parting opportunity, but shall expect another visit from you, before you set off for your own home." This circumstance afresh awakened in my mind a feeling of reverent gratitude, that I had been preserved from putting forth the hand, when the command had been to stay it. On my being about to retire from the emperor, the case of Hezekiah was brought to my remembrance, although from a different cause, when he turned his

face to the wall and wept : for I observed the emperor turned himself from me, as I fully believe, in order to give vent to his tears of gratitude to that Almighty Power, who in mercy had been pleased to favour us together with the precious overshadowing influence of his good presence ; an evidence of which I never remember to have been more sensible of.

I was then conducted to my lodgings in the same quiet manner, and by the same conveyance ; deeply sensible of my inability to set forth my feelings of gratitude to Almighty God, in making the way so easy as it had been to me. Whilst thus in company with the emperor, he made particular inquiry after the health of my friend Daniel Wheeler, which appeared to be rather declining ; on which I informed the emperor it was my belief, that nothing would be so likely to restore him to his usual health as breathing his native air, and associating with his friends at the ensuing Yearly Meeting. The emperor replied, “ He shall go.”

Seventh-day, 25th of 12th mo. after breakfast and reading, I pursued my usual exercise out of doors. The temperature was fifteen degrees below freezing.\* The people and cattle made a picturesque appearance from the hoar-frost, more particularly the coachmen and sledge-drivers, their large long beards resembling a mass of snow, suspended from their chins. Although this severe change has taken place, I think I have suffered more from cold in my own country, than I suffered here to-day : my clothing was warm, to meet the change out of doors ; and on my returning home I stripped off my warm clothing : the internal warmth I met with in the house, from the fires kept in different parts of the house, abundantly compensated for the parting with my warm clothing. I was not able during the winter, but once, to bear a fire in my own apartment.

First-day morning, the wind boisterous, and the snow fell so very fast, that my turning out of town to take a bleak walk to meeting was discouraging ; but as I set off with a good will to do my best, although I found it a difficult task to proceed, the road in places being so blocked up with snow, I was enabled to reach my kind friend Daniel Wheeler’s, at the moment the family were about sitting down to hold their meeting ; and I returned home in the afternoon, the city feeling to me to be my proper place of residence ; otherwise it would have been more congenial to my natural disposition, to have passed more of my time with my friend Daniel Wheeler and his family.

I had a conversation with Daniel Wheeler on what had passed between the emperor and myself, relative to the state of my said friend’s health, and the probability of his receiving benefit by a visit to England : a cheering prospect was afforded me, from

\* Probably 2 deg. below zero of Fahrenheit’s thermometer.

a hope I should be privileged by having him for my care-taker, and companion to England.

Second-day, 27th of 12th mo. the weather fine: I pursued my exercise of walking in the evening. I had to labour hard to know a task accomplished, which I have often found a very difficult one, that of leaving the things of the morrow to care for themselves.

Third-day, mostly spent in walking and reading. My landlady being frequently indisposed and confined to her bed, (more particularly so since the awful inundation, when the ringing of the alarm-bell and firing of the cannon, announces that the Neva is rising above its wonted level,) it is my lot to be left to the mercy of a dirty, idle, voracious Russian servant-girl, who has no knowledge of the English language, and who plunders me of my provision every way she can: I am not able to see any remedy for it, but by my bearing all with patience; believing, as I do, my getting into these lodgings, was in answer to my earnest prayers to the Most High, to provide for me a safe sheltering place, and which I have hitherto believed it to be the most so I could have found in the city. I therefore am made willing to endure all my increased difficulties as it respects the body, rather than risk the danger of my getting into difficulties of a nature that would be harder to bear, and to be extricated from again.

Fourth-day, the cannon frequently firing, the water in the Neva is rising, which alarms some of the inhabitants of the city. When the late awful visitation took place and the water subsided, it was reported, that some who lived on the island, being absent from their own home at the time, finding on their return that their families had perished in their own dwellings, and in other instances, their house and family were all taken out to sea, became bereft of their senses; and others put an end to their existence. This led me to consider, what a mercy it is to be able to find a sure anchoring place, in seasons of trial like these.

Sixth-day, the weather wet and warm, I rambled on the banks of the Neva, where great preparations were making on the ice for the accommodation of carriages and foot-passengers travelling upon it. With this day the year 1824 closes, and I hope I may say, I feel thankful to the Great Author of every blessing, so many of which he has been pleased in unmerited mercy to dispense to me.

Seventh-day, the first of the First month, 1825. The new year commences with a heavy fall of snow. I walked out, in hopes the air would brace up my nerves, which proved the case.

First-day, walked out to meeting: my dear friend Daniel Wheeler having received some official intelligence of his being set at liberty to make a journey to England, we freely conversed

together on the subject, although no time was fixed for our departure.

Second-day, I walked out to the frozen market, which I found well stocked with oxen, calves, sheep, pigs and poultry of most descriptions; also game in great abundance, with fresh fish, all in a frozen state for winter store, which are purchased by the inhabitants, and deposited in their ice-cellars for family use. The oxen and sheep were placed on their hind legs in an erect posture, stripped of the clothing which nature gave them, which had rather a disgusting appearance. I understood that the sellers of these articles, being fearful of a change taking place in the weather from frost to thaw, were anxious to sell, as a change to mildness would render their various articles of much less value for depositing for winter store.

Seventh-day, the weather still continuing very severe, I bent my course to the Neva, which exhibited a pleasant appearance: the different paths marked out on the ice for passengers and for carriages, were decorated on each side with fir-trees, that passengers might keep their course with safety. Great numbers of persons were driving on it, seemingly fearless; but as necessity did not require my venturing on it, I kept on firm ground.

Fifth-day, 6th of 1st mo. walked out to meeting: accompanied by my friend Daniel Wheeler, we rode to George Edmundson's, one of the English Friends who resides at Octer. We crossed the Neva on the ice; on our reaching the midway of our journey over, I was led to query with myself, what had induced me to make this venture, and I was thankful when we reached the shore again, preferring firm ground. I now had my departure from Petersburg announced in the newspaper, according to custom, as the time for it was concluded on.

Seventh-day, 8th of 1st mo. the time being come, when I must announce to the emperor my prospect of leaving Petersburg, I wrote the following note to his secretary;

"I have been notified in the newspapers as about to leave this country, and I should wish to be at liberty in two weeks: it is necessary I should secure my place as early as well may be in the diligence to Riga, but this I cannot feel easy to do, having given the emperor to expect I should not depart without thus craving an opportunity to take my leave of him. I wish respectfully to say, I am now holding myself in readiness to wait upon him, at such time as he may think most suitable to appoint.

"THOMAS SHILLITOE."

"Petersburgh, 8th of 1st mo. 1825."

In reply to which, in the course of the day, I received a note from the prince, informing me I might make the necessary arrange-



ments for my departure, as the time for my taking leave of the emperor would be certainly announced to me in the course of two weeks.

Third-day, by the help of an Englishman, I went to the diligence-office, to obtain information respecting the time of their departure, and the weight of luggage which would be allowed each of us, and the time for rest and refreshment on the road: I had called myself previously at the office, and received very insulting behaviour from a young man in the office, on account of keeping on my hat there; of which behaviour I informed my friend and interpreter, who mentioned the circumstance to one of the managers, and the young man was spoken to respecting his conduct towards me: but on more maturely considering the subject, during my moments of quiet when alone this evening, I felt cause for regret that I had not quietly passed over this insult; fearing his insult operated as much to hurt my pride, as wearing my hat in the office did the young man's pride; and I trust what I have felt on the occasion, will prove as a watchword to me in future, to be more willing to endure all things for the cause' sake.

Fifth-day, walked out to meeting, and found my dear friend Daniel Wheeler busily occupied in arranging his outward concerns for our departure: the prospect of my having such a care-taker, caused my heart to overflow with gratitude to that Divine Power, who rules all things, and who does all things well; I have indeed fresh cause to acknowledge, in his thus making a way, where at one time no way appeared to open, for my help on the way to my own country.

Sixth-day, after breakfast and reading, I turned out to take my morning's ramble: the thermometer sixteen degrees below freezing, the day fine, and my mind more at rest than has been the case for some months past, from the prospect of our soon being on our way to England: what a mercy it will be, if I am favoured to reach it safely, not knowing the dangers that may await us during so long a travel over-land, at this season of the year.

Seventh-day, the weather not so severe, nor so congenial to my nerves. I have sometimes thought twenty-four or thirty degrees below freezing, as they sometimes have it here, would suit my constitution better than the warm close weather we at times have in my native land; and I have at times felt rather desirous to witness one of these pinching days before my departure.

First-day, walked out to meeting; at the close of which was held the preparative meeting, in which the queries were answered to Balby monthly meeting in Yorkshire,—the Friends who reside here being members of that monthly meeting.

Third-day, I walked on the banks of the Neva, which was be-

come a very busy scene ; the crowds of people collected on the ice near the palace, awakened in my mind great apprehensions of their danger. This being the day for what is called the christening of the waters, a ceremony performed annually, I had observed for some time men employed in erecting at the back of the palace on the ice, an octagon temple, to which the people were now hastening in every direction : this building, I was informed, was for the accommodation of the bishop and clergy, who officiated in performing the ceremony, with such of the royal family who are able to attend, which they all are expected to do, if able. I might have gone with the multitude, and have been one in observing the ceremony performed ; but it appeared safest for me to bend my course directly home, lest by going in the way of danger unbidden, I should get into difficulty, which I should have escaped had I taken up the cross, and not have suffered my curiosity to prompt me to step aside out of the path of duty : the Divine witness telling me in plain terms, I had no warrant given me for countenancing such superstitious proceedings by being a looker-on. I was met the day preceding this ceremony by one of my countrymen, who informed me of it, saying, the talk of the people is, that the emperor has of late contrived to be on his travels at this time, and so to be absent from the city ; but he is now in Petersburg, and it will be as much as his life is worth, if he does not attend : but neither the emperor nor his empress were present on the occasion ; they left the city for one of their country palaces at a few miles distance the evening before ; which, perhaps, was going as far as the emperor saw to be required of him in bearing his testimony against this superstition ; but his absence did not pass over without remarks being made in consequence. The ceremony of what is termed the christening the waters, I was informed, is as follows :—a square hole is left in the floor of the temple, and a hole cut in the ice to correspond with it ; when the company are assembled, a man by a rope lets down a pail through these holes, and brings up water out of the river Neva. The bishop then puts a crucifix into this pail of water, and uses some form of words ; after which the water in which the crucifix was immersed, is poured through the hole again into the river, and the credulous multitude are induced to think, that the water, which the night before was unwholesome, is now by this ceremony purified and rendered fit for use.

Seventh-day, hearing that one of my countrymen who was intending to go to England wanted company, I made him a call ; it appeared probable that he would make one of our party, which would be likely to add to our comfort by its enabling us to have a carriage much to ourselves. After my return home, I

had some sore conflicts to pass through; the enemy, who for a little season had been so chained down, as not to be able, with all his efforts, to weaken my confidence in that Divine Power, which had thus far directed my course, and favoured me with strength to keep on the narrow path, now appeared to be let loose upon me; so that my situation from his varied suggestions and discouragements, might be, I thought, fitly compared to fighting with beasts, or the nature of the beast: but as I was favoured still to know the Almighty, in whom I had believed, to be sufficient to keep me from becoming a prey to Satan, and as I laboured after ability to maintain my confidence firm in Him, after He had seen meet, that my faith should be again thus closely tried, He was pleased to speak peace again to my poor tribulated mind.

A messenger brought me a note from the prince Galitzin, appointing this evening for me to make my visit to the emperor. Some matters still continuing to press on my mind, which were not ripe for communication when with the emperor before, I am led to believe I must not now dare to withhold them from him; although I am fully sensible they are tender subjects for me to meddle with. The prospect of this visit has at times humbled me as into the very dust, looking towards it with dismay, lest I should fall short in delivering that which I may be favoured clearly to see, is the whole counsel of my Divine Master to this absolute monarch. But in these seasons of tribulation I am bound in gratitude to acknowledge, I have not been left destitute of the assurance, that if I am but faithful in all things in the clear vision of light, required of me in the winding up of this religious engagement, I shall know of a truth that all things will work together for my good.

As before, late in the evening, a carriage arrived from the palace, and my former guide took charge of me: again on my arrival I was conducted to the emperor's apartment, who received me with his usual affability, giving me his hand, and seating me on the sofa beside him. He then informed me he had read the address to the inhabitants of Petersburg, which I had put into his hands, with the contents of which he was well satisfied. I stated to him the impracticability there was for me to obtain a translation of my address, and have them printed in England. I was fully satisfied if they came into the country they would be destroyed: therefore as the emperor appeared willing to take the charge of it, I did not feel myself at all justified in attempting to prescribe any precise mode for him to pursue; but only expressed the concern of my mind, that he might be strengthened to seek after Divine wisdom in the right disposal of it. In this expression of my feeling, he appeared fully to unite; and in thus

leaving the matter with him, my mind was favoured to experience peace. On my saying, there were some matters of importance to the welfare of his dominions, which I found I durst do no otherwise than lay before him, although they might be delicate matters for me to touch upon: the emperor replied, "Why hesitate? I am open to receive all you may have to say on any subject." The way being thus mercifully made plain for me, for so I evidently felt it to be, to the humbling of my very soul in deep prostration before the Lord, who had, in the renewings of his mercy thus dealt with me, I endeavoured in as concise and impressive a manner as possible, to obtain full relief to my own mind: I endeavoured to keep under my exercise, and as subjects were one after another brought before my view, strength was mercifully given me faithfully to acquit myself. Amongst the subjects which I had to lay before him, one more particularly was, the very debased state of vassalage by which the greater part of his subjects were held in bondage to others, and the awful consequences that eventually must result from it. This was a subject which I rejoiced to find had lain near his own heart: he presented me with a small work on Colonization, containing proposals calculated to bring about a remedy for this evil in his dominions. I then adverted again to the punishment by the knout, practised in this country: in my former visit, I had fully expressed my feelings of horror on this subject, and I was then glad to find that it had occupied the mind of the emperor; he inquired of me what other mode of punishment could be adopted, that would be likely to work such a reformation in offenders as was desirable. On my proposing to him to substitute the tread-mill, it appeared so agreeably to meet his ideas, that I was led to ask if I might be at liberty on my return home, to forward to him such printed information on the subject, as my friends in England were able to furnish me with. He replied, such information would be very acceptable; it being his desire that reformation should be the object kept in view, rather than what is deemed, the punishment of offenders. In conversation afterwards with the merchant, through whom this information was to be conveyed to the emperor, I learned that the society in England for the improvement of prisons, had, a considerable time ago, sent over to this merchant a complete model of the tread-mill in full work, with figures placed on the wheel, to show its operation; an order was at the same time received, that it should be presented to the emperor, which order was produced to me; but through fear on the part of the person to whom it was consigned, this model was kept back, from his having understood such a mode of treating prisoners here would be warmly opposed by the police. I informed the emperor of this circumstance, requesting he would give me the liberty to for-



ward it to him, to which he consented ; desiring it might be put up in a box, and sent to his secretary for him ; which was accordingly done.

Having felt my mind more at liberty, since my first visit to the emperor than heretofore, to make a few calls before my departure, I visited the Bible-printing and distributing office in the city : having made memorandums, from the information given me by one of the managers of the institution, of the declining state in which it was, I left the following copy thereof with the emperor :—

“ The sales of the Holy Scriptures increased gradually until the year 1823 ; since that time they have rapidly decreased ; in the last half-year of 1824, scarcely any orders have been received from the societies in the interior : at present there are no orders, and no prospect of any ; the sales in Petersburg, where there is free access to purchase, have been equal to preceding years ; the funds, also, are rapidly on the decrease, and were not the society obliged, by its declining state, to part with many of their workmen, they would not half meet the expenditure. The Bible Society is now looked upon as a proscribed institution, and is quite deserted. This cannot be wondered at, as the central committee have not met for the last seven months ; the correspondence with the interior has almost entirely ceased ; their Journals,\* for the two last months have not been published, owing to the manuscript copies being detained by the metropolitan bishop, in whose hands they are placed for his signature before they go to the press. I was shown eleven hundred copies of the first volume of the Old Testament, which have been printed several months, and bound ready to be distributed ; but not a single copy is permitted to be sold : out of twelve presses and two printing-machines, which were in full employ until the beginning of the year 1824, four of these presses are only now employed, to finish the work that was in hand at the beginning of the last year ; the workmen have been gradually discharged, and when this work is finished, the printing-office, unless a change takes place, must be shut up. In the book-binding department, the English journeymen are mostly discharged, and are gone home : those who remain are employed in repairing the books that were injured by the late flood : when this work is finished, these will also be discharged, and the book-binding office will be shut up. Thus an institution considered, at the time, the finest of its kind in all Europe, and which promised fair to be one of the means of drawing down the blessing of heaven upon the Russian empire, and the

\* This Journal is a magazine that came out monthly, giving a statement of the various proceedings of the Bible Institution, and furnished with anecdotes of persons who, coming into possession of the Bible, had found comfort from it, and to show that it was eagerly sought after by many.

admiration of every sincere Christian, established at a very great expense, is neglected and falling to decay; and while, it is said, the people are anxiously desiring a supply of the Old Testament in their native tongue, they are denied this privilege. Seeing things are thus managed, may I not add the language of the Most High, through one of his prophets, ‘ Shall I not visit for these things ! ’ ”

A full opportunity having now been afforded me to relieve my mind of all that I apprehended was required of me to express to the emperor in the line of religious duty, a pause took place; feeling myself constrained to kneel down in supplication, the emperor went on his knees by my side: after rising from our knees, and sitting awhile quietly together, the time for my departure being come, I rose to go, and after holding each other most affectionately by the hand, he saluted me, and we took a heart-tendering farewell.

Being conveyed back to my lodgings, and taking my seat in my apartment, it was with great difficulty I could refrain from proclaiming aloud my feelings of gratitude to Almighty God. For a while, I felt like one lost in admiration; but afterwards, the retrospect of what had fallen from my lips caused me to tremble; but in due time, Divine goodness in mercy condescended to pour into my heart and mind such a portion of the wine of consolation, as he best knew I was able to bear; for I soon became sensible a care was now as necessary on my part, that I might be enabled to withstand the wiles of Satan, as ever it was when my mind was under exercise for the service, which I had been thus mercifully enabled to accomplish. My bonds being now so loosened, I felt nearly ready to take my departure.

First-day, I walked out to meeting; my mind felt so lightened, that I seemed scarcely to feel the ground I passed over; being ready to conclude those I met, who had before noticed my countenance, must see relief now imprinted on it. My friends participated with me in my feelings, when I informed them how mercifully I had been cared for, and helped through this second visit.

Second-day, I walked to a merchant in the city, to fix for making a visit on the morrow to the prisons; on my way home I had a very severe fall on the ice which I had to pass over, which shook my whole frame to that degree, that I feared for a time I should be disabled from enduring the journey before me.

Third-day, accompanied by my kind friend, I visited the two prisons for men: the practice of reading the scriptures daily to the prisoners is still kept up. On its being announced the reading was about to commence, it was gratifying to observe the readiness with which the prisoners assembled, and the quiet and order they manifested: they generally appeared clean in their persons, and their apartments were in as good condition as the nature of such

places will allow of. We next visited the prison for females: here also the prisoners were clean and well clothed, their countenances seem to indicate, that they were well cared for. Here reading commenced, which was also conducted in a solid, agreeable manner; the men and women prisoners are generally employed.

From the female prison, we returned to one of the men's prisons: on our arrival, we found fifteen convicts in an outer room, attended by a file of soldiers, preparing to walk to Siberia, a journey that takes them one year to accomplish, at the rate of fifteen miles a-day, as I was informed: some of them had irons on their legs, which they were to travel with, and which, I was told, weighed fourteen pounds; formerly the fetters worn by such prisoners weighed forty pounds, but the present humane emperor had not passed over these abodes of misery, in his endeavours towards relieving suffering humanity, for he reduced the weight of their fetters to what they now are. The prisoners were busily engaged in stripping off their own apparel, and clothing themselves with coarse warm garments of every description necessary for the journey: their countenances appeared various,—some very hardened and inattentive to their situation; others appeared sorrowful, and as if human nature would yield up life, before they reached the end of their journey. The distressed state of mind a young man manifested, who I was told was one of the poor nobles, made such an impression on my mind, that some days elapsed before I wholly forgot him; he was loaded with irons, which he was to travel in to the end of his journey, if he ever reached it, his eyes so red and inflamed with weeping, that it was truly distressing to look at him; at times he appeared like one frantic, repeatedly exclaiming, in the Russian language, "Can nothing be done for me?" I understood the greatest cause of his distress was, his having to leave behind him his aged mother, who was waiting to witness his departure. I was informed his offence was, he had been an officer in the army, and had struck his superior officer, for which he was sentenced to Siberia, to work in the mines for the remainder of his life. My friend had furnished himself with a Testament for each of the prisoners, who generally received it as if they considered it a treasure, putting it up carefully in a handkerchief; the young officer in particular was at a loss sufficiently to manifest his gratitude for this gift and companion in his miserable allotment; he went down on his hands and knees to kiss the feet of his donor: the scene altogether was distressing. Before we quitted, I found I must venture to express a few sentences to them: how far my friend's timidity suffered him to give the whole or not, I found I must leave, and be satisfied that I was strengthened to do my part. We passed the

aged mother of the officer in the passage: the sight of her occasioned me an aching heart.

Fifth-day, I walked to meeting, and arranged matters for our departure—a subject that was pleasant to us both to attend to. A young man, a Russian, who was to be placed under our care, and who was going to England for education, made the fourth in our carriage, so that we had it wholly to ourselves. I had made memorandums of my visit to the emperor, but in such a way as if they concerned a private individual; which, with a few other memorandums I had of late ventured to make, I had sewed up in the lining of my fur-coat, to bring along with me; but on further considering this matter I thought, should I be searched at Riga, as I was given to expect would be the case, (being still eyed, as I believed, by the police as a suspicious character,) the very concealment in this way of these memorandums might bring me into difficulty. I therefore put all my papers and such of my letters as I had not destroyed, into the hands of George Edmondson, to bring to England with him; as he was coming by vessel, no difficulty would occur.

Second-day, occupied with callers, packing, attending to my passport, and making purchases for my journey. This preparing to see my native land, my dear wife and children, felt consoling; and especially so, having, as I was led to believe, an evidence the time for making such preparation was fully come.

Third-day, I paid a visit to the Prince Alexander Galitzin. During this parting interview, I endeavoured faithfully to lay before him the state in which I found the Bible institution, and the cause of its being now at a stand-still: we parted under feelings of sincere regard as brethren, however differing in name and external performances as to religion, yet, I trust, earnestly desirous, that in our daily intercourse amongst men, we might each be giving proof, that our chief care was to be found fulfilling the Divine command to Abraham of old, “Walk before me, and be thou perfect.” This visit closed my services in this city.

I rode out to my kind friend Daniel Wheeler’s, in hopes of taking a quiet farewell of his family; but I had not been long there, before I was followed by two of my countrymen; I soon left the house to avoid interrogations, but which might have drawn from me that which was best should not become a subject of general knowledge: my visits to the emperor had been kept secret as much as possible, for as they took place after dark, I proceeded unobserved.

Fourth-day, 9th of 2nd mo. I was thankful that the time for my release was come; for I can truly say, after the first week I became a resident in the city, I never retired to my bed with any degree of certainty, that I might be permitted to enjoy it quietly until day-light in the morning. This morning my friend



Daniel Wheeler, the young Russian, the Englishman and myself, left Petersburg by sledge for Riga: this journey of about four hundred English miles, we performed in four days and nights' constant travelling, except when we halted to change horses and take refreshment. Our journey was impeded when within five miles of Riga, by coming to a part where the wind had blown away the snow, and left the ground quite bare; and as our sledge would not travel on the bare ground, we were set fast for several hours. Our vehicle was like two bodies of a single-horse chaise, placed back to back on the sledge; the aprons and curtains were in a very tattered condition, so that the wind forced its way into our carriage, and when near morning, the air was cold to an extreme; on this occasion our patience was tried, for the drivers were not able, with all their shouting and beating of the poor horses, to get them to move along. Discouraging as our prospect was, and suffering as I did from the cold, fatigue, and want of nourishment, the assurance was renewed, if my feet remained sure on the narrow path round the mountain, rough and rugged as at times I should find it to be, it would lead me safe to my native home; I therefore endeavoured to do my best to keep quiet, and cast all my care on that merciful Creator, who cares for the very sparrows. After we had procured an additional horse we proceeded, and at length reached our hotel at Riga, wanting food, rest and refreshment for the weary body.

Pleasant as our arrival was this morning, as to the flesh, yet my secret exercises were increased, from my having been informed of the probability of my luggage and person being searched by order of the governor, who, it was stated, was a rigid bigot. I had not to my knowledge any thing about my person or in my luggage, (except a large volume of the New Testament, given me by the emperor, with his own signature in it,) which I could conceive might subject me to difficulty; yet should such a search take place, the fear of consequences, and of undue advantages being taken of any default, of which, as a stranger, I was ignorant, operated upon my susceptible mind.

Second-day morning, after a comfortable breakfast, we left our hotel, and crossed the river Dwina, on the other side of which we were informed, a coach would be waiting to convey us forward; but to my great disappointment, our conveyance was a German waggon, fixed on the axletrees: the curtains of this waggon were so tattered and worn, that it was ill calculated to defend us against the intense frosty night-air; but I found, if we went forward, we must submit to the inconvenience: at the end of our first stage, we entered Courland, when the face of the country began to improve. On our arrival at Mitau, we took a fresh carriage, but in no respects more commodious than the former. We had not left Mitau an English mile, before we found we had com-

mitted ourselves to a very drunken driver, and a superintendant not much better: whilst we were being driven over a bad piece of road at a very furious rate, we lost our linchpin, and the hind wheel came off; we could not prevail on our driver or conductor to turn back and provide us with another carriage; we were therefore obliged to submit and proceed, yet not without serious apprehensions of danger on our part, from the wheel coming off again, having only a piece of wood out of the hedge to keep it in its place; but we were favoured to reach our next station, without further accident, where we changed our driver, and had our carriage-wheels properly repaired. We felt thankful in being put under the care of a sober driver: during this stage we reached the banks of a river, over which, with our heavy waggon, four horses, eight persons, and our luggage, we were to cross on the ice; the prospect of which was trying; but as it would not do for me to quit the waggon, I besought the Lord to give me strength to acquit myself properly on this trying occasion, and he failed not to confirm me in the assurance, that he still continues to give power to the faint; and to such as feel they have no might of their own, and steadily look to him for help in the needful time, he condescends to give strength. Gratitude filled my heart, when our carriage was safe on land again.

After travelling through a very fatiguing night, my dear companion Daniel Wheeler, roused me towards day-break, by informing me we were making our way towards another river, which soon appeared in view; the state of the ice on which we had to cross, appeared truly terrific; in many places a separation had taken place, and from its rotten state the water was flowing over it. At first I drew back; to travel upon it appeared more than my feeble frame and agitated nerves knew how to bear; and yet, if my companions did so, it would not do for me to remain behind. Divine mercy, however, in this time of sore trial, graciously enabled me to cast all my care on Him, and brought before the view of my mind, the manner in which I had been hitherto watched over; thus was I enabled to take fresh courage, and cheerfully concluded to keep with my companions. The driver and superintendent, after consulting together for some time, concluded it would be safest to take off the horses and turn them loose, to make their own way across, and for us to keep the track which the horses took, and by the help of some men, by tying a rope to the pole of the waggon, and keeping at a distance from it, draw it over. Our trials I was led to consider, great as they were, might have been greater had it occurred in the dead of the night. Observing a glimmering light on the other side of the river, which we supposed to be the post-house, we made up to it, truly thankful when we reached the house. The first object presented to our view, was a woman far advanced

in age, with as care-worn a countenance as I ever remember to have seen, spinning at this early hour in the morning, by the light of a split stick placed in a piece of iron against the wall; every thing about her person and house bespoke the greatest possible indigence, but much innocence was imprinted on her countenance: after standing awhile and looking on her, as she also did on us, I was inclined to put into her hands a piece of money equal to eight-pence; which having done, she seemed as if she hardly could believe the truth of what she saw she was in possession of, viewing it with surprise, and such a smile of gratitude as I have not often beheld: my companions doing the like, I expect she became richer than she had been for a great length of time. Unable by words to express her gratitude, she endeavoured to manifest it by attempting to kiss our hands and our clothes. We felt not a little gratified, that by so small a donation we had thus added to her present comfort; the scene altogether, to me, proved a fresh excitement to number my blessings, which appeared multiplied indeed, when compared with the state of this poor aged woman.

We proceeded on our journey, and after a day and night hard travel, on Fifth-day morning, the 16th of 2nd month, we reached the frontiers of the Russian territories.

CHAPTER XXIX.

---

AFTER our luggage had undergone an examination and our passports were signed, we proceeded to Nemenerzat, in Prussia. Here we took a fresh carriage for Memel, where we arrived in the afternoon. I felt truly thankful to be once more in a land of more liberty. The rivers and roads beginning to break up, we feared detention; on which account we thought of securing our places in the diligence to Berlin, which was to set off the next morning from Memel; but as we understood we should have, by this conveyance, to travel eleven days and nights before we reached Berlin, and but little opportunity allowed to rest, much worn down by hard travelling as we were, and the poor accommodations various ways we had met with, we relinquished this plan, having several offers of conveyances to Königsberg; but if we accepted of these offers, we must travel the strand-road, which we had made up our minds not to do, on account of some alarming accidents that had recently occurred from the quicksands.

Fifth-day, having procured pretty comfortable quarters, our party were refreshed by a good night's rest; we concluded to proceed next morning to Königsberg, about one hundred and seventy-four English miles, and contracted with a man for that purpose.

Sixth-day morning, we pursued our journey; our carriage measured in length seven yards, and two yards across, in which were seats slung; but so uneasy were they, that we were glad to seat ourselves on our luggage, and at times to lie down on the straw at the bottom of the carriage; the top was covered with canvas, and a hole left on one side for us to enter; but so small, that we were obliged to creep in head-first; the difficulty to me was such, that I was obliged to have help in getting in. About seven in the evening we reached our quarters for the night, having travelled about fifty-two English miles. After taking refreshment, we retired to bed, but the night's rest of some of our company was greatly interrupted by the howling of the wolves in the neighbouring woods, and the fleas with which our beds abounded.

Seventh-day morning, we proceeded on our way. After we had



travelled about five English miles, our driver made a halt, telling us he must go and see if the ice on the river, which we had to pass, would bear us. He returned, telling us, a carriage had lately attempted to pass, but the ice gave way and let it into the river. As our driver resolved to venture, we quitted the waggon to go over on foot. My dear friend, Daniel Wheeler, had a very narrow escape from the loss of his life; for had he not been warned at the moment, he was about to step upon a piece of ice which would have let him into the river; but we were all favoured to make a safe landing. I now comforted myself, in hopes the bitterness of our journey in this respect was over. This being the most dangerous time of the year for travelling, as the rivers are breaking up, I was led at times to consider how far I had overstayed the right time at Petersburg; but as I felt fully satisfied this had not been the case, I endeavoured to seek after a continuance of Divine support, that I might be the better prepared to meet such further trials of this sort as yet might await us. We soon came to another large tract of water, which we had to cross, and whence men were plying with sledges to take passengers over, one of which we engaged, and reached land. After we had travelled some distance, I observed on the road many carriages and persons collected together; on our reaching the spot, we found we were come to a branch of the river Memel, not having crossed it on our leaving the town; the ice had become dirty, and put on a rotten appearance, whereby these people thus collected were afraid to venture over the river, which is supposed to be at least half a mile across. The man at the ferry-house appeared anxious to have us for his guests, but we felt no ways inclined to gratify him with our company; as far as we were able to observe, we had not yet seen a more uncomfortable place, and his countenance to me was more forbidding than his house. We inquired of our driver how he meant to proceed. He informed us of his intention to take his horses from his waggon, and attempt to get his waggon over. The man who had brought us safe over the latter water, had followed us with his sledge, and offered to take charge of us again. As my friend Daniel Wheeler felt his mind easy to venture across, which was my case, we sat down in the sledge, in full confidence that we should be landed safely at Tilsit, on the other side. On our landing, the sledge returned and brought over our two young companions; our waggon and horses soon followed us; after which the company we found at the ferry-house ventured over one after another. We made a halt at Tilsit, and took our dinner, after which we proceeded on our journey; our driver left the post-road, to take what he called a nearer way to Königsberg. We lodged at a small house of entertainment by the road-side; but from the closeness of our bed-room, the abundance of fleas, and the noise of the wolves in

an adjoining wood, some of us had but little sleep during the night. If by taking the route we had, the route was shortened, our road was not mended by it; for our horses were so covered with mud from head to foot, that it was not an easy matter to ascertain the colour which nature had given them. On our arrival at Königsberg, we engaged our places in the diligence to Konitz.

Third-day, feeling desirous of ascertaining the state of the river which we had next to pass over, I bent my course this morning towards it; but I found the road so deep in mud, I was obliged to abandon my intention in this respect. During my short ramble, I was led to take a solemn and awakening retrospect of my visit to Petersburg, which produced in my soul the acknowledgment, that it was through Divine mercy and Divine interference only, that way had been made for me to obtain that full relief from the long trial and exercise of mind which I had endured, whenever Russia came before me whilst in my native land; and earnest cries were raised to the Lord my God, that he would be pleased to continue still to make use of such ways and means as to Him should seem best, to effect that profound humility, abasement, and nothingness of self, so essential to my future preservation in that way, which will be most pleasing to him.

Fourth-day, having yet, as we are informed, three rivers to cross, and being unable to come at the true state of any one of them, the prospect of our proceeding would be trying, but from the merciful assurance I am favoured with, that notwithstanding the difficulties I may yet have to contend with, I shall have a safe convoy to my own home, if faith and patience are but in a becoming manner steadily maintained. At our first starting, we had a good road and comfortable space in our carriage: but when we arrived at the end of our first stage, two persons were added to our number, which, with the bad road we had again to contend with, rendered our sufferings great; our wheels sunk into such deep mud-holes, that we were near being turned over in them; and the only person in our company who could understand us, was so sound asleep, that it was with difficulty we awoke him to make him order the driver to open the carriage-doors and let us out; we felt thankful when the door was open, and we had obtained our liberty: the weather was dry over our heads, but we suffered much from the piercing cold; so that every way, great as our difficulties may be, we shall see cause for thankfulness they were not worse, as they might have been: as we were a considerable distance from any help, such was the immense weight of our carriage that had it turned over, all our efforts put together would not have been sufficient to have set it up again.

Fifth-day, 24th of 2d mo. this day about noon we reached Marienburg; our patience was again put to the test, by being detained

waiting for the letter-bag, and from other causes, until six o'clock in the evening; this detention was the more trying, as the probability was, it would occasion our having to cross two frozen rivers in the night, and that very dark; and we were informed that the road which we had to travel was bad; for we had been obliged to leave the great road on account of the waters being much out. When we came to the river Nogart, there being but little ice floating, we passed over without much difficulty in a barge built for the purpose; but on our landing, the sample of the road we had to travel presented a discouraging appearance; and our conductor told us we should not be able to make more than one mile in an hour, and we must have an additional waggon to take our luggage. The face of the country appeared so generally under water, that we were at times obliged to bend our course east, west, north, and south, through large pools of water; and, when able to keep the high-road, it was barely wide enough to take our waggon; sometimes on each side of it there was a very deep precipice, at the bottom of which was water: in this dangerous situation we travelled until one o'clock in the morning; yet, trying as it was, we had much to be thankful for, as the night proved clear and star-light, and the moon gave some light, which it scarcely had done since we had been on our journey. We had another river to pass to come at the lodging-place, which our conductor had been aiming at; but on our reaching the banks of it, we were informed it would not be safe for us to attempt to cross until day-light; we were therefore taken to a house for the entertainment of travellers; on inquiring for beds, none could be procured, and the floor of the only room in which we could be accommodated, was merely covered over with pea-stalks. On entering this room where we had to take up our lodging for the night, dirty-looking, miserable men and women put their heads out of the pea-straw to gaze on us; others were drinking, smoking, and making a noise: clean straw was brought in for us, upon which I could gladly have laid down my weary bones, but for fear of damp, and the vermin I might collect from my next neighbour, as they were lying pretty thickly about the floor, except where others were sitting drinking and smoking: we concluded to keep on our fur-coats, and, by the help of a table to lay our heads upon, to try to get some sleep. Towards morning, we enjoyed some quiet: and at day-light a pretty general sallying out took place of men and women: some of the men proceeded to prepare the way through the ice for our departure. I rejoiced to see the peep of day, and was glad to turn out of our filthy apartment, and get away from the fumes of the spirits and tobacco, to breathe the fresh air; but when we came to take a view by day-light of the road which we had travelled to reach this miserable abode, and the danger we had been ex-

posed to, whilst it occasioned a chill of dread all over me, it awakened afresh in my mind such feelings of gratitude, as caused songs of praise secretly to arise to that Almighty Power, who had thus in mercy watched over us, and preserved us from all harm. When the men had cut a passage for us over the river Vistula, which is a considerable width, a boat was in readiness to receive us and our luggage. I felt a little tried on getting into the boat, from the large sheets of ice floating round us; I esteemed it a favour when we reached land again; yet on being informed, that before we could be accommodated with a carriage to go forward, we had a branch of this river still to cross, and its surface like that which we had left, a fresh trial presented itself to my mind; we however made our way through the ice better than I at first expected we should do, from the immense quantity that had floated down and collected like small hillocks. We were truly glad when we reached Dirschaw, feeling ourselves in need of refreshment. On entering our fresh carriage, it promised more ease than we found in that we had left, and which we had reason to believe would have been the case, had not the roads been much cut up during the thaw, and a severe frost now again set in, by which means the roads were rendered so rough, that my shoulders and elbows were full of pain, and my sufferings were hard to bear: the like was the case with my dear companion, so much so, that we could not have endured it many hours longer. We reached Konitz on Seventh-day morning; here we concluded to rest awhile to recruit our strength, and get a little eased of the soreness upon our bones and flesh, for we felt much bruised. Expecting we should have to cross the river Oder on the ice, we felt solicitous to ascertain the state of it, and learned from the post-master it was considered safe to pass over; but a short time might render it impassable from the floating down of the ice, and then we might be detained at the ferry-house for two weeks or more; and should a thaw take place, the roads for awhile would be impassable without great risk of our lives: weary and sore as we were, yet this put a spur to our exertions; we therefore engaged a waggon, had it well littered with straw, which accommodated us and our luggage, and we proceeded on our journey again.

On Second-day, taking provision with us, we travelled about sixty-five English miles before night. At the post-house we were informed, that from the route which we had taken we should escape the ferry, and pass over a bridge lately erected over the river Oder. Third-day, we reached Fredericksburg to lodge, having travelled about sixty-five English miles this day; to effect which, we were obliged frequently to leave the post-road and travel on the farmers' grounds.

Fourth-day morning, we left Fredericksburg; during the



afternoon we arrived at the bridge which took us safe over the Oder, thankful we had taken this route. The river being broken up, the ice was floated down in such large masses, as would have rendered our passing by the ferry dangerous, if not detained us there. This day we entered on the *Chaussée*, a new road on the plan of our mackadamized roads in England, which gave us a cheering hope of our being likely to reach Berlin the following day; this we were favoured to accomplish by travelling one stage in an open waggon, by which means I caught a severe cold. So anxious were we to get forward, that we took the earliest opportunity, after obtaining information respecting the best route for us to take, to hire a carriage to Minden: matters being thus concluded on, I made a call on my dear friend the magistrate F—, the Count V—, and most of those I had made an acquaintance with, when here before: this unexpected opportunity of our once more seeing each other, appeared to be mutually gratifying. In the evening a person of the name of Lindly, formerly a Catholic priest, but who had embraced the Protestant religion, called on us; he had spent some time in Petersburg, and was cotemporary with the person I met with at Altona, who had been banished from Petersburg on account of his religious principles: he manifested much anxiety for information respecting those he had left behind in Petersburg, who were united to him and his companion in religious sentiments, of which he said there were not a few; but as silence was to me the word of command, and I had felt so much the necessity, when in Petersburg, of avoiding too free intercourse with those I was a stranger to, I was not prepared to converse on this subject. We also received a visit from the magistrate F—, who informed me he had recently received a visit from the pastor of the prison at Spandau, (which prison, I visited when here before,) by whom he was assured, that a great improvement had taken place in the conduct of the prisoners, since that visit was paid to them; that both the men and women had become much more orderly in their conduct, and their behaviour at their place of worship was now very becoming. This account felt like marrow to my very bones, and awaked secret cries to the Lord my God, that the praise and the glory might all be given to him, and to him alone. I was not able to enjoy an exchange of sentiment when I called on the Count V—, his amiable countess being from home, who was conversant in the English language, but with which he was unacquainted. I made him a second call, with an interpreter, but the count was from home; in consequence of which he addressed me by letter, which I think right to give a place in these memoirs, as it may afford the reader some idea of the purity of his mind; and the blessing it may prove to the kingdom of Prussia, that her next sovereign in succession, has

such a pious aide-de-camp, as the count, so near his person. The letter Englished is as follows :—

“ My dear and honoured friend,

“ I have been very sorry that we missed one another, and your hasty departure deprives me of the hope of our meeting again : in the meantime, receive my sincere thanks for the valuable book you sent me, and for the undeserved kindness which you have shown me. I forwarded the other copy to his royal highness the crown-prince ; he is greatly obliged to you for his present. Your kind fellow-traveller has also thought of us, and sent my wife and children a supply of small and large books, which they find quite a treasure. I am really quite ashamed of your kindness : my wife, who has been some months from home, intends to send you her written acknowledgment.

“ Thus you have heaped upon us, who feel poor, the blessing of love : and what shall we do ? we pray the Lord of mercy and of all life, that he will bless you both with his richest blessings, that he will give unto us all, the communion of the Spirit, and the love of the Father, and his fear.

“ With sincere and cordial love,

“ I am, my dear friend's faithful and

“ devoted friend and brother,

“ CHARLES COUNT V—.”

“ Berlin, 2d March, 1825.”

Sixth-day, we left Berlin, and reached Brandenburg to lodge. Seventh-day, we reached Magdeburg early in the evening, where we took up our abode for the night. Next day we proceeded on our journey in hopes of reaching Brunswick to lodge, expecting we should find a continuation of the *Chaussée*, as we had been led to understand would be the case ; but after leaving Magdeburg, to our great disappointment, we came on some road as bad as any we had yet met with, which continued the whole of this day's journey : we repeatedly expected to be overturned ; and after twelve hours' hard travelling, at times fearing our horses would not hold out, we advanced no more than thirty miles on our way. We had furnished ourselves with provision, or we must have suffered on that account ; as the only house we came to during the day, was not able to furnish us with clean, comfortable necessaries of life : next day we reached Brunswick to dinner, and Payne to lodge. My kind companion, Daniel Wheeler, and myself, felt ourselves so much exhausted by these two days' journey, and so desirous of getting to bed, that we omitted our usual precaution of airing our sheets, and coverlet ourselves, these we suppose were damp, which occasioned our taking a heavy

cold. Next morning we proceeded towards Hildesheim ; but our poor horses were so oppressed in consequence of the bad road, that we concluded, on reaching the end of our first stage, to excuse the man from proceeding further with us, and to travel extra post to Elze : this has been a large populous town, but in the eleventh month last, nearly the whole of it was reduced to ashes, whereby numerous sufferers lost their all ; the most deplorable picture of distress which I ever beheld presented itself as we travelled through the ruins, exciting in my mind great sympathy for those who were the objects of it. At Elze we engaged our places in the diligence for Minden, which place we reached about five o'clock next morning : on our arrival here, rest to our fatigued bodies would have been truly acceptable ; but it appeared best that we should engage our places in the diligence, which was to set off at nine in the morning for Emmerick, a frontier-town in Prussia ; this only allowed time to clean ourselves, take refreshment, and make a short call on some of the Friends. Here we were informed that we should again travel on the *Chaussée*, but in this we were greatly disappointed, for from the badness of the road, our heavy lumbering waggon, the great weight of luggage, and long stops which our drivers made on the road, we did not average more than two and a half English miles an hour, which to me proved an exercise of patience ; but I was favoured, through the continuation of that Divine mercy that yet followed me, sensibly to feel the need there was for me, to endeavour quietly to submit to these disappointments ; otherwise there would be a danger of my being robbed, and spoiled of those feelings of gratitude that had been awakened in me, for the favours vouchsafed during this wearisome and perilous journey, which I had, through Divine help, thus far been enabled to accomplish.

We reached Munster, where we were detained ten hours, which afforded us an opportunity of resting our weary bodies on a bed. We had been assured that we should have the same carriage the whole of the way to Emmerick, but this did not prove to be the case ; this circumstance caused us some difficulty, in seeing our luggage was all again rightly packed. We had a more roomy carriage : but notwithstanding which we felt so sore and bruised, that we were obliged to take four places for three of us, the young Englishman having previously left us ; had we not adopted this plan, I believe we could not have gone forward this day.

Sixth-day morning, we proceeded on our journey ; our road became still worse, and I was fully satisfied of the truth of the report of some of our friends in Petersburg, if the winter had happened to have been quite broken up, and succeeded by those falls of rain that frequently take place at this season of the year, the roads would have been so deep in mud as to render them for a time impassable ; so that every way, great as our trials of pa-

tience have been, and much as our bodies have suffered, we have great cause to be thankful, that we have been so cared for, and watched over by that Almighty Power, who regards the very sparrows; and that we have been thus far brought safe on our way. About two o'clock on Seventh-day morning, we reached Bocholt, where we again changed our carriage, and were detained two hours in a cold, comfortless kitchen: the sight of our new carriage was discouraging, it was smaller, and only a basket-wagon; the curtains of which were so worn, we were but very little screened by them from the cold damp night-air. We reached Emmerick about eight o'clock in the morning, and I took a fresh cold, my throat became very sore, and the roof of my mouth was so much swelled, that I found it difficult to converse.

From Emmerick, we took our places to Arnheim, a frontier town of Holland, which place we arrived at in the evening; we then secured places in the diligence for Amsterdam, where we arrived safely the following day. I made a few visits to some of my friends there: as the packet from Rotterdam for England would not sail before First-day, we agreed with a coach-master to take us to Helvoetsluys, and on Third-day morning we proceeded on our way. Having reached Marsland Sluice, which was only about half-way there, our driver would not convey us any further; we were therefore obliged to take a boat across the sluice, and when we reached the shore on the other side, to take a carriage to the Brill, where we had to cross and take a carriage forward. These trials were all abundantly compensated, by knowing I was now making progress near to my native land, to enjoy the privilege of being understood in my own language. The wind being fair for England, promised us a quick passage: we reached Helvoetsluys before dark, where we learned the packet for Harwich was to sail next morning at nine o'clock.

Fourth-day, 16th of 3d mo. 1825, we went on board the packet, and set sail with a fair wind. From the peaceful retrospect I was enabled to take of my visit to Petersburg, all the deprivations, perils, and dangers I have had to pass through, seemed to sink into nothing. The wind continuing fair, about ten at night we could discern the lights on the English coast; and had it not been for the danger of the sand-banks, we might have made a landing by four o'clock the next morning; but which we did not effect until eight o'clock, having had a passage of twenty-three hours. After the examination of our luggage, taking refreshment, and trimming ourselves, we took coach for London, which we were favoured to reach safely in the evening. I proceeded to Tottenham, and on Seventh-day to my own home at Hertford.

Second-day, I attended the quarterly meeting held at Hertford, and gave in to the meeting a short report of my visit to the Conti-



ment, to the satisfaction of my friends, as I had reason to believe. Feeling myself so much exhausted, I was obliged to leave the meeting before its business was got through. My journey now accomplished, and that daily excitement to push on being now over, I began more sensibly to feel how much nature had been exerted beyond what it could bear. Whilst labouring under this state of debility, a letter arrived, giving an account of the dangerous state of health of our children at Sheffield. My friends, as well as myself, thought that I was more fit to take to my bed, than to undertake such a journey; but as I was led to apprehend my sufferings from not seeing them, should a removal take place with either of them, together with the suspense we might be kept in, would be greater than the fatigue of the journey, on Sixth-day morning, accompanied by my dear wife, I proceeded by coach to Sheffield, which we reached the next day. I continued in such a state of debility for some time, as not to be able to get out to meeting. I found it indispensably necessary to endeavour all in my power to keep in the lowly valley; lest the dew, which I was favoured to witness resting on my mind, should be suddenly dissipated, through my too freely conversing on my religious movements on the Continent, or by reason of worldly matters that had transpired in my absence, in the settling of which, Divine interference had been manifest in a remarkable manner; I never felt more need of all the help designed for me to have, than at the present time.

22nd 4th month, 1825, although in a very low and depressed state of mind, yet I humbly hope I may say, I am made truly thankful in feeling earnest desires begotten in my soul unto the Lord, that he would be pleased to preserve me from suffering my mind to be in any way entangled with my worldly matters; but that he would give me strength to commit them all to his careful keeping, and preserve me from doing more toward a further arrangement of them, but as he in his wisdom shall see meet to guide me therein: and if the pointings of duty should be for me to commit the whole disposal of them to my children's management in future, to enable me cheerfully to submit to it. In the fifth month, although I felt hardly equal to the undertaking, yet I went up to London to attend the Yearly Meeting; but further religious service which was in prospect pressed on my mind, and spurred me on to be willing to try and do my best, in order to return my certificate to the select Yearly Meeting, and give in my report this year; for should I be constrained to come forward to my monthly and quarterly meetings with a religious prospect, which my mind has again been brought under the exercise of, and be liberated by these meetings, the way might be clear for me to lay my religious prospect before the select Yearly Meeting next year. I therefore proceeded by coach to Hertford, and from thence to

London; attended the select Yearly Meeting, and returned my certificate, and gave in a report of my proceedings, which was a relief to my mind. I felt thankful strength was given me to attend the several sittings of the Yearly Meeting.

My mind continued to feel a lively interest and frequent exercise of mind, on behalf of the dear Emperor Alexander of Russia, and his faithful friend the prince Alexander Galitzin, as well as the prince's secretary; feeling my mind drawn to make the same manifest, by presenting each of them with a religious publication, which to me appeared suitable for the occasion, I wrote letters to accompany them, and committed them to the care of a kind friend for delivery.

That to the emperor was as follows:—

“ Thomas Shillitoe has taken the liberty of requesting his dear illustrious friend will accept of this small token of his continued sincere love and regard. He has to recur daily, with feelings of satisfaction, more easily conceived than described, to those precious overshadowings of Divine regard, of which he was made very sensible during the interviews he was favoured to have with his illustrious friend; for whom his earnest breathings of soul continue to be, that Almighty God may be pleased, according to the riches of his grace, so to strengthen him with might, by his Spirit in his inner man, as that he may be enabled, with holy magnanimity of soul, to rise above all the slavish fear of man, and above every discouragement that Satan may be permitted to lay in the way of a faithful walking before God: that thus his illustrious friend may be found standing in the allotment designed for him in this state of probation; and finally, through the merits of the great Redeemer, receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.”

Prudence seemed to dictate my not inserting the name ‘emperor,’ lest the parcel should be intercepted.

That to the prince Alexander Galitzin, and his secretary, was as follows:—

“ I believe I can safely say, a day has not passed since our parting, wherein I have not recurred to the frequent opportunities we had together, and been made renewedly sensible of the precious savour of Divine love, which then so sweetly united our hearts in sincere desires for each other's welfare.

“ Daily have my prayers been put up to the Lord Almighty, whose power alone can preserve in heights and in depths; that he may be pleased to support your heads above every billow, which, in the ordering of his Divine wisdom, and for the accomplishment of his inscrutable designs, may be permitted to arise: and I am well assured, that if he alone be looked unto and depended upon, he will do thus for you, and enable you to continue to run in the ways of his requirings without being weary, notwithstanding the many discouragements with which the enemy of all righteousness

may be permitted to assail your minds. That this may be our united experience, is the fervent prayer of my soul. Please accept of a small token of my remembrance.

“THOMAS SHILLITOE.”

The Yearly Meeting being over, I returned to Sheffield. Not getting better of that lassitude, weariness, and increase of pain in my shoulder produced on the Continent, it was proposed for me to spend some time at Buxton, to bathe and drink the waters, which I consented to, and I found great relief thereby. During my stay at Buxton, I was disposed one morning to go into the poor's bathing-room, whilst the men were bathing; but from the smallness of the place, the want of proper ventilation, and the smell of the men's dirty clothes, I was under the necessity of immediately leaving it. I was well informed, that the poor patients were often obliged to dress themselves wet, for want of towels, which many were so poor they could not bring with them; and when they came out of the bath, they had to stand on the bare stones, or sit on a stone seat without matting, to undress and dress; and thus, though some might derive benefit, others were more likely to have their sufferings increased. Believing I should not feel myself acquitted in point of duty, unless I did my utmost fully to investigate the accommodations of these baths for the poor, I set about the business in good earnest. When I had fully satisfied myself by witnessing the manner in which these baths were neglected every way, (except the bare use of the water,) the next consideration was, how these things were to be remedied; and I found I must not leave Buxton, if I was favoured to preserve a peaceful, quiet mind, until I had made every effort in my power towards the accomplishment of this object. I turned my attention first to one person and then to another in the place, to whom I might open my views; but I did not seem at liberty to confer with any of them on the subject. I was informed that visitors had already felt much on account of the neglected state of these baths, and in consequence of their exertions, an assurance had been given that the evils should be remedied; but after they left Buxton nothing had been done. I was brought so under the weight of the subject, that it appeared to me I must make a visit in person to the Duke of Devonshire, the baths being his property. I therefore drew up a fair statement of all things relative to the defects of these baths, and walked to Chatsworth. As I walked there, I felt somewhat discouraged. Having no letter of introduction, I called at the house of a Friend at Bakewell, hoping through him to obtain a letter of introduction from the clergyman of the parish; but the Friend was not at home. I proceeded under the belief, that the best of introduction would accompany me if I only went in the faith, that He, who, I hum-

bly hope I felt, had called me to the work, was able to make the way easy for me to obtain the ear of the duke ; I therefore proceeded. On my arrival at the porter's lodge, I was informed the duke did not receive any verbal messages. I had put into my pocket one of our works on the principles of our religious Society, thinking, if a difficulty should arise about my obtaining an interview, this might in some way be a help to me : I then wrote the following note, and sent it to the duke :—

“ One of the Society of Friends, wishes in person to present the Duke with a work, which he hopes the Duke will find an interest in reading.”

The note being sent, I was immediately introduced to the duke, who received me with great affability, requesting I would take a seat : on my presenting him with the book, he expressed the satisfaction he had in receiving it, and in a handsome manner proposed paying for it ; to which, of course, I fully objected. I then opened to him the main subject which had been the cause of my making him the visit. It appeared he was wholly unacquainted with the neglected state of these baths for the poor ; for he said, that it was his desire that the poor when bathing should be made as comfortable as the rich ; he treated the subject in an open, agreeable manner, manifesting an inclination to receive any information I was capable of giving him. On my begging leave to read the observations which I had made relative to the wants of the poor's baths, he readily granted my request ; a copy of which I left with him, recommending him to visit them himself when the men were bathing, that he might see and judge for himself what was necessary to be done there, to render the poor comfortable, which he assured me he would do, and that the needful should be done ; he expressed the obligation in strong terms, which he felt himself under to me, by my laying this matter before him, and we parted in a friendly manner. I walked back to Buxton, rejoicing that the way had been made thus easy for me. Although from the extreme heat of the weather, and the distance I had to walk, being at least twelve miles, I felt greatly fatigued ; yet the satisfaction of mind resulting from my exerting myself in doing my very best for the help of those, who were not in a way to help themselves, abundantly recompensed me. It soon became noised abroad that I had been to Chatsworth, to the duke, and the supposed errand I had been on ; this reached the ear of the individual in whom the duke confided to see that these matters were properly attended to ; he soon afterwards made me a call, informing me, if I had spoken to him, the needful should have been done. But I had from good authority understood such promises had before been made by the same individual, but never realized. I was therefore persuaded no way was so likely to effect a remedy, as going to the



principal, as I had done. I left Buxton shortly after; but I received accounts from visitors whom I left behind me, that soon after my departure the necessary improvements for the accommodation of the poors' baths took place, for both men and women.

9th of 3d mo. 1825. My son-in-law received a letter from a Friend, who was desirous of laying before me a prospect of duty, which would be required of him to make a visit to New South Wales; but as my mind was under exercise, from an apprehension the time was nearly come, when I must be willing to lay before my friends a prospect of religious duty, to visit Friends on the continent of America, and that it would be unsafe for me to enter into the Friend's concern, I durst not read the letter. The latter end of this month, accompanied by my dear wife, we returned to our own home.

Second month, 1826. My religious prospects to visit the continent of North America being now matured, I this day informed the Friends of my own monthly meeting thereof, and a certificate was granted me accordingly. At the quarterly meeting, in the Third month, I again opened my prospect of duty, to pay a religious visit to Friends on the continent of America; which being united with by the quarterly meeting, an endorsement was made on the monthly meeting's certificate, and signed by the clerk. Having proceeded thus far towards my being set at liberty, and my dear wife becoming so infirm, as to make it necessary she should be nearer meeting than we at present were, and it being her desire again to settle in the compass of Tottenham monthly meeting, I engaged a residence for her there, to which place we moved previously to the Yearly Meeting. At the select Yearly Meeting, in the Fifth month, 1826, I opened my prospect of duty to pay a religious visit to Friends in America; and this meeting, after solid deliberation thereon, ordered a certificate to be prepared; which being done, and signed, was given me accordingly.

21st of 6th mo. attended the quarterly meeting of Hertford, of which I still remained a member, and from Hertford, I proceeded to Hitchin, to take leave of my dear children and friends there.

## CHAPTER XXX.

SIXTH-DAY, 21st of 7th mo. 1826. I left my dear wife, family, and comfortable home at Tottenham ; proceeded to London, and, accompanied by three Friends, afterwards took coach to Sheffield, in Yorkshire ; at which place we were favoured to arrive safely on Seventh-day afternoon.

First-day, attended the usual meeting there ; in which I humbly hope I may say, I endeavoured to acquit myself in such a way as would be the most likely to secure to me that continuance of Divine regard, which I awfully felt my situation in prospect would in a more especial manner need. The meeting in the afternoon was largely attended, and I believe proved a time of Divine favour, to the humbling of my heart.

Second-day morning, 24th of 7th mo., attended to some arrangements for my departure, and on Third-day morning, accompanied by my dear son-in-law, John Heppenstall, proceeded to Ackworth school to attend the general meeting of that institution next day ; on our arrival we were kindly received by Robert Whitaker, his wife, and other members of that family. Here I met with divers Friends from different parts of the nation, which appeared to be mutually consoling. It is a great favour thus to find that the bond of true discipleship is not dissolved.

Fourth-day morning, the meeting for Divine worship commenced ; it was attended by Friends and some others not in profession with us, and proved a season in which the Ancient of Days was pleased, in his renewings of mercy, to condescend to come down and tabernacle with us, to the comforting of the minds of such as were rightly concerned to gather to that place of true waiting, where alone a right qualification for the performance of acceptable worship is to be known. After this, the concerns of the institution were entered upon : being one, amongst many more, nominated as a committee to examine the children's progress in learning, I quietly submitted to my name standing, rather than set an example of refusing ; notwithstanding I felt so

enfeebled both in mind and body, with the prospect of the nearly approaching trials that awaited me, I could gladly have been excused. In the evening, after supper, the usual pause took place; and by endeavouring faithfully to cast before my friends that which I believed was given me for communication, the day closed peacefully with me; for which, I hope I may say, I was favoured to feel humbly thankful.

Fifth-day evening, the business of the general meeting concluded, with feelings of gratitude accompanying many of our minds for the favours that had been dispensed by the great I Am, during its several sittings, and in mercy continued to the end. After the close of the general meeting, I proceeded to Doncaster, lodged at Richard Cocking's, and next day returned to Sheffield.

Seventh-day, 29th of 7th mo. I proceeded by coach for Liverpool, with my son-in-law John Heppenstall; which place we reached this evening, and were kindly received by our mutual friends, Thomas and Frances Thompson, by whom I was informed my passage in the packet, about to sail for New York on Third-day, had not been secured, agreeably to my request: the captain feared he could not make me comfortable, as he wished to do, in consequence of the crowd of cabin-passengers that were going in her, mostly gay young men; and should they be disposed to sit up late at night, singing, dancing, and drinking, as at times is the case, they would greatly annoy me, and the captain might not have it in his power to prevent it. There being two merchant vessels about to sail for New York the same day, it was by my friends apprehended I should be more comfortably accommodated by going in one of them: it was too late this evening to attend to this matter, so that the subject was left until Second-day. First-day, I found it hard work to stand up in meeting this morning; I delivered that which to me appeared to be the counsel of my Divine Master. The evening meeting was largely attended, it was a very exercising time; yet I felt thankful my lot was cast amongst Friends in this place; believing there were yet preserved in this meeting, those who are mourning the desolation which the spirit of the world has occasioned, within the borders of our once highly-favoured Society. Spent the evening at my quarters: this day closed under a comfortable hope I had been found in the faithful discharge of apprehended duty; and earnest were my desires to be preserved moving under the guidance of Divine wisdom, in securing my passage across the mighty ocean.

Second-day morning, 31st of 7th mo., the way appearing to open with clearness in my mind, I proposed a few Friends to accompany me first on board the packet; apprehending it would not be safe for me to relinquish a passage in her, in favour of one in either of the merchantmen, until I had a clearer evidence than

at present I was able to come at; notwithstanding all the difficulties a passage in the packet seemed to threaten. Accompanied by my kind friends Thomas and Frances Thompson, and other Friends, we proceeded on board the Pacific, packet-ship, Captain Crocker, bound for New York; we took our seats in the cabin: my spirit was bowed in humble prostration before the throne of Divine grace, accompanied with earnest desires to be favoured with all-sufficient help, that a willingness might be brought about in me cheerfully to yield to the Divine will. I was favoured to get into that quiet, where alone the voice of the true Shepherd is to be known; and a clear sense was, as I believed, given me, that if I were faithful to present conviction, I must submit to have my passage secured in the Pacific, and not suffer my mind to be perplexed by seeking further; I therefore informed my friends to this effect: and being encouraged by my friends to attend to my feelings on this subject that had brought us together, my passage was secured in the packet.

Third-day, 1st of 8th mo., accompanied by my son-in-law, T., and F. Thompson, and divers other Friends, we went on board the packet. I humbly hope I could say, I felt truly thankful in feeling myself so much at home on board; my mind was calm, without a desire to leave, until, if permitted so to do, I should land on the other side the Atlantic ocean. We soon left the dock, and were towed by a steam-boat about five miles down the river Mersey; the wind being unfavourable for us to proceed on our voyage, we cast anchor for the night. Many of the cabin-passengers returned by the steam-boat to the shore again; but as I had taken an affectionate farewell of my friends, and had indulged in the prospect of them on the pier, as long as my eyes were capable of this enjoyment, I concluded it would be best for me to remain quietly on board, and occupy my time in arranging my luggage, before the hurry occasioned by the other passengers, who would be alike occupied, commenced. Captain Crocker had kindly given up to me his own berth; which being about the centre of the vessel, and having it to myself, I passed the night very comfortably; yet not without some feelings of doubt, how it would prove with us when the cabin-passengers returned to the vessel. I could not but anticipate the probability of our frequently interrupting each other, from the small space we had to occupy compared with our number; there were twenty-seven cabin-passengers, a considerable number in steerage, with our captain and his men, in all amounting to seventy-five souls.

Fourth-day morning, we had a very awful storm of thunder and lightning; but my mind was, through Divine mercy, preserved quiet through the whole; under the assurance I was as safe, and as much under the Divine protection at sea, as on the



dry land. About ten o'clock, our captain and the remainder of my fellow-passengers came on board: and about half an hour after their arrival, we set sail with a fair wind for New York. I was truly glad that I remained on board, and embraced the opportunity of arranging my luggage, from the confusion occasioned for a time by those who went on shore. About ten this evening we passed Holyhead.

Fifth-day morning, the wind fair; I began to feel symptoms of sea-sickness, but it lasted a very short time: I became more comfortable the remainder of the day; although my dear wife and children at times glanced before the view of my mind, yet I was not permitted to feel anxiety on their account, or for aught I had left behind me. My greatest concern now was, having thus embarked on the bosom of the great deep under an apprehension of Divine requiring, that during my separation (whether shorter or longer) from them and my outward concerns, I might be preserved so fully and so faithfully attending to my great Master's business, and so patiently abiding in that sphere of action he may see meet to place me in, as that, when my service on the American shore shall be over, if permitted to return to my native land, it may be with the reward of that soul-enriching peace, which ever will in due time follow obedience unto Him.

Sixth-day, the wind fair: at ten this morning we came in sight of Cape Clear, and about noon we lost sight of land and entered the Atlantic Ocean. On taking a view of some of my giddy and gay companions on ship-board, and looking towards the approaching First-day of the week, I felt very thoughtful as to the manner in which I feared it was likely to be spent; unless early care was taken to endeavour after as quiet an observance of it, as the nature of our situation and variety of our dispositions would admit. I therefore took an opportunity to speak to the captain on the subject, proposing our endeavouring to pass the First-day of the week, as much as possible, consistently with the design of its being set apart from the other six working days; to which he replied, he hoped it would be the case; and here the matter rested for the present. I had been led to consider, when the passengers returned to the vessel again, that the first impressions we receive of liking or disliking each other, are the most lasting; and that when once the mind has received an unfavourable bias, or an impression of disgust, in consequence of any improper demeanour on our parts, it becomes an almost insuperable bar to that line of usefulness which otherwise we might be of. My own comfortable procedure from day to day, (whilst confined in such a narrow space as we were—only the cabin or the deck for our accommodation,) and the way opening in the minds of my fellow-passengers to receive any proposals I should feel it right to make to them, with respect to the manner of passing the First-day, would there-

fore much depend on my carrying myself in the onset as courteously and affably as I could towards all ; at the same time, not countenancing actions or expressions, by keeping silence when duty called upon me to rebuke ; but being careful at all times to feel the necessity laid on me so to do, and that it be done in the spirit of love and meekness ; otherwise to keep silence, and let the countenance manifest, we do not approve of words or actions opposed to the doctrine of Christ our Saviour.

Seventh-day, wind fair, which I hope I esteem a great favour : may I give proof thereof by my consistent conduct at all times and on all occasions, whilst confined in this small space ; and not expect more from my fellow-passengers than I have a right to look for, considering their age, education, variety of dispositions and propensities ; but endeavour to bear with Christian patience and fortitude any unpleasant occurrences, should such take place.

First-day morning, calm weather : we make but little way. My sickness has wholly subsided, and my appetite continues good ; yet my mind is afresh brought under exercise, at the prospect of proposing to my fellow-passengers our assembling to-day in a religious capacity : may I be preserved, keeping my proper place amongst them every way. At the breakfast-table, this morning, I received strength to propose, that we should fix upon an hour to collect together, to sit down to read the Scriptures ; this seemed to be as far as I felt myself authorized to go ; with which the captain and passengers united, and proposed our meeting at half-past ten this morning. A general muster took place accordingly : after a short pause, one of the most giddy of our company, a well educated man, proposed himself to take my Bible and be the first reader. On my being queried with, if I had any choice where our reading should commence, having thus far been favoured to gain their attention, I felt most easy to leave this matter to themselves. After a suitable time had been spent in reading, a pause ensued ; and feeling, as I was led to believe, my mind charged with something for communication, that which was offered appeared to be generally well received. I had proposed in my own mind to make a visit to the steerage-passengers and the ship's crew, and read to them ; but before I could make the effort towards it, a giddy young man of our company proposed such a measure being adopted, and offered to accompany me with my Bible, and others offered their assistance in reading to them ; which accordingly took place ; those who attended, of the steerage-passengers and men, behaved orderly, manifesting satisfaction that they had been thus far noticed ; and the day passed over quietly, beyond my expectation. Supper being over, I proposed closing the day by some one of us again reading a suitable portion of the sacred writings, which was joined in with, and our company assembled in the round-house. After

all were seated, and a quiet took place, first one and then another of our company read; after which a little quiet ensued, and one of our company, a serious young Englishman, proposed giving out a hymn. For a moment I felt in a strait between two; but as I was not bound to take an active part with them in this matter, it appeared best for me quietly to keep my seat amongst them. When it was over, I felt thankful, in that I had reason to believe my not joining my voice with theirs therein, had not lessened that regard which they increasingly manifested towards me. Soon after our separation, we all retired early to bed. The day having thus comfortably closed, was cause of thankfulness to my own mind; and there was good ground for believing it was so with others in our company. This day's proceeding afresh excited in me feelings of gratitude to my Divine Master, in that he was pleased to preserve me from abandoning the taking my passage in the Pacific.

Second-day, not making much way to New York: my mind continues to be preserved in patience; a virtue necessary for those to have a good store of, who traverse the great deep, where there is nothing to look to but the unstable element, besides Him, under whose controlling power alone it is, to command a storm or a calm. Yet the adversary assaults me not a little with fears and discouragements, if possible, to lay waste my confidence in the Divine all-sufficiency, to care for and protect me on every hand; but Divine mercy continues still to watch over me: that I may never be permitted to forfeit this Divine superintending care and protection, is the earnest prayer of my soul.

Third-day, fair weather, but the wind so very light, we make but little way. How entirely, under our present circumstances, are we dependent on that Almighty power, who can command the winds and be obeyed! Towards evening a brisk gale sprang up, which had a cheering effect on the countenances of many of my fellow-passengers, who were longing to reach our destined port. I hope I am not unmindful of the favours I am in the enjoyment of, in being preserved in resignation, as to the event of a short or a long passage.

Fourth-day morning, going through the night at the rate of seven knots an hour, and continuing so to do; from the motion of the vessel, some of us feel disposed to be a little squeamish; but towards noon the wind slackened. What a mercy it is from our heavenly Father, to be made willing, in every state, therewith to be content! During my time of retirement this morning, I was led to see with the eyes of my soul, as clearly so as ever I beheld any object with my outward eyes, myself landed in the city of New York, and a man approaching me in full speed, and I was led to believe his mind was charged with combustible matter to pour out upon me. This, at first, caused that degree

of sadness to come over my mind, which I cannot describe ; but I was favoured with the assurance, if my dependence continued to remain firmly fixed on that arm of Divine preservation, which had brought me through so many difficulties and dangers, this man would be restrained by that same invisible arm of power from doing me harm ; after which my mind became tranquillized again.

Fifth-day, going at the rate of eight knots an hour, which caused great motion in the vessel. I found I must try to keep as quiet as possible, or there would be a danger of my being quite laid by. The man I had seen during my retirement yesterday, came to-day fresh before the view of my mind ; but an assurance attended from Him, who never fails to fulfil all his gracious promises, (if on our part we are careful that the conditions of them are faithfully complied with,) that if I was earnestly concerned to keep near to Him, who had called me forth into his service, carefully avoiding meddling with matters that I was not called upon to meddle with, patiently enduring such opposition as I might have to meet with, in a faithful discharge of apprehended duty, the sure Rock of defence would be found to be a shelter for me in every storm.

Sixth-day, wind favourable : we have been out at sea only ten days, and it is supposed we have made at least one-third of our passage.

Seventh-day, 12th of 8th mo. Weather continues very fine ; our passengers generally in good health. I often crave Divine support, to be preserved keeping my proper place amongst them ; especially as way appeared to be opened in their minds, to receive any thing and every thing I may have to offer, whether by way of counsel or reproof ; they also showed me every mark of respect, when I have at any time felt it required of me to give a suitable hint, on its being evident their conduct has not quite savoured of a Christian spirit. About noon, we hailed an English brig, bound for Liverpool. It appeared we had been now eleven days from our moorings, and sailed 1300 miles. I have been permitted for a short time this day, to have my mind occupied in thinking on my dear wife and family ; but I find it will not be profitable for me to indulge much in this way, and considering (as my great Master well knows) that an over-anxious disposition of mind is one of my very weak sides, I esteem it, I hope, a favour, that his restraining hand is thus laid upon me. May I continue resigned to every one of his dispensations, however opposed to human nature. I cannot help looking forward with some degree of thoughtfulness towards to-morrow, accompanied with earnest breathings of soul towards the Lord, that he would preserve me keeping my proper place amongst our ship's company.

First-day, the wind a-head this morning, which occasions our being on the tack. The motion of the vessel is very trying



to us passengers, which led me to fear our intended sitting together this morning, as heretofore, would be prevented; but when the time appointed came, I requested our kind captain to promote our being called together, which he cheerfully appeared to do; we mustered pretty strong, considering the change that had taken place in the motion of our vessel; whereby some of our company to-day were much indisposed. When all were seated, a suitable pause took place, and a few chapters out of the New Testament were read by different individuals of our company; after which we again sat in quiet. Matter arose in my mind for communication; but, from the indisposition I was labouring under, owing to the sickly motion of the vessel, I feared the probability of my being able to acquit myself to any advantage to our company, which caused much hesitation in my own mind; yet I felt a dread of the consequences of withholding, not doubting but that inward poverty would be the result; but after a struggle, I was favoured with strength to yield to apprehended duty. The evening closed with reading, as before, all retiring quietly to bed at an early hour.

Second-day, the wind still a-head, and from the constant uncomfortable motion of the vessel, many of my fellow-passengers, as well as myself, feel much exhausted.

Third day, 15th. The wind yet a-head, a fresh call for the exercise of patience: may I be preserved from manifesting anything even like a contrary disposition before my fellow-passengers, is what I desire of the Lord my God.

Fourth-day morning, after a sleepless night, owing to our frequent tacking, and the rolling of the vessel, I went on deck, and found, by inquiry, we had made but little way during the night, the wind still continuing a-head. By endeavouring to keep in the quiet, under our present trying situation, I was favoured to attain to that state of mind, in which I thought I could truly say, I had not the least shadow of a desire to be anywhere than where I now actually am. Although for the first eleven days we had made more than one-third of our passage, for the last five days we have been continually on the tack, and made but very little way. Amongst such a company, I found it difficult to come at a secure spot for retirement; I shifted from place to place, above and below deck, but in vain, until I took my seat behind the mast of the fore-castle. Some of my omissions on shore found me out, in this the most secluded spot I could come at, and I durst not do otherwise than suffer them to have their full scope in my mind; although my thus giving place to the painful remembrance of them occasioned some very deep-felt secret sighs, yet I was led to view it as a mark of Divine mercy and regard, in thus bringing again before the view of my mind my short-comings, in order that I may take warning thereby in my future moving along; and

more especially so, in that I thought I was favoured with the evidence in myself, my disobedience did not lie against me as wilful. This proved a season, not only of renewing covenant; but earnest were the breathings of my exercised soul, that faithfulness might (through that adorable help that I was led to believe would, from time to time, be offered for my acceptance,) so mark all and every of my footsteps on the American shore, as that I might be preserved from adding to that catalogue of omissions, which, at times, rise up in my mind and reproach me.

Fifth-day morning: we have passed a very blowing night, with the wind still a-head, the ocean greatly agitated; many of us much indisposed in consequence. A day of as great exercise of faith and patience as most that I have known; a day of frequent renewing of covenant—a day in which my mind has been brought to a willingness (I humbly hope in godly sincerity) to say to my great Almighty Benefactor and Preserver, ‘I am willing to go anywhere, and to any one, thou mayst be pleased to send me, and through the continuance of thy holy aid, to deliver thy whole counsel, be it whatsoever it may.’ The prospect I have had for many years, of making a religious visit to New South Wales, glancing afresh before the view of my mind, occasioned some deep heart-felt sighs; that if it should continue to be a Divine requiring, my great Master would not leave nor forsake me; until a cheerful resignation was brought about, to yield to his requiring in this and every other matter of duty.

Sixth-day morning; Going on deck, the captain reported, we were now pursuing our right course, which was cheering to our minds, and at the rate of five knots an hour: expectations were held out, of our reaching soundings on the banks of Newfoundland by twelve o’clock to-night, if we continued this course; but at sunset the wind very much abated, and we had a very trying night from the rolling of the vessel: I passed a very sleepless one. A calm came on, and from the increase of the rolling of our vessel, I was obliged to take my position at full length on the deck. During the stretching of my weary body on this hard bed, my mind was led to contemplate the unbounded power of the great Ruler of the whole universe;—that the sovereign on his throne, has no more place with Him, than the beggar on the dunghill, but as it becomes the sovereign’s chief care and concern to be found walking in that way which is well pleasing unto his great Creator; by whom he, as well as the meanest of his subjects, will be judged in a future day, for the deeds done in the body. These considerations led me afresh into near sympathy with my dear sovereign, surrounded as he is by temptations, and by those called his friends; who, there is reason to fear, will prove the worst of enemies—flatterers, a description of persons who surround those in power: and my soul was led to crave for him a

continuance of that help, which alone can enable him, now in his advanced life, to choose the Lord for his portion; and thereby secure for himself that celestial crown designed for him.

Seventh-day morning. O, holy Father! keep me in the hollow of thy Divine hand this day; that so, through my good example to the multitude inclosed with me by these wooden walls, who appear watching my movements, thy great name may be glorified, and inquiry begotten after the more acceptable way of serving thee, our God.

First-day morning. The little wind we have is still a-head: a degree of solicitude accompanies my mind this morning, that quietness as a canopy may cover our minds, and that nothing on my part may be promotive of the contrary. At the time proposed, we collected together pretty generally; and after all were seated, and a pause had taken place, one of our company commenced reading: when the reading closed, a pause took place again, and we separated much in quiet. After which, accompanied by some of my fellow-passengers, we proceeded to the fore-castle, and collected such of the steerage-passengers and men as were at liberty to give us their company: after reading to them, a pause took place; feeling, as I apprehended, my mind charged with something for communication, that which I had to offer appeared to be well received. In the evening, on my proposing to our kind captain our reading, he ordered the round-house to be lighted up, and a pretty general assembling of our company took place: reading commenced, and the evening closed quietly, and in a manner becoming the occasion for which the day was set apart; each retired early to bed.

Second-day morning: after passing a comfortable night, I went on deck, and found the wind was still a-head of us; yet, through that adorable mercy, which, I was favoured renewedly to experience, was watching over me, guarding me on the right hand and on the left, I was preserved both from being over-elated when we were making speed on our passage, and from being cast down when we were tossed to and fro by the mighty billows, (which roll one after another against the sides of our vessel,) making little or no way on our passage. Nor had I the shadow of a desire this morning to be anywhere but where I now am; feeling truly thankful, as I humbly hope has been the case, I have been enabled, in my conduct and conversation amongst our ship's company, to set an example of quiet submission to this, as well as every other dispensation of Divine wisdom. He deals with us, his unworthy creatures, as a tender father; when he permits our worldly undertakings to be prosperous, or all our fairest prospects to be blasted, whether gradually, or as in a moment, when the destroyer is suffered to enter our borders,—yet all is in mercy, unmerited mercy. A small part of our company sat

longer than usual after dinner, over their wine, which threatened to produce a disposition to disturb the quiet of the rest of the company on board: such a circumstance not having before occurred, I proceeded to the cabin, and in a kind, persuasive way, entreated them to quit their bottles and glasses, and give us their company on deck, with which, in a short time, they appeared pleasantly to comply. Whilst I was sitting in the round-house this evening, part of our company came in one after another, and taking their seats, soon began to sing; on which I arose to retire, which being observed by them, they proposed to desist from their singing, if I wished them, rather than offend me: but as I did not feel that which would have warranted such a request on my part, never having heard, since coming on board the vessel, any thing escape any of their lips in this way that was indecent or immoral, I left the round-house. I felt satisfied with proceeding as I had thus done, aware that if we are favoured to preserve that place in the minds of our fellow-passengers, so that a word of caution, counsel, or reproof is well received, we must not expect more from them than would be consistent with their education, manner of bringing up, natural disposition, and advancement (if they had known any) in religion.

Third-day morning: the wind continued a-head of us: we sailed for awhile with a prospect of a short passage; but how it may fare with us is all uncertain: we have no power to help ourselves on this trackless ocean; it is enough to be favoured to know our minds preserved in stability, and to be able to say in sincerity of soul unto Him, who when he commands is obeyed, whether it be a storm or a calm, a wind favourable to our prospects of things, or opposed thereunto, 'Thy will be done.' This being the state of my mind, I humbly hope, as I am not able of myself to come to it, I feel truly thankful for the favour.

Fourth-day: the wind a little changed in our favour; but towards noon it turned a-head again. We have not, as yet, reached the banks of Newfoundland, so little way have we made for the last twelve days. The weather continues to be very fine, which is a great favour for us passengers, both in the cabin and in the steerage; for the state of the air being very oppressive, we must have suffered much, if we could not have remained on deck until we retired to rest; notwithstanding which, I found it hard work at times to bear up against that dizziness in my head, and uncomfortable sensation in my stomach, as well as those misgivings inwardly, which often arose before the view of my mind; which if I had given way to, might have proved the means of my losing hold of the anchor of hope and shield of faith.

Sixth-day morning; the wind still a-head of us: our ship's company separated into little parties, some playing at drafts, others at cards, for amusement, it not appearing that money had



any share in these matters, and nothing but quietness and good humour prevailed. Although I would rather have seen them employing their time in a way more profitable to their own minds, yet on casting my eye over them, I remembered (and therefore kept silence) the old adage, 'of two evils, choose the least;' concluding, their being thus employed might be the means of their being preserved from that which would be the greater evil, namely, sitting at their wine and spirits; a certain sum being fixed for the passage, wine and spirits included, of which a great variety and abundant supply was laid in, for the cabin-passengers to call for at all times, and the quantity not limited. This proved a trying day to me, from the misgivings I had to combat with, when considering the small space between us and eternity, and that the starting of one of the planks of our vessel, in all probability would inevitably soon send us to the bottom of the mighty deep. I had almost come to the conclusion, from the fears thus awakened in my mind, I should not be able to retire to my bed again; but I was led to consider, that as I had hitherto been enabled to hold up to my fellow-passengers, the absolute necessity of our maintaining an entire trust and confidence in the sufficiency of the Divine power to preserve us amidst every danger, should I be queried with as to my motive for not retiring to rest as usual, the only reason I should be able to give for my conduct in this respect would expose me to censure, and I should condemn myself. However, by endeavouring after that help that has never yet failed me in seasons like these, I was enabled again to lay hold of it when bed-time came, and lie down in full confidence no harm would befall us.

A fair wind sprung up, and we are going seven knots an hour, advancing now towards the banks of Newfoundland. Our ship's company appeared much cheered with the prospect before us; yet I could not but regret, that instead of a quiet feeling of gratitude to the great Author of all good, for this change that had taken place in our circumstances, a disposition towards levity prevailed with some of our ship's company. First-day now fast approaching again; I look towards it with earnest desires, that nothing may be found wanting on my part towards promoting the proper observance of it.

First-day morning, the vessel rolled so much in the night, I had but little rest, yet the wind continues fair for us. Although it is supposed we are two hundred and fifty miles from land any way, yet a small bird, resembling our yellow-hammer in England, settled on our rigging; we also had a sight of some whales at a distance, one of vast size first throwing his head and shoulders out of the water, and then his tail and the other part of his body, spouting at a tremendous rate: it might have been gratifying to our eyes to have had a nearer view of him, yet, considering what an

enemy he might have proved by a nearer approach, I was better satisfied that our distance from him proved as it did. We held our meeting as usual, and were favoured with a solid, and, I hope, to some, a profitable time. I was comforted, when the time of silence took place, to observe the quiet that continued over us, and the disposition manifested to remain so, until it appeared right for us to separate. At the time of our meeting's breaking up, a fishing-vessel appeared in sight, at anchor; our captain made towards her, and put out our long-boat: the mate and a few of the passengers went on board, in hopes of being able to procure some fresh fish, but found, on their arrival, all their last week's catching was salted down; yet they were willing to allow our company the use of their baits, hooks, and lines, for the purpose of a supply for their present wants, which privilege they embraced, and in a short time they returned again to the vessel, with forty-nine fine cod-fish; some, it was supposed, weighed thirty pounds each. Although I could not be a partaker of them myself, yet I felt a secret pleasure, not easily to be described, on account of the steerage-passengers, who were to partake of this feast, which the mighty deep had thus afforded them, and who had been now living much on their salt provision. This fishing excursion occurring on the breaking up of our meeting in the cabin, the minds of the steerage-passengers appeared too unsettled to be likely to take any interest in our reading to them, as heretofore, and therefore it was not attempted; but on inquiry, it was thought seven o'clock in the evening might be a suitable time to call them together for that purpose. When the time came, some of the cabin-passengers, who had given up to read to them, failed not to remind me of it, and we assembled accordingly. At first I felt discouraged, from a fear we should not have been able to come at that quiet so desirable. An Irishman, a steerage passenger, became quarrelsome; but he was prevailed upon to be quiet, whilst one of our company was reading from the sacred pages; which contain matter suited to all states and conditions of mankind. Wounded and bruised as we may have become, through yielding to the world, the flesh, or the devil, or to all of them, yet we shall find, as we peruse these sacred writings, with minds rightly directed to the great Author of them, they will not fail to bring us to the spot where a sovereign remedy will be found; and if we are but willing to have it applied to the full, and our wounds searched to the very bottom, soundness of religious principle, accompanied by soundness of conduct and conversation, will be brought about. Seated as I was on the fore-castle, the vast expanse of the mighty ocean before me, its agitated state, the sea running very high, the rolling motion of the vessel through the great foaming waves, together with the occasion we were then assembled about, introduced my mind into very awful feelings.

The fishing excursion had rather an unsettling effect on some of our cabin-passengers, so much so, that I felt discouraged as to the probability of reading to profit, before we retired to rest ; and yet I did not feel satisfied to omit proposing it, which, when done, appeared to be cordially united with ; we therefore pretty generally assembled in the round-house, and very soon quietly settled down. After the reading closed, during which a good degree of attention was manifested, I ventured, as ability was afforded, to plead the cause of truth and righteousness ; and for aught I could observe, what I had to offer was well received. A good degree of solemnity continued during a considerable pause that took place before we separated ; after which, as we were rising from our seats, a young man manifested a disposition to excite levity in the minds of two young women who had conducted themselves orderly during our sitting, proposing their singing a psalm or a hymn with him. From the light, airy disposition, which evidently prevailed in his mind, I found myself called upon to interfere. I told him if he would sing a psalm or a hymn, in such a serious disposition of mind as was well suited to the occasion, he must be left to his liberty so to do ; but that, if he attempted it in the light airy disposition of mind he was then in, it was my belief it would be nothing short of offering an insult to the Divine Being ; and that sacred things were not to be thus trifled with. He thanked me for my observations, and there the matter ended. I was favoured to retire to rest peacefully, and with contentedness of mind ; counting it, I hope, a mercy to be spared from that anxiety, which seemed to accompany the minds of some of my fellow-travellers to reach the shore of New York.

Second-day morning, the wind was favourable, which was a cheering prospect to our ship's company, in which I also was a partaker, accompanied with feelings of gratitude that the weather continued so favourable for our being on deck, and that health prevailed throughout the whole ship's company. The state of the air has greatly changed to cold, since coming to, and while we were on, the banks of Newfoundland. We observed a whale sporting about this day, which somewhat varied the scene, as we rarely have had a vessel in sight.

Third-day, I passed a very trying night, from the constant motion of the vessel ; towards morning, the wind sunk nearly to a calm, yet we are making some way towards our port, but the weather again became very oppressive, I could hardly keep on deck until our awning was put up. A large water-spout appeared in sight this morning ; our distance from it was supposed to be about six miles ; it was very visible to the naked eye : a great number of porpoises sporting about, enlivened the dreary same-

ness of the ocean. The heat was very oppressive,—the thermometer stood at 80° in the shade.

Fourth-day morning, the wind rather tacked about, yet pretty much in our favour, and the weather rather moderated from a pleasant breeze springing up. New South Wales has been uppermost with me part of this day, should it be required of me to make the sacrifice; the prospect of the length of such a voyage, and the detention I might experience, my advanced age, and the parting from my dear wife, never more to see her again in this world, have bowed me as into the very dust; until I was enabled to address my great Almighty Master in the language of, "I am resigned to go anywhere; only draw me by thy Spirit and power, and make me willing to run after thee." This state of true resignation, to what may be the future requirings of my Divine Master, being thus attained, I was favoured to rise again as out of the deeps, and to enjoy the social company and conversation of my fellow-passengers, which previously I had no capacity for, until this baptism was thus far accomplished.

Fifth-day morning, the wind again a-head. I have been led to view the quiet retreat I left at Highbury, near Hitchin, and contrast it with my present situation, enclosed in such a small space on the mighty ocean, amidst such a numerous company of individuals, who before I came on board the vessel, were strangers to me,—the vessel rolling to and fro, with hardly a quiet corner to be found for suitable reflection,—also a frequent pain in my head from dizziness;—yet not a desire is suffered to overpower my mind to be anywhere than where at present I am. Surely this must be the Lord's doing; and how can it be otherwise than marvellous in mine eyes, in-as-much as, by nature, I have such an utter aversion to being on the water, and am such a bundle of impatience and anxiety: may I never forfeit His favours, but be found willing to devote the few remainder of my days here, to the work and service my great and good Master may see meet to call me to, is the prayer of my soul. We made but little way to-day; the wind inclined to be more fair towards evening.

Sixth-day morning, 1st of 9th mo. 1826. Almost a calm, and yet the motion of the vessel, from the disturbed state of the ocean, caused some of us to feel very unwell. Our captain proclaimed us to be about two hundred and fifty miles from New York.

Seventh-day morning, wind fair, running eight knots an hour; hopes are now entertained, if this wind continues, of our reaching New York by Third-day next.

First-day morning; wind fair, making our course about four or five knots an hour: may I be found faithful in our little meeting this day, should any thing be required of me to offer therein. Our thus gradually advancing towards our destined port feels



animating, although the testimony in my own mind is, that bonds and afflictions await me there; yet these feelings are accompanied with the assurance, "I the Lord will be with thee:" He never yet deceived or disappointed any, whose reliance continues to be firmly established on Him for help and protection in every needful time. I sighed however, and cried for preservation amidst the dangers that I felt awaited me on the shores of North America. At the usual time this morning, we assembled in the round-house: after all were seated, and a suitable pause had taken place, (which from our first commencement I had recommended, both previous to our reading and after it closed,) several chapters were read; during which, I thought the great Master fulfilled his gracious promise, of being in the midst of us: we separated under feelings of that holy solemnity, which nothing of the creaturely part can possibly effect. The weather was very fine; the great serenity that covered the wide expanse of ocean before us, to a mind capable of meditating on the wonderful works of an Almighty Power, cannot but occasion feelings of awful wonder and astonishment. A few days past we were riding on the proud waves, tossed to and fro, hither and thither, at their pleasure; to-day this boisterous unstable element appears comparatively almost without motion: we keep gliding along towards our port, almost imperceptibly. In the evening our reading took place, as usual, in the round-house; it proved a favoured meeting: the day closed with feelings of reverent gratitude to the Author of all our mercies, who had been pleased to be with me from time to time, since traversing this watery element, and surrounded by such a variety of individuals, of different dispositions and religious professions; and who had strengthened me to support our various testimonies, I humbly hope I may say, in a good degree of faithfulness.

Second-day morning: going our right course: we began to feel something of the breezes of the land, whereby the painful sensations in my head and stomach abated; the weather was fine and serene, and our vessel going about six knots an hour, together with the prospect of our being likely soon to see New York, occasioned cheerfulness on all countenances. Although the prospect of our thus hastening to port proclaims relief to my poor, frail tabernacle, yet it also proclaims thralldom and captivity to my spirit; but an assurance attended, that Divine mercy and preservation will be near in the needful time, and be found all-sufficient to preserve to the end, if faithfully looked unto and depended upon.

Third-day morning; a brisk, fair wind, but on account of the great swell of the ocean, we find it hard work to keep upon our feet or on our seats. I have been enabled, (on looking towards the time of my landing on the American shore) to crave,

that obedience to every clear manifestation of duty may mark all my footsteps, and that the whole counsel of my great Master given me to communicate, whether in the assemblies of the people, or privately to individuals, be faithfully imparted; and also, that if opposition in any way be my lot, whilst travelling on the shores of North America, I may be favoured to live so near to the great Preserver of men, as to be kept from opposing again in my own spirit; but if a reply be warranted, that it may be done in the spirit of love and meekness; or if silence is to be observed, that my lips may be kept sealed by that Almighty Power, who best knows when we should speak, and when we should keep silence; to whom alone must the event be left. Made soundings again this afternoon in thirty-two fathoms; and the colour of the water is much changed in a very short time.

Fourth-day morning; when I went on deck, the wind was again a-head: how evident was the effect of this disappointment in the countenances of many of our company; but my mind, through the extension of Divine help, is preserved in quiet submission to our present detention; although my hopes were awakened last evening, that we should have seen Long Island before the sun-set. This detention afforded me an opportunity of taking a retrospect of my conduct amongst my fellow-passengers and our ship's company; how far I had been endeavouring to keep my proper station amongst them; as a kind Providence had given me considerable place in the minds of most if not all on board. After some very heavy rain, with thunder and lightning, the wind towards noon became more fair for making way towards our port.

Fifth-day morning 7th of 9th mo.; the wind changed in our favour, and we sailed at about ten knots an hour; cheerfulness again resumed its place on each countenance: expectations were now held out, we should be abreast of Long Island by the afternoon; and at noon one of our crew went aloft, and shouted out "land in sight," which we were not able yet to discern; but in a short time after, a small spot of land became visible to the naked eye on deck. Upon this cheering prospect, all hands began to be preparing to reach the shore, as it was now expected we should land at New York by night. At two o'clock a pilot came on board our packet, by which means we found that health prevailed in the city; but, to our great disappointment, (for I felt I had a share in it,) our pilot informed us, we should not be able to reach New York with this tide, but must wait the tide to-morrow morning. Some of our passengers proposed, when we threw out our anchor, to take to the pilot-boat, and go on shore in her to-night; but as the number was limited by law, and it was necessary also that the quarantine surgeon should attend on board the packet, to ascertain the health of our whole

ship's company, the proposal was obliged to be abandoned. We now had the land on both sides: these sweet and refreshing land-breezes cheered not only our spirits, but even our poor cow, (whose eyes had appeared dim during the passage, and whose voice I had never heard before,) put her head out of her crib and lowed in a most animating manner, with her ears forward, her eyes sparkling, and sniffing up the air of the land, as if rejoicing with us at the prospect of once more setting her foot on some green pasture. We reached the quarantine vessel about six in the evening, the surgeon stationed in her came on board our packet, and soon set us all at liberty to go on shore. A steam-boat, lying off Staten Island, was hailed, which soon reached us; the cabin-passengers with myself went on board her. Although I apprehended my friends in New York were apprised of my coming in the Pacific, yet as the packet could not get up this tide, they would not be likely to expect my arrival this night, which was fast coming on. Having no recollection of the name of the street where Elizabeth Bowns (the Friend with whom I intended to take up my abode) resided, I began to fear I had taken a wrong step, by not remaining on board the packet another night; but a person in the steam-boat, I supposed observing me to be a stranger, kindly inquired of me my place of destination, offering his services to assist me in finding out my quarters. On my informing him whose house I was bound for, I found he had no knowledge where the residence of Bowns was, but kindly proposed to take me to a friend of his, and a member of our own religious Society, who, he said, would conduct me safely to my quarters. I felt my mind relieved on this subject, and found fresh cause for thankfulness on my part, as it was dark when we landed. I was taken to the house of my ever afterwards kind friend William F. Mott, who proposed my taking up my abode with them; but as I was led to believe the pointings of best Wisdom, before I left my own home, had been to take up my abode under the roof of E. Bowns, I felt most easy, although late in the evening, to proceed to her residence, and see how far she was able to accommodate me without difficulty to herself: I however found a wide open door in her mind, and that of her very kind widowed daughter, for my accommodation. I had anticipated the pleasure of a night's rest on shore; but, alas! was disappointed, although every thing had been done to add to my comfort in this respect, not being able to come at any sleep the night through: like the miller who could not sleep unless the mill was at work, so I could not sleep, from missing the rocking and motion I had been accustomed to on ship-board: I had to pass such another trying night before I was able to recover my usual habit of sleep again on shore.

## CHAPTER XXXI.

SEVENTH-DAY, 9th of 9th mo., 1826. I feel quite at home in my quarters, and every possible attention appears to be shown me; nevertheless, sighing was almost the constant companion of my mind through this day. It appearing safest for me to remain as ignorant as possible relative to the state of things amongst Friends on this side the water, I therefore gave hints to callers on me to this effect, as suitable opportunities opened for it. This circumstance I afterwards found had excited alarm, and occasioned fears in the minds of some of my kind friends respecting me. The followers of Elias Hicks had circulated a report, that I was coming over to their help, and that therefore they should lay claim to me when I arrived.

First-day morning; after a refreshing night's rest, I arose from my bed with my whole soul turned to the Lord in secret supplication, that his preserving power might be known to encamp round about me through this day, the approach of which I had felt a dread of. Feeling drawings in my mind to attend the upper meeting-house in Hester-street in the morning, I proceeded thither, under close exercise of mind to be preserved, if called upon to advocate the Lord's cause, from exceeding my commission on the one hand, and on the other to be found faithful, by declaring that which appeared to me to be the whole counsel of my great Master, whom I desired fully to serve. During my silent waiting before the Lord, a feeling of reverential thankfulness sprang up in my mind, in that I had attended to what I believed was a Divine intimation, before I left my own home, and since my landing on this shore,—to remain as clear as possible from conversing on the state of things amongst Friends on this side the water; being satisfied my bow would be thereby strengthened, and that suspicions of my speaking from information would be far less likely to attach to me. I found it hard work to rise upon my feet; yet believing the offer of the best of all help was made, I ventured, and was favoured to clear my mind faithfully, and in a manner that I apprehend would give such of the followers of Elias Hicks as were present, a pretty clear idea of the great mistake they had been under, of my being come over to help



their unchristian cause. A Friend closed the meeting in solemn supplication, and we separated under a humbling sense, that Divine Goodness had, in mercy, again condescended to own His honest-hearted little ones in this part of the heritage. Having drawings in my mind towards Rose-street meeting-house, I proceeded thither in fear and trembling ; being aware of the danger of building our hopes for the future on any former experience, and of the need there was of a fresh supply of that Divine strength, which alone can be found sufficient for every good word and work. Feeling myself called upon to labour with the time-serving professors under our name, He who, I humbly hope I may say, saw meet to call to the work, gave ability for the faithful performance of it. In the evening I received visits from some of my country-folks and other Friends ; and being much exhausted I retired early to bed.

Second-day ; my way seems closed up as respects any future movements, and yet I cannot see I am to spend much of my time in the city at present. May quietness as a canopy in mercy, be permitted to be the covering of my mind ; that so I may be preserved from taking any premature step, to escape any suffering that may be designed for me to pass through in this city.

Third-day, having been informed that the monthly meeting of Purchase fell in due course to-morrow, it obtained considerable place in my mind ; and my friends having knowledge hereof, kindly arranged matters for my proceeding this afternoon, it being a distance of about thirty miles from the city. Accompanied by my kind friends, J. R. Willis and wife, we set off, and reached the house of Hannah Field, who had been very acceptably engaged in a religious visit to the meetings of Friends in Great Britain, by whom and her husband we were kindly received.

Fourth-day morning, we rode about two miles to meeting ; the number of Friends collected to attend the monthly meeting was considerable : but I understood, on account of the season of the year, the meeting was smaller than usual, the members of this meeting being chiefly in the farming business. I felt well satisfied in giving up to attend this monthly meeting ; at the close of which, I found I could not comfortably leave, without telling Friends I had experienced the great need there was for me to be especially upon my watch, that no opportunity was suffered to pass by unimproved, wherein ever so small a portion of Divine help was to be obtained ; feeling as I did the need of a daily fresh supply, and the assurance that opportunities of this sort would frequently be found, if diligently sought after : thus the pause previous to and after we have been partaking of the bounties of Heaven at our tables, if rightly engaged in, would often prove a season, in which a renewal of strength would be known, by heavenly bread being dispensed to our minds ; as will also be the

case, where the practice of daily reading the Scriptures in our families is properly attended to and conducted. We returned to William and Hannah Field's. After dinner, I felt something on my mind to the young people, and having discharged myself of this part of apprehended duty, we proceeded to Richard Mott's to tea. Fifth-day, accompanied by I. R. Willis, we returned to New York.

The way now appeared a little to open for me to move round about the city of New York. Feeling drawings in my mind to attend Flushing meeting, on Long Island, on First-day, the needful was done to provide me with a suitable care-taker; this was with me a very essential part my friends had to take on my account, to see that my companions or care-takers were such, as were sound in the faith once delivered to the saints.

Seventh-day morning, 16th of 9th mo., accompanied by Samuel Wood, of New York, we proceeded by steam-boat for Flushing, on Long Island, to the house of Samuel Parsons, whom we found to be much out of health; we were affectionately received by his wife and their elder son. I felt afresh introduced into a very stripped state of mind, accompanied with many doubts and fears, how I was to travel on in the path that now began a little to open before me. In the afternoon, we took our tea with the widow Bowns, who now owns and occupies the residence in which George Fox held the first meetings kept up by Friends on Long Island; near to which are now standing, in a healthy state of preservation, two very large oak-trees, under which the meetings used to be held, when the house they first met in became too small to accommodate them. Feeling drawings in my mind to have meetings with Friends on this island, arrangements were made for my taking them one after another: this practice, of thus purposely calling Friends together, felt trying to my nature; and yet I could see no way but to submit to it.

First-day, attended meeting at Flushing; notice was also sent forward to Cow-neck, for a meeting with Friends there to-morrow, and one at Matini-cock on Third-day. At Flushing I found a considerable body of Friends; the meeting, to me, was a very exercising one, yet I was strengthened to clear my mind of that, which, to me, appeared to be the burden of the word to some within the walls of the meeting-house; in doing which, I felt relieved. After meeting, I went home to dine with a very young new-married couple; to whom I had to hold out the language of encouragement, and crave of them a willingness to suffer the kingdom of heaven to become the first and principal thing in pursuit. In the afternoon we proceeded to Greatneck, in North Hempstead; and in consequence of heavy rains, we had a very dangerous road to travel, but through Divine mercy we escaped accidents.

Second-day morning, visited a Friend who had been confined to her bed four years, a striking example of patience under her accumulated sufferings: these opportunities should be seasons of lasting instruction to us, who are favoured to pass a long life free from such humiliating interruptions to social enjoyment; and should produce the inquiry in our minds, of "How much owest thou unto thy Lord?" and, again, how far it has been our chief care to make such returns, as our Divine Benefactor is looking for from us. Attended meeting at Cow-neck, which, I believe to most, proved a quiet, satisfactory meeting: I felt thankful I had given up to be at it. After meeting we rode to the house of Obadiah Jackson, who, with his wife and children, attend the meetings of Friends; we were kindly cared for by them; after dinner we proceeded to Matinicoek, and reached the house of Henry Titus, by whom we were kindly received. Third-day morning, attended Matinicoek meeting, where I found a large body of Friends standing outside the meeting-house; and on entering the house, many had taken their seats: the prospect of such a company being called together at my request, felt awful to me; I however endeavoured to attain to a state of mind in which I might be willing to become anything or nothing amongst them,—either to sit in silence through the meeting, or, if service amongst them was called for at my hands, to endeavour after a faithful discharge of duty. Two solid Friends, at the close of the meeting, stood up and expressed the concern they had each been brought under, that the weighty remarks that had been delivered amongst them at that time, might be remembered, and that Friends would be willing to profit by them; these testimonials were words in season, and consoling to my tried mind. After meeting, we rode to a kind Friend's, where we took our dinner. In the evening, we reached the habitation of our ancient friend, Gideon Scaman, an elder in Society, and a Gideon, in the discharge of this awful and important station, and truly worthy of double honour: here I met with my kind friend, Henry Hull, who was once in our land on a religious visit, and is now travelling with a minute from his own monthly meeting in truth's service.

Fourth-day, being their monthly meeting at Westbury, on our reaching the meeting-house we found a large body of Friends assembled. I took my seat in the gallery, under much feeling of weakness, and great unsuitness for service, more like one that required ministering unto, than to be called upon to minister to others; my secret sighs were put up to Him, who alone can preserve us in our right places, when thus cast amongst our Friends in the capacity of labourers in the work of the gospel. In meetings for religious worship, and those for transacting the affairs of the Society, I am more and more convinced, that unless the Lord

build the house, or, in other words, unless, in our attempting either to build or repair the waste places, we wait to feel the renewings of the qualifying Spirit and power of Christ, to assist us therein, our labour will be in vain. By endeavouring to keep little and low in my own mind, suffering with the suffering seed, which, if my feelings were right, was under bondage, strength was mercifully dispensed in proportion to the labour called for; and I trust that a door of entrance was opened in many minds, to receive that which was communicated.

We took our dinner with G. Seaman; after which we proceeded to Jericho, and took up our abode this night with our kind friend Thomas Willis. In passing through the village of Jericho, Elias Hicks was at his own door; he invited me into his own house to take up my abode, which I found I could not have done, even had we not previously concluded to take up our abode with T. Willis. I refused his offer in as handsome a manner as I well knew how. He then pressed me to make him a call; I was careful to make such a reply as would not make it binding upon me, although we had to pass his door on our way to the next meeting. I believe it was safest for me not to comply with his request. During the evening, individuals who came into my lodgings, intimated that a call from me would be acceptable, at the same time pressing it; I rather hastily concluded on a willingness to comply; but my mind afterwards feeling uneasy with this conclusion, and desirous of being rightly directed herein, by quietly retiring to that sure place of waiting, where the Divine Counsellor is to be met with, and his still, small voice distinctly heard, and known to prevail over all the reasoning powers of man's wisdom,—this word of caution was intelligibly proclaimed in the ear of my soul,—“Keep out of the way of temptation.” I therefore relinquished this conclusion, and in doing so I found peace. I afterwards understood some of these individuals were of Elias Hicks's party.

Fifth-day morning, as meeting-time drew nigh, my exercise increased, accompanied with such feelings of fear as I have not often had to experience. Earnest desires attended my mind, that faithfulness might mark my steppings, should I be called upon to offer any thing in the meeting. I had told my companion the desire I had felt, that Jericho might prove to me a quiet habitation; and I could have further added, but respecting this I have my doubts. I went to meeting and took my seat; the meeting settled down into quiet. I thought it evidently felt to me that there were watchers in the meeting, those who would watch my words, in order, if possible, to make a handle of them, and turn them to their own account, in order to help that unrighteous cause they were aiming to promote: notwithstanding which, I was borne up above these discouragements; and when the time was fully come, I was enabled to stand upon my feet, and declare



what appeared to me to be the word of the Lord, in a close searching testimony. After I had taken my seat again, E. Hicks stood up, saying as follows: "I have been renewedly confirmed in this meeting, that our God is a God hearing prayer: it was the prayer of my heart in sitting down in this meeting, that as we had a dear friend with us from a distant land, we might be edified and instructed by his ministry. How fully has the prayer been answered, how clearly has he been led to set forth the efficacy and sufficiency of the Divine light, as ye have often heard it held up in this place; I appeal to this assembly if it is not the same doctrine, that ye have heard these many years past. I unite (said Elias Hicks) with the words of John Locke, 'Outward testimonies may deceive, but internal evidences cannot err.' "\*"

The above was given me by a Friend of the meeting who

[\* It may be useful, both as caution and information to Friends, to give an extract from a letter written by a much esteemed Friend of Philadelphia, to the author of the Beacon, soon after the appearance of his book, in America, which will show what Elias Hicks meant by the phrases "Divine light" and "internal evidences."

"There is a natural tendency in the human mind, when not under the regulating power of the Spirit of truth, to run into extremes; and under such circumstances, it often happens, that in our zeal against a certain class of errors, we lose the true medium, and slide into those of an opposite character. Such, I apprehend, has been the case in writing this book (the Beacon). In thy anxiety to expose the monstrous errors of Hicksism, and to guard Friends against the dreadful consequences which must result from it, thou hast suffered thy mind to be carried away by a false, though specious train of reasoning; and concluded that the precious Scripture doctrine of the sensible guidance of the Holy Spirit, was the cause of the awful delusion, which unhappily spread over so large a portion of our Society here. I am as strongly opposed to Hicksism as any one; and I have had sufficient acquaintance with it and its advocates, to know, that it was not the belief of the aforesaid Christian doctrine, but a gross perversion and abuse of it, which produced and spread the delusion of E. H. and his followers. It was going from this doctrine, and trusting to the strength of his own reason, and in this state studying the Scriptures to find arguments to support his unbelief, that carried him away; and after thus bringing himself to disbelieve the truths of Christianity, he then made use of the doctrine of the light within, as a cloak to conceal the deformity of his infidel opinions, the more easily to insinuate them among his hearers.

"But with all his pretensions to the guidance of the light of Christ, *he united with thee in rejecting it*; for I know well from my own acquaintance with him, that he believed in nothing more than human reason; which was what he meant by the term he so often used—"immediate revelation";—declaring, that without it, we should not know a tree from a horse, nor a horse from a man. It was therefore the rejection of the doctrine of Holy Scripture respecting the guidance of the Spirit of Christ in the soul of man, which led him into his errors; and this undeniable fact ought to be a solemn warning, to all those who are tempted to fall into the same error, of rejecting the safe and certain guide, which in the mercy of a gracious Creator, has been kindly dispensed to us. It is one of the subtle stratagems of the enemy of souls, to beguile and deceive the members of our Society by the false notion, that the doctrine of the light within leads to Hicksism; for, having failed to sweep away the Society by the floods of infidelity, and seeing that those who are left are clean escaped from that pit, and abhor its pollutions, he is now trying the more plausible and specious plan of misrepresenting and perverting the true Christian doctrines of Quakerism; and thus, by his lying insinuations, persuading them to desert that doctrine, and turn back again to the carnal and formal profession and views, out of which they were redeemed."] "

was present, and made memorandums of what passed at that time. So far from this snare taking with me, (for so I have since viewed it,) I was disgusted with these remarks of E. Hicks, for which I often think I cannot be sufficiently thankful. A recurrence to this subject brought fresh to my remembrance the prospect I had when on ship-board, in which I saw, after my landing, a man approach me, full of combustible matter to pour out upon me; but Divine mercy protected me from the harm that then awaited. I began now to see clearly the absolute need there would be, to take strict heed to the injunction given me before I left my own home, of "Go not from house to house;" and to be especially careful to feel that it was safe for me to go where my friends proposed; for I was now aware that E. Hicks and his party designed, if possible, to enlist me into their unchristian-like service.

Sixth-day morning, (22d of 9th mo.) we attended the meeting at Bethphage, where we had the company of Anna Willis and her son Thomas, which was a great comfort to me. This meeting-house is placed pretty much in the centre of a small full-grown wood; the horses are tied to the trees round about the meeting-house: every thing had a rustic appearance, a simplicity that would be likely to strike a stranger as I was. Friends gathered more irregularly than I had yet observed on this side of the water. I had to tell them, if solitude and a retired situation would secure for them good meetings, they were in a peculiar manner privileged, to what such were, who, when they meet together for the purpose of religious worship, meet in the throng of thick-settled cities and towns; but to have good meetings we must come together with good hearts and good minds, hearts and minds—that were entirely devoted to God out of meetings; without which there could be no presenting our bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is our reasonable service. The rude and idle manner of sitting of some of the men and lads, had so attracted my attention, that I found it would be unsafe for me to suffer the meeting to separate, and not lay this subject before the members of the meeting, which I endeavoured to do in as tender a way as I well knew how, considering the nature of the offence; recommending Friends to bring the young men and lads up to the top of the meeting, that they might be more under notice than was the case where they now took their seats. The remarks which I thus had to make, appeared to be well received; some of the members of the meeting stood up, and acknowledged the necessity of such steps as I had proposed being taken. In the afternoon we proceeded to Jerusalem: on my entering the meeting-house here, as my view was only to Friends, I was apprehensive they had not attended to my request, and that we should have a crowd of such, as do not usually attend our religious meetings; but this I afterwards understood was

not the case. The meeting was held in a private-house; it was a new-settled meeting, and the last Solomon Underhill attended, in which he was acceptably engaged in the exercise of his gift; although feeble in body from advanced age, yet strong in his attachment to his great Master's cause, which he had boldly pleaded through much suffering; he had been brought forward as delinquents by Elias Hicks and his party, (who made up by far the greater part of the meeting,) with some other members of Jericho monthly meeting, because they durst not unite with Elias Hicks in his unsound doctrines. After meeting, Samuel Wood and myself rode to Hempstead.

Seventh-day morning, we left Hempstead for Flushing, hoping to reach New York this evening; on arriving at the house of our friend Samuel Parsons, we were informed, that the corpse of a Friend, whom, when we were there before, we had left in a very weak state of health, had then left the house in order for interment; I had hoped, after such a succession of exercise, we should have been permitted to have quietly proceeded to New York; our bodies needed some refreshment, but time would not allow of it, unless we disturbed the meeting by going in after it was settled; we therefore proceeded to the meeting-house, where I took my seat, bowed in spirit under a sense of great poverty and strippedness, perhaps as much so as I have at any time known: but as matter opened on my mind, and a willingness was brought about in me, when the time was fully come, to disclose it to the meeting, strength was afforded in the needful time; and we had reason for believing our company on this solemn occasion was acceptable. After the meeting closed, apprehensions were awakened in my mind, that my desire to reach New York this evening might be disappointed; having had some fears to contend with, that I should be obliged to return to Jericho, and attend their First-day morning meeting; but after weighing this matter in the best way I was capable of, and my mind being brought to be fully resigned to go back to Jericho if it really were required, I felt excused from this bitter cup, and we proceeded on our way to New York; which place we were favoured to reach safely early in the evening, and I was kindly received by my hostess Elizabeth Bowns, and her kind widowed daughter, Sarah Minturn.

First-day, attended Rose-street meeting. It is trying to my nature to refuse the importunity of my friends to visit them, my natural disposition being very open and communicative; but I am satisfied with the caution given me by my Divine Master, before I left my own home, and from time to time repeated since,—of “Go not from house to house.”

Fourth-day, (27th of 9th mo.) attended Rose-street meeting; at the close of the meeting for worship, the preparative meeting was held; apprehending I was now favoured with a more clear

prospect of some future movements, which I am to be willing to make after the monthly meeting to be held next week in this city, I informed the preparative meeting that I believed it would be right for me to attend some of the meetings within the compass of Purchase quarterly meeting, before the time of holding the quarterly meeting for New York; and then to proceed to attend the quarterly meetings, with such of the monthly and other meetings as fell in course, belonging to the Yearly Meeting of New York. This information appeared to obtain the solid and weighty deliberation of some minds in the meeting, and a general concurrence with my views was expressed: yet there is reason to fear, from that which afterwards took place, the motives which induced this general concurrence with my movements were from a very different source: some members of the meeting were accordingly nominated to provide the necessary accommodation for my travelling; who were requested also to turn their attention toward a Friend as a suitable companion for me.

Fifth-day, attended Hester-street meeting: I felt truly thankful my lot was this day cast amongst Friends of this meeting, it being a memorable meeting to many of us, a time in which it might truly be said, by the living members of the body, we were favoured to witness a being baptized together into the one, eternal, invisible Spirit; and in degree permitted to partake of the same spiritual meat, and to drink of the same spiritual Rock, which rock is Christ, by his inward and spiritual manifestations to the souls of such, as in simplicity and godly sincerity continue to look up to him

Sixth-day, through close exercise of mind, and much bodily indisposition, I had a trying day of it. In the evening many Friends dropped in to see me: after awhile conversation ceased, and a sweet quiet ensued, during which, we were favoured afresh to witness, of a truth, that He, who in mercy condescended to visit our forefathers in the beginning, when we were first gathered to be a people, was still in mercy continuing to manifest Himself to be near to us; to help us in the faithful support of those Christian testimonies, and in the promulgation of those Christian principles, which they were made instrumental, in the Divine hand, of spreading as from sea to sea, under great and sore travail of mind, subject to great deprivation of bodily comforts, and even to great bodily suffering: under a grateful sense of His mercy this evening closed, and a fresh call was hereby proclaimed in the ear of my mind, "Bless the Lord, O my soul, and all that is within me bless his holy name, and forget not all his benefits."

First-day morning, (1st of 10th mo. 1826,) rode to Manhattan Ville, about five miles out of the city, and attended meeting there; this being only an allowed meeting, a committee of Friends



of New York were under appointment to attend it, in addition to the small number of Friends who reside in the neighbourhood. For a time after I took my seat, I had much suffering of mind to endure, through a fear I had missed my way in leaving the city. I endeavoured after as correct a view as possible of my motive for so doing, without being able to see otherwise than that it was pure, having but one desire in my so doing, which was that I might be found in the way of my religious duty. I believe it right for me thus to record and expose my various trials, for the help and encouragement of those who may come after me; not doubting but that such seasons of probation are permitted in very great mercy to attend us for a time, in order that they may prove the means in the Divine hand, of stimulating us to be willing to try the fleccc, both wet and dry. After endeavouring patiently to bear up under these provings of mind, deliverance came from that all-bountiful hand, who, when he pleases, says, "It is enough." When the meeting closed, I felt truly thankful I had given up as I did, to sit with Friends here; it proving, (as a Friend of the meeting, before it broke up, acknowledged,) a solid opportunity. Feeling drawings on my mind to attend the afternoon meeting in Hester-street in the city, we were favoured to reach the meeting-house in seasonable time; the meeting was very largely attended. There was good ground for believing, that it proved a solid, satisfactory opportunity to many; some, I had no doubt, left the meeting-house under an evidence, that the comforting, solacing presence of Him, who remains to be the resurrection and the life to His humble dependent children, had in adorable mercy, condescended to fulfil His gracious promise to those gathered in His name,—that He would be in the midst of them: this being thus mercifully granted, the mind becomes relieved from anxiety about instrumental help.

Second-day morning. The continued importunity to visit becomes increasingly trying to me; I hardly know how to refuse the terms made use of by some, to effect a compliance on my part, they are so pressing; and yet such are the fears that continually attend my mind, that a compliance will involve me in difficulty which I never may be able to rise out of, that it is very necessary for me to be careful, lest it should imperceptibly lead me into a labyrinth, and disqualify me from seeing my way with clearness to move forward in future. From the mixed state of many Friends' families in this city, some sound and others unsound in our principles, it requires great circumspection in visiting them; the latter generally giving abundant proof of their having a great life in argument, and being very forward in attempting to introduce their unsound doctrines at all times, and on all occasions, and not generally strict in keeping to the truth, when they report any part of a conversation that may have taken place

between them and such as cannot unite with them in their erroneous views of subjects of vital importance.

Third-day, attended the monthly select meeting; but through the giving way on the part of a few of its members to listen to those unsound principles, which now are industriously propagating by E. Hicks and his adherents, this meeting has become like a house divided against itself. It proved a suffering meeting to wade through, there appearing no way for the relief of the sound members of this meeting, but patiently to wait the full time when the Lord shall see meet to effect their deliverance.

Fourth-day, attended Hester-street meeting-house, where the monthly meeting is held. When the queries had been answered, Samuel Wood, who had kindly offered to accompany me, and drive the horses, informed the monthly meeting thereof: after he had so done, the meeting appeared to settle down quietly under the consideration of the subject; much expression of concurrence was made with his proposal; but an opposing spirit evidently manifested itself on the part of the disaffected members of the monthly meeting, who objected to S. Wood's accompanying me; this brought the meeting under considerable embarrassment, and placed me in a very trying situation. I informed the meeting S. Wood offered himself to accompany me, and that his former services had been very acceptable; after which, I found my safety was in sitting, and silently hearing what passed, without any further interference on my part; the oppositionists continuing warmly to object to S. Wood's having a minute to accompany me. After much time being spent on the subject, there appeared no other way to proceed, than by submitting the consideration of providing me with a companion to a standing committee of the Meeting for Sufferings, which I afterwards understood consisted of four Friends, two of which number were with the sound part of the Society, and the other two in league with E. Hicks and his party. I thought I might truly say, I was brought now into a very strait place, and for a time saw no way for my help, believing unless S. Wood was given to accompany me, I should not be able to prosecute my religious engagements in visiting the meetings of this Yearly Meeting; the opposition to his accompanying me was conducted with such determination, I could not see how this difficulty was to be got through. The meeting closing, one of the individuals who had opposed S. Wood's accompanying me, said, in a show of kindness, that I could not doubt but he could give me good reasons why he objected to S. W. as a companion for me; to which I was silent, believing it would be unsafe for me to converse with him on the subject, and I kept as much as possible from conversing with any one on what had passed in the monthly meeting. A glimmering of hope unexpectedly opened before me, that, if I endea-

voured to keep in the quiet, and carefully avoided giving way to unnecessary anxiety under my present trials, the way would open for my enlargement, however great the improbability might appear at present; and that I should know the Lord's power to be all-sufficient to preserve me from the dangerous deadening influence of this opposing spirit, which, acting under the control of the prince of the power of the air, works in the hearts of the children of disobedience, and which was so evidently, and in a most sorrowful manner, dividing in Jacob, and scattering in our Israel.

Sixth-day, I found my situation, in consequence of my being disappointed in my prospects relative to my kind friend S. Wood, had excited great sympathy, both in the city and elsewhere, amongst Friends; but being preserved, as I had been, in the quiet since the monthly meeting, I thought I felt it required of me to request my friends not to cherish any anxiety on my account; believing, as I at times was favoured to do, that when the time was fully come, way would be amply made for my departure from the city, to pursue my journey before me; and that it would be unsafe for me to enter much, if at all, into conversation relative to what had passed in the monthly meeting; because, trying as this disappointment had felt to me at the first, a quiet submission on my part would be a more likely way to help me, than any thing of my own contrivance or activity could possibly effect.

Seventh-day, I found my friends were kindly interested about me, and that, on my return home from collecting a few articles necessary for my journey in prospect, a Friend came to inform me, Adam and Anna Mott were intending to be at Cornwall quarterly meeting, and were willing to take charge of me thither and back again to New York. This offer, although no alteration had taken place in my mind relative to S. Wood, I felt most easy to accept for the present.

First-day morning, attended Hester-street meeting, which was large, and several weighty testimonies were borne: if any service fell to my lot, it was to endeavour to promote in some minds a willingness to look to the Divine Counsellor in themselves, that they might be favoured to see that rotten foundation, on which they were building their views of religious matters, and thereby risking their eternal happiness. Although I found it hard work to obtain relief, yet fresh cause was felt to set up the Ebenezer, to the praise of Him, who, when he calls to the work, gives strength for the performance of it, although at times greatly to the abasement of the creature, that He alone may have the praise. In the afternoon I sat with Friends at Rose-street meeting, which was small: several Friends in the evening came to my quarters to take their leave of me; we had a quiet solid sitting together, affording some relief; for my mind had been much tried

after the close of the afternoon meeting at Rose-street, and I was altogether unable to understand why ; for I could not see but that I had been in the way of my duty, in standing upon my feet, or that I had kept back any part of what was given me for the people, or that I had added any thing of my own, or that I had missed my way either by standing up too soon, or had kept my seat beyond the right time. Trying as this baptism was to human nature to endure, yet I felt thankful for it; and for that Divine support which I had experienced whilst labouring under it, not doubting but that such trying dispensations are intended in mercy, to humble the creature, that so all boasting may be excluded, and that all the praise that may appertain to our very best religious performances may be given to the Father and his Son Christ Jesus, to whom only it belongs.

Second-day, 9th of 10th mo. 1826. Accompanied by Adam Mott and his wife, I left my comfortable abode in the city : we were favoured safely to reach Richard Mott's this evening.

Third-day, we attended the select preparative meeting of Mamaroneck ; a quiet and comfortable meeting. Fourth-day, we attended the monthly meeting, which was large ; if any religious service was called for at my hands this day, it was to me comparable to that of entering the cellar of a large old building, to examine the foundation on which this building stood, and searching out the decayed stones and rotten timbers in the foundation on which the building was standing, in order that they might be removed ; that so way might be made for sound materials being placed in the foundation in their room. In the monthly meeting it appeared evident, that unsoundness of principle had made inroads on the minds of some who were busy-bodies, and took an active part in the concerns of society, thereby standing in the way of such as were qualified to come forward and lend a helping hand in the discipline. The day closed peacefully ; in the evening we rode to our kind friend Hester Griffin's, where we took up our abode for the night.

Fifth-day morning, very stormy, which was discouraging, as we intended to be at the monthly meeting of Shapauqua, about seven miles' ride : accompanied by Edmund Griffin, we proceeded accordingly. In the meeting for worship, I had to open the state of things amongst Friends of this meeting, in such a pointed manner, that when I took my seat I was plunged into a sea of discouragement, fearing what I had thus communicated had proceeded from the transformations of the evil one. Gladly would I have made my escape from the meeting-house, could I have done it with any propriety ; but by endeavouring to settle down into the quiet, that I might be favoured to come at a true sense how far my movements at this time had been in the vision of light or not, an elderly friend stood up, and in a solid, feeling manner



expressed his full concurrence with the plain truths, that had been delivered in such a weighty manner amongst them by a stranger from a distant land, and the desire he felt that the labour which had been thus bestowed might become profitable to them. Earnest were the breathings of my soul, that the sound of my voice might not be heard during the transacting the business of this monthly meeting, unless the woe was felt: and at the close of this meeting, Friends expressed their thankfulness our lot had been thus cast amongst them. After meeting, we rode to the house of Moses Suttom, at Crocon Valley, and took up our abode for the night. On recurring to the baptism I had been introduced into in the meeting for worship, after I had been engaged in religious service, I thought there was cause for thankfulness on my part, however, during the continuance of this dispensation; although it was to the creature most humiliating; but the assurance attends my mind that it was permitted in great mercy to humble me; and earnest were the cravings of my soul, that the same Divine mercy and loving kindness, that had thus permitted me to be tried and proved, would not spare me; but continue to make use of such ways and means, from time to time, as were necessary to keep me truly humble, in a state of nothingness, and entire dependence upon Him, who alone remains to be a covert from the heat, a shelter from the storm, and the shadow of a mighty rock in that weary land, in which we may for a time be permitted to have our dwelling, when the blast of the terrible one may, for the trial of our faith in our holy Redeemer's power, be suffered to come up against our walls: thus closed this day.

Sixth-day morning, accompanied by the son of Moses Suttom, we proceeded to Amawalk meeting-house. I felt cause for thankfulness in being introduced to that state of mind, which, if abode under, would prove preparatory to receive the wine of the kingdom, should my Divine Master see meet to dispense a portion, whether for my own consolation and comfort, or to mete it out for the consolation and comfort of others. We understood the meeting was not so largely attended as generally is the case: much close exercise of mind and religious labour fell to my lot; but as faithfulness obtained the ascendancy over that fearfulness which is of the creature, the reward of peace became the result. Testimonies were borne by some Friends of the meeting, at its close, in confirmation of the necessity of such plain truths as had been delivered amongst them; and there were expressions of desire, that Friends would consider them as a fresh proof of that Divine regard, which was still manifested towards the members of their meeting: for that nothing short of Divine aid could have effected such clear views of their states, in the several particulars that had been spoken to; and

that if such to whom they belonged would not be willing to profit by them, it would redound to their own condemnation: these remarks, made by weighty Friends of the meeting, were to me like a brook by the way. After meeting, we proceeded to Benjamin Griffin's, at Amawalk. I was given to understand, that reports were in circulation in this quarterly meeting, relative to my being closeted alone with Elias Hicks for an hour, and that I had declared to a member of Society, who was one of his adherents, that the state of things amongst Friends in England, when I left it, was worse, with respect to the prevalency of a separating, dividing spirit, than in this land, and that the followers of E. Hicks had brought me over to their party. Although I well knew all these reports to be utterly false and unfounded, yet, on my first hearing them, they occasioned me some painful feelings, not knowing how they might have a tendency to block up my way in the minds of some Friends. I had proposed to myself endeavouring to have them cleared up; but taking the best view of the subject I was capable of, it appeared safest for me to move quietly forward, and mind my great Master's business; under an assurance, that these false and unfounded reports respecting me, would in time remedy themselves: and here I was enabled to leave this painful matter.

Seventh-day; after an early dinner we left Amawalk towards Pek's-kiln, and lodged at the house of Abraham Carpenter.

First-day morning: we attended Pek's-kiln meeting. In the afternoon we walked about two miles to take tea with a Friend's family, where we found a number of young people: conversation took place, in which I took a share, until I found I could no longer take any interest therein, and yet I feared to give way to feelings my mind was brought under, lest I should get into a habit of preaching when not called upon; and through a fear of this sort, I kept silence until some of the company rose on their feet to leave the house, which obliged me to request their taking their seats again, and strength was afforded me to obtain relief. I returned in the evening to James Brown's, with a peaceful mind.

Second-day, 16th of 10th mo.; accompanied by my kind companions, Adam and Anna Mott, we proceeded on our way to Cornwall quarterly meeting: reached Canterbury, the residence of the widow of David Sands, who spent many years in the service of truth in Old England.

We attended the select quarterly meeting for Cornwall, which appeared to be composed of some solid weighty Friends, who manifested a lively zeal for the preservation of soundness in this part of the body. As I endeavoured to stand resigned to be anything or nothing, Divine regard mercifully condescended to be near for my help, enabling me to rejoice under a sense of the

sufficiency of his Divine power to give strength for the performance of that work whereunto, I humbly hope I may say, I felt His renewed call. The quarterly meeting for the general concerns of the Society commenced with a meeting for worship, which was largely attended: the meeting for discipline was greatly disturbed by many young men coming into the meeting-house in a noisy and rather rude manner: after it had become settled again, feeling as I apprehended, an engagement of mind to speak publicly to them relative to their conduct, I endeavoured to do so in as affectionate a manner as the nature of such an offence allowed of; which, I had reason to believe, was a relief to the rightly exercised members of the meeting. Cornwall is a newly settled quarterly meeting; the members of it at one time formed a part of Nine Partners' quarterly meeting. The summary manner in which the queries from the monthly meetings were answered, brought me under the necessity of casting before the meeting the view that I apprehended had been given me on this subject. This appeared to give courage to others, who before had kept silence, to express their uneasiness with this practice, which the monthly meetings had thus fallen into: the meeting was brought under considerable exercise, that in future the monthly meetings should be more explicit in answering their queries, on which account a minute was made to go down to the monthly and preparative meetings, to enforce a compliance with the views the meeting had taken on the subject. Observing the men's meeting was drawing to a close, and my mind continuing to be exercised with a subject in which the women were equally concerned with the men, I requested, if agreeable to the men and women's meeting, the shutters between the two apartments might be raised, which took place accordingly. In obtaining full relief to my own mind, I was brought under the necessity of going more into particulars than felt pleasant to my natural inclination; yet there was ground to believe, what was offered was well received by many, if not all: and fresh cause there was for me to say, hitherto the Lord hath been my stay and my support; to him be the praise given. The concluding meeting for worship was held, the next morning, which was largely attended, and proved a favoured time, closing with solemn prayer and thanksgiving to Almighty God for his unmerited mercies; in that he had been pleased once more to manifest his regard towards the members of this quarterly meeting; under a grateful sense of which Friends appeared to separate. In the afternoon we proceeded to the Lower Clove, and took up our abode at the house of Zebulon Townsend.

Seventh-day, 21st of 10th mo. we rode to Jonah Odett's. The road over the mountains not admitting of a carriage to travel upon it, we were obliged to take another route, which made

our journey about twenty-seven miles, and a part of this road was so very bad, it appeared at times dangerous for us to proceed. I endeavoured after patience, under a belief no harm would be suffered to befall us; and thankful we were when favoured to reach the Upper Clove in safety.

First-day morning: we proceeded to Cokeatt meeting-house, about one mile and a half distant, but the road was worse than any we had travelled the day before. There are but very few members to keep up this meeting, yet, by comers-in not professing with our Society, we had a considerable attendance: in the evening after Jonah Odett's family was collected, and the opportunity of reading being closed, a pause took place; when counsel, I humbly trust, suitable to the states of some of the younger parts of our company was plentifully handed out, which I was ready to hope, would not be lost sight of. We were much comforted in being in this family, and the solid manner in which the evening was passed, rewarded me for giving up to attend this meeting.

The next day, my companions Adam and Anna Mott and myself proceeded towards New York, a journey of about forty miles, which place we were favoured to reach late in the afternoon; here we parted, having myself been most kindly and affectionately cared for by them.

Third-day: during my sleepless hours last night, some of my future prospects of religious duty occupied my mind, not being able to look to any one for a companion for a continuance, but my kind friend Samuel Wood; I endeavoured to dwell patiently under the weight of this subject, when Truth appeared to me to point out the propriety of having the standing committee of the Meeting for Sufferings called together, to whom was referred the care of providing me with a companion, of which number I found S. Wood was one; and that it would be proper for me to attend, and lay before them the trying situation I was placed in, no reason whatsoever having been brought forward to the monthly meeting already mentioned, for objecting to S. W.'s being my caretaker. I opened the views I had of this subject to a few suitable Friends, all of whom concurred with me herein; but it appeared best to leave the summoning of this committee until I returned again to New York, after I had attended the quarterly meeting of Flushing on Long Island.

Fourth-day morning: accompanied by Adam and A. Mott, I proceeded to Flushing, on Long Island, to attend the quarterly meeting, and was kindly received by Samuel Parsons and wife. The select quarterly meeting began this morning: the queries were answered, but in such a summary way, as to render it difficult to come at the true state of this part of the Society; these answers were passed over by the members of this meeting in silence. I found I must lay before Friends the loss which meet-



ings sustained by answering the queries in such a summary way, as it opened a door for smothering up wrong things, which might at times creep into this part of the body. In one of the select monthly meetings, from the answers brought up, it was clearly manifest, that a breach of love and unity existed, and that these wounds were so deeply rooted, as to proclaim the language, that help was wanting. Although I evidently felt that there would be great opposition made by a party in the meeting to taking such a step, yet I durst not do otherwise than propose the adoption of this measure; this was warmly objected to by a party in the meeting, but by the weighty solid part of the meeting it was united with; divers Friends saying, that attempts had been made to have a committee formed to visit the select monthly meetings, but such a measure had been uniformly opposed. The prospect of Truth's prevailing over this spirit for awhile was cheering, but such a determination to quash the proposal manifested itself again, that this hope was almost lost sight of; and yet it did not appear right to Friends, who had the welfare of Society at heart, that this prospect of a committee's being thus set apart should be too easily abandoned. Friends were encouraged by some well-concerned strangers present, to maintain their standing with becoming firmness. While this subject was thus agitated, the mournful desolation that prevailed in the select monthly meeting of Jericho became more exposed, by those of that meeting who so warmly opposed a committee being appointed, whereby such a scene of oppression became developed, as would have pierced the hearts of most present. These things strengthened the hands of the sound members of the meeting, in their apprehension of the need of a committee being now appointed, to visit the several select monthly meetings; and by Friends endeavouring in patience to maintain their ground, truth prevailed over that opposition, and a committee was obtained, to the relief of the sound members of the meeting, but not until we had sat together from ten o'clock in the morning till five in the afternoon.

The next morning the quarterly meeting for discipline commenced: the answers to the queries brought up from the monthly meetings were couched in such general terms, as rendered it difficult to come at a correct statement of the situation of the monthly meetings; but it appeared in the present state of this quarterly meeting, nothing could be done to remedy this mode of answering.

Seventh-day was spent in packing to prepare for the journey before me; and the way now clearly opening for it, I requested that the committee, who were entrusted with the care of providing me with a companion, should meet, and that I should be allowed to sit with them during their deliberations. I endeavoured to open to the committee my trying situation, having left my native

land to visit Friends on this continent, and no prospect opening of any Friend as a companion so suitable but S. Wood ; besides I should not feel myself bound to accept of a companion, though proposed by the committee, with whom I could not fully unite. These remarks appeared to make some impression on the mind of one of the individuals who were opposed to S. Wood's going with me, and I was told were likely to have influence in the monthly meeting. The committee commissioned one of their company to lay the matter again before the next monthly meeting, and to see that some Friend took charge of me to Purchase quarterly meeting.

First-day : attended Hester-street meeting in the morning ; Rose-street in the afternoon : the latter meeting I sat through under much silent suffering, except at the close, when my mouth was opened in a few words : in the evening we had a large company at my quarters, mostly young people : a time of solemn quiet took place.

## CHAPTER XXXII.

SECOND-DAY morning, 30th of 10th mo. 1826 : I left the hospitable abode of Elizabeth Bowns in Broom-street, accompanied by my esteemed friend Henry Hull, in order to attend Purchase quarterly meeting ; and reached Richard and Abigail Mott's before it was dark. Third-day, we attended the select quarterly meeting, which was small, a time in which we were favoured to witness the wing of Divine regard stretched over us, contriting some of our spirits ; for which favour the meeting appeared to separate under feelings of reverent gratitude and thankfulness to Him, who sits on the throne, and the Lamb immaculate, only worthy of all adoration and praise, world without end.

The next day the quarterly meeting for church affairs commenced ; the meeting for worship previous to entering upon the business was very largely attended by men and women Friends. I doubt not to some it proved a time of close exercise and travail, that the Truth might have dominion over that spirit which was secretly at work in the minds of divers of the members of this quarterly meeting, to divide in Jacob, and scatter in Israel. The meeting for discipline then proceeding with its business, the queries were answered from the different monthly meetings, but in a summary way. I found, if peace of mind was to be my portion as I passed along, however it might be in the cross to the creaturely part, there was no other way to come at it but by simple obedience ; I therefore ventured to cast before Friends the loss which I believed they were sustaining, by this summary way in which the answers were brought up to the quarterly meeting from some of the monthly meetings ; thus depriving themselves of that help from the quarterly meeting, which otherwise they might receive by clear, explicit answers. It appeared to me, there was reason to fear the discipline in some of the monthly meetings was handled in a superficial manner ; and by keeping under my exercise, strength was afforded me, I hope I may say, in the wisdom of Truth, to point out the means whereby they might be enabled to apply a remedy : what I had to offer appeared to be well received, many solid Friends expressing their concurrence with my concern on the various subjects I had

alluded to, and their thankfulness that I had been strengthened thus faithfully to labour amongst them.

Fifth-day morning, the parting meeting for worship was held : soon after I had taken my seat in the meeting, I was brought under exercise, as I apprehended for religious service ; but before it appeared to me that the time was fully come to stand upon my feet, a stranger to me in the body of the meeting expressed a very few words, but so fully comporting with the opening my mind had been occupied with, that I felt myself brought under a very great strait ; for my exercise continued, and yet I hesitated to stand up, lest the individual who had broken the silence of the meeting should be in league with that disaffected part of the body, which had been gaining ground in this quarterly meeting. My faith became very closely proved : I hesitated to move with the opening, lest I should become instrumental in feeding that, which my friends might think wanted starving, and yet I knew not how to keep silence : the struggle became very trying to my bodily frame, as well as to my deeply oppressed mind, fearing I had done wrong in not standing up sooner. But through patience and perseverance in endeavouring to come at the mind and will of my Divine Master, strength was given me to rise, and help administered to acquit myself, I had good ground for believing, to the satisfaction of my friends. On inquiry, I found my fears relative to the Friend who broke silence in the meeting, were without foundation : after the meeting closed, I humbly hope I may say my heart overflowed with feelings of gratitude to that Divine Power, who had not suffered me to become an easy prey to that evil one, who is watching his opportunities, if possible, to frustrate the Lord's work from going forward in the earth. We proceeded to Hester Griffin's to take our dinner : my expected companion, S. Wood had not arrived, but my mind was preserved calm and quiet, which I considered a great favour, and a state I had no power to command.

Henry Hull, intending to proceed to Peck's-kiln, and the way opening in my mind to accompany him there, we moved forward accordingly to James Brown's, who afterwards kindly offered to be my companion to Nine Partners' quarterly meeting ; Henry Hull then left me and returned home. The carriage which my friends of New York had kindly provided for me, was not considered, by Friends who were acquainted with some of the road we should have to travel, at all, equal to such an undertaking ; and J. Brown offering to accommodate me with a family waggon of his own, much better calculated to stand the hard work I should require, I gladly accepted it ; yet it tried me to be obliged to take a step that might appear in any degree like passing a slight on the kindness of Friends of New York, in setting me out as they had done, with their best



to accommodate my advanced age. About six o'clock this evening S. Wood arrived at my quarters, for which I felt thankful, his monthly meeting having furnished him with an unlimited minute to attend me : what can I say, but that it was the Lord's doing, and can it be otherwise than marvellous in mine eyes ?

The next morning, S. Wood, James Brown, and myself left Peek's-kiln for Poughkeepsie. At Fish-kill we halted to give our horses a bait ; while sitting in the hotel a funeral passed the window attended only by persons of colour, which excited remarks from some company who were in the room with us, rather of a contemptuous nature ; this wounded my feelings, and the behaviour of the mourners appearing to be becoming the occasion, awakened in my mind a degree of sympathy towards this degraded part of our fellow-creatures, accompanied by a willingness to join them to the place of interment ; but as we were circumstanced, having barely enough time to reach our place of destination before it would be dark, and not knowing the course they were taking, I kept my feelings to myself. We proceeded on our journey, and to my agreeable surprise, after we had left Fish-kill about one mile, I thought I observed the carriages standing that had passed our hotel with the funeral. I suppose my remarks thereon and my manner of doing it, caused my companions to propose our halting, when we came to the place of burial, which we accordingly did : S. Wood accompanying me, we proceeded into the burial-ground ; the body had been deposited, and the last sod was then being laid on the grave, and some of the company had already quitted the grave-side. I requested the company to be called together again, which they seemed to do willingly ; a solemn quiet ensued, and that which I had to offer appeared to have a humbling effect on many of their minds : the quietness they manifested, and the weight over many of their countenances, encouraged me to believe this act of dedication, which I had been thus strengthened to make, was received with feelings of gratitude on the part of the burial-company. We were favoured to reach the residence of my countryman, Thomas Smarts, at Poughkeepsie, before the day-light had quite disappeared.

First-day morning, attended the usual meeting at this place, which was large, several of the town's people being present. A meeting had been appointed at my request, for members and attenders of meetings, at Pleasant Valley this afternoon, about the distance of seven miles ; the meeting was largely attended by Friends and others, and we took up our abode for the night with Silas Downing, who, with his attentive wife, amply cared for all our wants.

Second-day morning, 6th of 11th mo. we proceeded on our journey to Nine Partners, and took up our quarters at Friends' school.

and were kindly cared for by the superintendents, Asa Upton and his wife. The select quarterly meeting beginning at eleven this morning, I found myself encircled by a goodly company, as far as external appearances went, which led me to hope, if the inside of the cups and platters was in accordance with the plainness and simplicity of the outside, we should be favoured with a precious meeting together, and have to declare, as in the beginning of our religious Society, the glory of the Lord so filled the house of each of our hearts, that there was no room or occasion for the ministers to minister. Alas ! I had no such glad tidings to proclaim, but to warn some present against that spirit of disaffection, which was secretly at work in the hearts of many of the disobedient members of our religious Society, sapping the foundation of that true religion and righteousness, which aforesaid they had been favoured in some degree to experience.

The next morning, Friends assembled to transact the affairs of Society : the meeting for worship was large ; we were early favoured to settle down in outward quiet, and the calming, quieting influence of the Spirit of Truth prevailed, to the gathering of the minds of very many to that true place of waiting, where the voice of the Divine Counsellor is clearly understood. The time of our thus sitting together was a laborious one to me : being fearful to break in upon the precious quiet that was over the meeting : but keeping in the patience, strength for the work was mercifully given, whereby I was enabled not only to obtain relief to my own mind, but to the relief of the honest-hearted members of the meeting. In the evening I felt my mind drawn towards having a religious opportunity with the children of the school, of which there is a considerable number, both young men and boys, young women and girls. It is the practice amongst Friends on this continent, in farming districts, to have their children at home for the summer six months ; partly in consequence of the difficulty they are under to hire labourers in the summer-season, and partly because some of those masters, who undertake to teach school in country places, only engage for the winter half-year : thus many of both sexes are kept at school to an age when the youth in Great Britain have nearly finished their apprenticeship. I proposed to the superintendent and my companions, to have a sitting with the children ; the scholars were collected accordingly, and I hope our time together was not unprofitably passed. Although I am unable to record any account of this quarterly meeting for discipline, yet I believe it will not be well to omit the following observations made to me by a Friend in the station of elder in this meeting, after it closed, hoping they may prove a strength to some, and caution to others. " Some soldiers appear valiant by the fire-side, but when they are brought into the field of battle, they manifest great cowardice : we have too many of these fire-side valiants, who

have done harm amongst us, by conversing boldly by their firesides on the declension which has taken place in our Society, but have not been bold enough to declare, as they should have done, their sentiments in our meetings, which is the right place for them to relieve themselves. I am glad to find we have one valiant come amongst us, and I hope thou wilt be able to proceed as thou hast begun, by avoiding much, if any, information out of meeting, speaking to matters only from the knowledge that is given thee as they arise in thy own mind in passing along; and then, thou wilt have nothing to fear: if the archers should shoot at thee, they will not be able to wound thee; so be encouraged to hold on as thou hast begun." These remarks felt like a cordial to my mind, coming at a time when I was disposed, as I often have been in passing along from meeting to meeting, to call in question what I have communicated, and to fear my coming over to this continent was all a delusion of the enemy, and to conclude at times it would be safer for me to pack up, and return home.

Fourth-day morning, the closing meeting commenced, which was largely attended; some few not in profession with Friends gave us their company: much religious labour fell to the lot of others, until near the close of the meeting, when my mind became charged with that, which to me appeared like a little legacy to leave behind me, but which from a fear of dissipating that precious covering that was over the meeting, by making unnecessary additions, I had nearly taken away with me: but venturing on my feet in that faith which ever did and ever will give the victory over carnal reasoning, I was favoured to obtain relief to my own mind, and the meeting closed under that precious covering which, as a canopy, had been spread over us; some Friends whose judgment in spiritual matters I thought I was fully warranted in esteeming, after the meeting closed, expressed their entire satisfaction with my having thus given up.

My companion, S. Wood and I rode to Stamford, and took up our abode with Henry Hull and wife, from whom we received every marked attention our wants needed. We the next day attended Stamford select quarterly meeting: owing to the state of things in this meeting, and the oppression the living members of it were labouring under, I had not smooth things to declare, as I found nothing would tend to my relief but plain dealing and firmness in my manner of expressing myself, both on the answers to the queries, and such other subjects as came before the meeting: from observations made by some members of the meeting before it closed, I was led to hope my services amongst them had been acceptable. The meeting for discipline was large, divers Friends from Purchase and Nine Partners' quarters giving their company. As we intended being at Hudson meeting on First-day morning, Friends proposed a meeting being appointed

for me at Athens on First-day evening and one at Cocymans on Second-day ; but not being able to see my way clear to have a meeting appointed at Athens, I requested further time to consider of it ; and weighing this subject in the best way I was capable, I found I must not venture upon such a meeting on my own account.

First-day, we crossed the Hudson-river to Hudson ; on our reaching the meeting-house, we found the meeting already gathered : if my feelings respecting this assembly were correct, it appeared to me but very few of our members were truly awake to their best and eternal interest ;—a more distressing meeting I had not sat since landing on the shore of the United States. I felt thankful when the meeting closed,—the retrospect affording a consoling evidence I had not kept back aught I should have left behind me for those assembled : a dear friend, after meeting, told my companion, he knew of no meeting of Friends where there was more need of the doctrine that had been delivered than Hudson. Hannah Barnard, who made such a schism amongst Friends in Ireland, by spreading unsound religious principles in that nation, was once a member of this meeting.

Second-day morning, we proceeded to Cocymans : the horse-boat, which was to take us across the river, being aground on the other side, we were detained ; and the road we had to travel being up-hill, and full of large stones, we were not able to make much speed without danger of injuring our carriage ; the time for the meeting was left to the Friends there, so that we were not acquainted with it. I became very uncomfortable, fearing we should not reach the meeting-house in proper time : on our getting in sight of the meeting-house, we observed the Friends standing about it as if the meeting had then broken up, but we reached them before any had gone away except one young woman. Friends collected around us, and we informed them the cause of our not reaching in due time, and our willingness now to sit down with them if they saw it best to go into the meeting-house again ; or, if it appeared to them more desirable, a meeting should be held in the afternoon, we were quite willing to conform to their wishes : after considering our proposals, Friends concluded to go into the meeting-house again, and the meeting soon became settled. From a sense which I believed I had given me of the deplorable state of things in this meeting, with respect to those who are at ease in a bare profession of religion, as well as in respect of the youth, it proved a time of sore exercise before I could rise upon my feet ; but by patiently waiting upon the gift bestowed, strength was in due time given to engage in the work which I believed was assigned me. The terms I had to express myself in were such, as at times caused me to halt, before I could utter what came before me ; my halting was not the effect of doubting what came before



me for communication being in full accordance with the sorrowful state of things, but from a fear lest some should not be willing to bear what I had to offer, and so leave the meeting; but this did not prove to be the case, Friends remained quiet until we broke up the meeting. Before we separated, some Friends acknowledged themselves much satisfied they had not dispersed, as well as their unity with what had been offered in the meeting; saying, there was great need for it, and if the young people were but willing to receive it, this meeting would prove a blessing to them. We accompanied Thomas Bedel and wife home, where we took up our quarters for the night.

Accompanied by our kind landlord and his son, we proceeded toward Duanesburg, in order to attend that quarterly meeting: after travelling about thirty-four miles of very bad road, and passing over some dangerous, broken wooden bridges, we reached the house of Isaac Gage in safety; for which favour, I humbly hope I may say, feelings of gratitude flowed from my heart to that Almighty Power, who had watched over, and thus preserved us from harm.

The next morning we attended the select quarterly meeting, which was small. I endeavoured to be found faithful to the portion of labour assigned me among this little company; I was ready to hope there was good ground for believing it would not all be in vain.

Fifth-day, 16th of 11th mo. 1826. The quarterly meeting for discipline was held, which I understood was thinly attended by its members; both the meeting for worship and that for discipline were to me trying meetings: at our quarters in the evening we had a comfortable sitting together, and the day closed with the language of "Return unto thy rest, O my soul! for thou hast been abundantly cared for;" and whether the people will hear or forbear, I thought I was favoured with an evidence that, by co-operating with that helping hand which was in mercy extended, I should be clear.

The next day a meeting for worship was held; many not in profession with our Society gave us their company: although I believe the command was given me early to hand out to the people, yet I had not courage to obey, until the words given me to stand up with, became so much as a fire in my bones, that I durst no longer withhold them; my service (if any fell to my lot) was to our own members. After meeting, we rode fourteen miles to Schenectady, over a very rough road and broken bridges, to the house of John Marsielus.

Seventy-day morning, we rode to the widow Merrick's, at New Town, who had buried her husband only the preceding day; we found her in a very feeble state, as to her bodily health, surrounded by many children, who appeared disposed to endeavour

to supply the loss of their father, by their kindness and attention to her.

First-day morning, attended New Town meeting, which was small, and was much hurt by the disorderly gathering of it. If my feelings be correct, the life of religion is at a very low ebb amongst the members; yet I was comforted in a hope, there was preserved a little remnant, whose garments had been measurably kept clean, and that there was a hopeful prospect in some young men. After meeting, we proceeded to Troy, about fourteen miles, to attend a meeting in the evening at my request, for members and such as attend our meetings. As we passed down the street to the meeting-house, observing how much the lights in the meeting-house would attract attention, I feared it would bring a crowd of those of other religious societies, contrary to my view; on entering the yard and the house, this appeared to be the case. I took my seat in the gallery, but for awhile I would gladly have been anywhere than where I then was: but endeavouring after resignation to my present allotment, in being seated with such a mixed congregation, earnest were my cries to Him who hears in secret, that He would be pleased so to watch over me, that I might keep my right place amongst those now assembled; which secret petition, I humbly hope I may say, was mercifully granted, to the contrit-  
ing of my spirit, on the retrospect of this evening's work.

Second-day morning, we left Troy and rode to Saratoga, and on the following day, we attended the select quarterly meeting: from the answers to the queries that were exhibited, gospel order appeared sorrowfully broken in upon; the prospect of making any remarks was trying to human nature, from that sense I thought I had given me, of a high-towering self-exalted disposition, which was uppermost in the minds of some, who wanted to take the lead in transacting the business of the Society; but as there was a waiting in patience until the right time was fully come for me to open my mouth, strength was given for the labour of this day; not only to the relief of my own mind, but, if expressions are to be depended upon, to the comfort of the little remnant of that quarterly meeting, whose garments are not stained by the polluted religious principles, (if they can be called religious,) afloat in the minds of some of the members of this part of the body. Ruth — and Sarah U. Smith, of Stanford quarterly meeting, travelling as ministers, with certificate, very acceptably made a part of our company.

Fourth-day morning: the meeting for worship commenced: several women, with their young children being present, and the children becoming rather restless and uneasy, it was needful for me to aim at having my mind brought into patience, (there appearing no alternative, but that it must be endured,) even by knowing it to be stayed where all that would disturb comes to be subdued, so

that we are mercifully carried above it: this was the case with our Friends in the beginning, when the rude rabble came into their meetings with officers and drums to break them up. The difficulty must be great to some of the parents of these children, for they must either stay at home themselves, or bring their children to meeting with them, not having the means to enable them to hire servants to take charge of the children, or frequently no person to be hired they can fully confide in: I thought I could sympathize with my sisters who were placed under any of these circumstances, and bid them God speed, in pursuing this their often trying path of duty. A practice amongst Friends in country situations was a greater annoyance to me, than the infants that were brought to meeting, namely, the bringing their dogs with them, and oftentimes into the meeting-house;—two or three sometimes are walking about the house during the whole of the meeting for worship, and if not in the house, quarrelling and barking on the outside great part of the meeting-time: this not being a matter of necessity, I found myself called upon to protest against such a disorderly practice. The meeting for discipline commenced its business, and it was sorrowfully evident, from the answers to the queries, that the enemy of all righteousness had made his inroads into each of the monthly meetings: breaches of love and unity were acknowledged by them all; and, from the manner in which these deficiencies were passed over by the meeting, there appeared very little prospect of any good being done at present. Those who were preserved from the contaminating influence of infidel principles, which were so evidently at work in the minds of some who placed themselves in the fore-rank, and were endeavouring, if possible, to bring all to their anti-christian level, yet these had suffered fear so far to take hold of their minds, that they were robbed of that strength, which would have been as a shield of defence in every of these times of discouragement and dismay.

The next day the concluding meeting for worship was held: after dinner Samuel Wood and myself rode to Milton, and took up our abode at Jonathan More's.

Sixth-day, we proceeded towards Mayfield meeting-house, intending to be there on First-day. We found the road very rough, and very dangerous, from the snow that had fallen in the night and the frost; but our greatest difficulty had not as yet come to our knowledge. At a distance we observed a cloud of smoke in the valley, which we found, on reaching the bottom of the hill, was occasioned by a house taking fire very near to the bridge we should have to pass over; it was then burning, and those in attendance had laid some of the principal timbers that were on fire on the bridge, which obliged us to venture our horses and carriage down a very rugged descent and through the brook: although I

had full confidence in my companion, yet the prospect of such an expedient as this was a trial of my faith. We made a halt at our kind friend Seaman Carpenter's, at Galloway: here we refreshed ourselves and our horses. A little matter I had to offer before we proceeded again, and we had cause to hope our visit was a seasonable one. A Friend went with us, whose road home was part of our way to our next halting-place; he kindly offered to be guide to the end of this day's journey; but as we understood from him the road we had to take was not difficult to find, and he gave us such directions as my companion thought was quite sufficient, we declined his kind offer. But coming to where three roads met, we were brought into difficulty, only having been told of a right-hand and a left-hand road; we endeavoured to pursue the course we thought most likely to take us to our port, but we soon came to where three cross-roads met again which increased our difficulties: night was fast coming on, and no appearance of any house near to inquire at; the weather was also very cold and frosty. For a time I felt much tried, not expecting any other but that we should be obliged to sleep all night in our waggon, and the poor horses be exposed to suffering, after a hard day's work: at length I became more composed, and resolved to make the best of our trying situation: a hope also revived in my mind that we should be favoured to arrive safely at our intended resting-place, gloomy as the prospect was. We were, however, soon brought into fresh trials, by coming to a place where several roads met: whilst pondering over our increased difficulties, we espied some persons in a *sleigh* coming towards us: this was to me a cheering circumstance, and they soon put us on our right road, so that we reached the house of Levi Seymore in safety, but not before it was nearly dark. By him and his wife we were kindly cared for.

First-day morning, (26th of 11th mo.) we had three miles to ride to meeting; the road was so bad, it was more like being tossed about in a vessel at sea, than riding in a carriage: the morning being very wet, the meeting was smaller than usual, and greatly disturbed by late comers-in; in the evening we had two short religious opportunities.

Second-day morning, the snow had nearly all disappeared, and as there had been a frost in the night, the prospect of the journey before us bore a more cheerful aspect: the day was serene and clear, the sun shone warm, and our road was much on the banks of the Mohawk river; the lofty mountains clothed with fine towering evergreens, in many places reaching down nearly to the water's edge, added greatly to the beauty of the scenery; yet the bad roads we had to travel, and, at times, the precipices near the side of our road, little protected against danger, were a great take-off from my enjoyment. We were favoured to reach an inn for the night.



Third-day morning, we proceeded on our journey; our prospect appeared discouraging; a storm of snow coming on, and the road before us bad to travel, led me to consider the propriety of my movement, in proposing to make my way to Canada at this season of the year; but viewing the subject again, as well as I was capable of, I could see no other way for me but to proceed, and endeavour to attend the monthly meetings in Canada, before the next half-year's meeting: I therefore concluded, it would tend most to the peace of my own mind, to try and lose sight of any difficulties that should present themselves in the prosecution of apprehended duty. By great exertions we were favoured to reach Utica before it was so dark as to render it difficult for us to make our way through the town; and we were kindly cared for by our friend, Seth Peckham.

We made a few calls upon some of the Friends who reside here, and who manifested a wish we should have a meeting with them; but way not opening for it in my mind, we proceeded on our journey towards Bridgewater, and were favoured to reach the house of Daniel Mott, who, with his family, kindly supplied all our wants.

The next morning, (30th of 11th mo.) we pursued our journey to Brothertown, an Indian settlement. A member of our Society, formerly resided in this settlement, and his house being occupied by his son, we were bending our course that way, when we met our intended landlord, Thomas Dean, who halted on our informing him what had brought us so far on our way: he kindly offered to return with us, and render us every assistance in his power towards the object we had in view, but which help he told us we had nearly been deprived of, as his road would, in a few minutes more, have led him off that in which we were travelling. On our reaching his comfortable abode he welcomed us as acceptable guests, although he did not profess with Friends: by him and his wife every mark of hospitality was manifested. Six in the evening being proposed by Thomas Dean, as the most suitable time for the Indians to be collected, we were most easy to leave this matter entirely to his judgment. Having a prospect of a meeting with the Stockbridge Indians the next day, he kindly sent forward a messenger to fix the time for a meeting with them. The school-house in Brothertown was the place concluded upon for the meeting it was apprehended from the shortness of the notice, the badness of the roads, and the probability of the night being dark, that the attendance would not be large. At the time appointed we proceeded to the school-house; the meeting was long in gathering, but after it was fully gathered, a precious covering was to be felt. For a considerable time, such was my emptied and stripped state of mind, that I was tempted to regret I ever had the people called together; but endeavouring to keep patient

under these provings, a very short simple sentence came weightily before my mind to stand up with, and by yielding to this little opening, more enlargement was known. Great quietness was observed through the whole of the meeting. Our kind landlord informed us, a more orderly meeting had not been known there: I humbly hope I was not deficient in labouring after feelings of gratitude for this distinguished token of the continuation of Divine help. As the Indians came into the school-house, I observed they placed, in an erect manner, on each side of the fire-place, very long pieces of stick, like wands: this, on inquiry, I was informed, was light-wood, burning like a torch or link, which the Indians had provided to conduct them to their own houses again. After the meeting closed, we observed those burning sticks moving about in various directions; the number that assembled being considerable.

At an early hour in the morning we left the abode of our kind friend Thomas Dean, whose care for us every way appeared to have been unremitting; we were accompanied by a young man, an Indian, as our guide to the settlement of the Stockbridge Indians. We had a dirty, rough, hilly Indian road to travel, which occasioned us to be rather behind the time appointed for the meeting; it was to have been held at Captain Henderick's, an old Indian chief; but on reaching his habitation, it appeared he had been suddenly seized in the night with some bodily indisposition, and his bed was in the room where the meeting was to have been held. In consequence of this circumstance, we held our meeting at the house of an Indian woman; she had been partly brought up by a Friend of Philadelphia, but after she grew to woman's estate, returned into the settlement of her ancestors, and resumed the Indian dress and manners: she evidently retained a very grateful remembrance of the kindness she had received from Friends, and the sense of obligation she was under to them, for their care of her in early life; and seemed pleased she had it in her power to accommodate us with a place for the meeting, and to care for us for the night, for which it appeared she had ample means. The meeting was small, but we had good ground for believing it proved satisfactory; the Indians generally behaved in a solid and attentive manner, and appeared reluctant to leave us when the meeting closed. This settlement of the Stockbridge Indians, we understood, had been of late years greatly reduced, near one thousand one hundred of them having emigrated to the west of this settlement at Statesburgh, near Green Bay, in order that they might get out of the way of those temptations they found themselves exposed to by the increase of the white people settling amongst them; choosing rather to endure the deprivations they would have to meet with in a new settled country, for the sake of that quietness and simplicity, which,

(from the conversation we had with some, who are now again on the wing to take their departure,) they consider to be most consistent with a truly religious life; they told us they had already been to see the spot they were about to emigrate to, and they appeared to rejoice at the prospect of the quiet they should enjoy with those gone before them. From the accounts given us, I could not doubt, that the conduct of the white people towards this artless, and (unless first provoked to acts of violence) unoffending race of mankind, had been injurious, by their using every artifice to entice them to drink until they became drunk, and then taking the advantage of them by getting possession of their lands. I marvel not at the expressions of Red Jacket, the great Indian chief of the Buffalo Indians, which, I have been well informed, was to this effect:—"Whether the Great Spirit sent the white people amongst us or not, I cannot tell; but this I can tell, since they have come amongst us, they have taught us many bad practices which we never before were acquainted with." A sorrowful tale for a poor uneducated Indian to tell of any professing the Christian name! Our kind Indian hostess proposed sending word to Oneida, of our desire to have a meeting to-morrow with the Indians of that settlement, which offer we gladly accepted; they also proposed to guide us there, provided we would take up our quarters at her house until the following day, which we cheerfully accepted. The evening was passed over very much to our satisfaction, part of it occupied with a religious opportunity in her own family, and hearing her relate some interesting statements, relative to some of her own and her Indian neighbours' progress under the difficulties which they had been exposed to from time to time, through the treachery of an agent and missionary, appointed by the State to care for them, who brought heavy expenses against them, and then took possession of some of their best land to cover their demands; she added, "We want none of their care, we are quite capable of caring for our affairs ourselves:"—this we were well satisfied was the case with our landlady, who appeared to possess powers of mind equal to most worldly transactions. She often appeared in raptures, when contrasting the disinterested conduct of Friends towards her and her Indian brethren, with that of the mercenary missionaries (as she said) and agents that had come amongst them.

Seventh-day morning, we left this hospitable Indian mansion, a name it fitly deserves, when compared with most other Indian huts; we were accompanied by our kind landlady, her step-father, and the daughter of the pious old Indian chief, Scannadore, and proceeded towards Oneida, having nothing but an Indian road to travel on: in consequence of a heavy fall of snow in the night, the deep holes which we had to pass being filled up, we could not avoid them, which made it trying to our horses and ourselves. In

one of these sloughs, our waggon gave such a crack, that I expected our axle-trees were broken, and that we should be set fast in the middle of it; my companion's courage appeared to serve him better than mine, and with help, we made our way safely out again. Having thus passed this slough, I was led to hope the worst was over, but I soon found we had a river to ford. This, however, we surmounted, and came to the school-house, where the meeting was to have been held, agreeable to appointment the night before; but it was much after the time fixed, owing to our difficulties in getting along. There being no gathering at the school house, as we had expected, we rode to the house of an Indian family, to whom the charge of giving notice had been entrusted; when, to our disappointment, we were told that so far from the notice having been given, they had been wholly unacquainted with our intention, and as the weather continued so very stormy and unfavourable for the people collecting, it would now be in vain to give notice. Proposals were made to us to remain at Oneida that night, the family of the house offering to accommodate us; but all that was within me capable of any feeling of what comfort was, recoiled at the prospect of taking up our abode here, from the extreme filthy appearance of the inhabitants, and every thing belonging to the house; and yet I durst not leave the settlement without being willing to do my part, by submitting to any deprivation of comfort in order to obtain a meeting amongst them. Whether our kind hostess, who had conducted us here, observed any thing in my countenance that bespoke unpleasant feelings, at the prospect of our accepting the proposal of stopping in this family for the night, or that she felt satisfied herself it was not likely we could make ourselves comfortable; she proposed our going further into the settlement, and trying to obtain accommodation at the house where the Episcopal preacher lodged, and which had been the residence of the chief Scannadore; this proposal I gladly fell in with, believing as I did, we could not possibly be *worsted* by this attempt.

On our arrival at the house, understanding the preacher was at home, we applied to him to know if we could be each accommodated with a bed, and such provision as the family afforded, and provision for our horses; which being submitted to the family, they engaged, if we were willing to take things rough as we found them, to do their best for our comfort; which to me was a cheering reply, inasmuch as cleanliness, as far as our eyes could see, was attended to. The prospect of the comfort we were likely to have in our new abode, when compared with the Indian house we had last left, was a fresh call for gratitude on my part, and I humbly hope I was not much, if at all, deficient in an endeavour to labour after it, and to say in the language of holy



David, "Bless the Lord, O my soul, and all that is within me bless his holy name, and forget not all his benefits!" who had thus made way for us in this wilderness, amongst an Indian race, to possess the comforts which the poor, frail tabernacle stands in need of. I gladly helped to unload our luggage, and cheerfully took possession of a seat in our new abode, manifesting myself to be at home. Way opening for it in my own mind, at a suitable time, I informed the preacher the errand that had brought us to the settlement of the Oneida Indians, producing to him my certificate to read; which having done, he proposed giving up his place of worship and congregation to-morrow to me, consisting of the Indians of this settlement, or to read to them the service of the day and not give them a sermon. On considering both these proposals in the best way I was qualified to do, it felt most easy to me to accept of his latter proposal, in doing which we afterwards were led to believe we had done right. But there appeared one great difficulty to attend my mind in yielding to this latter proposal, which I named to my kind friend who had made me this very liberal offer, which was, our sitting amongst them during the time of their religious performance with our hats on, feeling, as I did, a care on my mind to be preserved from wilfully hurting the feelings of those who did not profess with myself. In reply, he, with apparent cheerfulness, informed us, he did not wish us to depart in the least degree from our accustomed manner of acting in our own place of worship; thus this matter, which to me appeared as a huge mountain to encompass, was brought to a close, and peacefully so to my own mind. We passed the evening with the young man, the preacher, in his own apartment, which added much to our comfort. During our conversation, I found that if I had any thing to communicate to-morrow, it must be conveyed to them through an Indian interpreter, and that by our arrangement for the day, we should secure a better attendance, as they pretty generally attend their place of worship on a First-day.

First-day, at the time appointed, we proceeded with our friend the preacher to the meeting-place, a commodious building erected by the state, but at the expense of the Oneida settlement; the government disposing of so much of their land as covered the charges. On our arrival, our friend placed us in two chairs on the platform of what is called the altar, taking his seat in the reading-desk; the Indians, we were told, gathered very stragglingly at this time of the year, when deprived of the rays of the sun to show the correct time of the day, having scarcely a clock or watch in their possession. The women assembled with their clean blankets over their heads; such as had infants had them fastened upon a board, which board, with the infant thus secured, is placed in an erect position against the side of their seat; after which the mother appeared to have no further care; they

manifested a devotedness of soul to that Almighty Power before whom they professed to be thus assembled, equal to any thing in this way I had ever before witnessed. The solidity observable in the countenances of the women, and their whole deportment, was well worthy of imitation by such as may rank the highest amongst professing Christians. This seriousness of deportment was not so manifest amongst the men, who took the opposite side of the house to that of the women. Reading being gone through, our friend requested the interpreter (who is paid for his services by the state, but at the Indians' expense ultimately,) to inform the congregation they were not to expect, as heretofore, a sermon from him that day, as I had desired to hold a meeting amongst them, he had therefore given up that time to me which would have been thus occupied; after which a pause took place. Feeling my mind entrusted with matter to communicate, when I rose on my feet, my interpreter prepared himself to fulfil the engagement he had undertaken, for which I understood he was fully competent; solid attention appeared to be given to what I had to offer, and I was led to believe, from the orderly quiet manner in which they separated, that what had been communicated was understood and was well received by them. Feeling my mind relieved from further service amongst them, I informed our friend to that effect, on which he immediately gave out a hymn. I could see no other way for us but quietly to keep our seats, which we did during the performance of this solemn act, for so it felt to me to be with many of them; if my feelings on the occasion were correct, not a doubt remaining in my mind (although I could not understand a word, it being in the Indian language) but that many of them felt the awful import of the words they uttered. The women appeared to take the most active part, the melodious sound, with the frequent gradual rise and fall of their voices, equalled in melody and solemnity any thing of the kind which I had before been a witness to. After the meeting closed, we returned to our lodgings and took our dinner. I felt well rewarded in my own mind that we had thus pressed through the various difficulties that had presented, to obtain a meeting with these Indians. After dinner, under feelings of near affection, which we had reason for believing were mutual, we parted from our kind friend the preacher and the family, who had every way in their power, I believe, cared for us, and rode twelve miles towards the settlement of the Onandaga Indians, and we took up our abode for the night at an inn.

Second-day morning, 4th of 12th mo. 1826, we pursued our journey; the roads had been so much cut up, with deep holes, which we could not at times avoid passing through, made travelling this day very fatiguing. About noon we were favoured to reach the house of a member of our Society, in

the Onandaga settlement, who, with his family, are placed there by the Yearly Meeting of New York, for the improvement of the Indians of this settlement. On inquiry, I found there was but little probability of our having a meeting with the Indians of this settlement, the men being mostly gone hunting for deer, and from the difficulty of procuring an interpreter who would be fully competent to the task. We spent three days in the settlement, calling at some of the Indian huts, and viewing the improvements that had taken place under the care of Friends. We had frequent visits from the chief, who is in possession of a large stock of cattle and pigs, and his farm well cultivated and fenced, which we observed was very much the case in this settlement, as far as we went over this beautiful and fruitful valley. I much regretted our want of a suitable interpreter, as it foreclosed our making some inquiries which we might have felt disposed to do, and which I had no doubt would have produced from them undisguised and disinterested replies. The evening before we left the house of our kind friends, it appeared that it would tend to the relief of my own mind to request a sitting with the family of the chief, his grandson, (who speaks English,) and such of the Indians who inclined to give us their company. The chief, his grandson, two men, and seven women attended: after I had relieved my mind of what came before me, a pause took place, and the grandson of the chief, in a feeling manner, endeavoured by little and little to do his best to communicate to his grandfather and the other Indians the substance of what I had been delivering. Then the chief, in reply, said it had afforded him great comfort, that I had been thus sent across the great water to visit them, and that he hoped his grandson would remember what had been delivered by me, and would not be suffered to return to his old bad ways again, but keep on more and more improving in his good conduct; adding, that his mind had been comforted under the feelings he was favoured with, whilst I was communicating amongst them good counsel. The next morning we affectionately parted from them and the kind family, under whose roof we had been so amply cared for.

Whilst in the Onandaga settlement, desirous of having some correct view of the belief which the Indians have of God and a future state, I was informed they were cautious of conversing on these subjects; but some months after I had visited the settlement, a kind friend there, by letter furnished me with the following particulars, which I believe it right for me to give a place in these memoirs, not doubting their correctness, from what I had previously heard: "The Indians' belief concerning a God is, that there is a great and good Spirit, who is omnipotent, omniscient, omnipresent, the Creator of every thing that is good; but that he never had any thing to do with evil, nor could, for it is contrary to his nature; that he has not only made man intelligent, but has, in

infinite mercy, given him a portion of his own good Spirit, to preserve him from all evil, and instruct him in every thing that is proper to be done; that from this source arises man's accountability, and that he will receive a reward in exact proportion to his works, whether good or evil. They also believe in the immortality of the soul, future rewards and punishments, and a perpetual judgment-seat in the mind, which is always accusing or justifying us for our conduct; that heaven is a place inexpressibly delightful, where the good will live with the Great Spirit eternally: their idea is, that the passage, or bridge, that leads to this happy place, is not broader than a hair or the edge of a knife; yet that there is no difficulty in the good passing it, for angels meet them, and conduct them over; they also believe, that beneath this narrow passage there is a dark, horrible pit, full of every loathsome and tormenting disease, where the wicked are for ever punished; that when the wicked attempt to cross this bridge, there is no help afforded them; they therefore fall into it, and it is impossible for them to get out again." "I know this," says the Friend, "to be a correct statement, having resided several years amongst them."

After leaving the Onandaga settlement we proceeded to Skaneateles, and reached the house of Lydia Mott. During the frost, my foot slipped off the step of our waggon, whereby I received a considerable wound on my leg, and being exposed to the frosty air, it became very much swelled and inflamed: I felt thankful to find I had reached the house of a good *doctress* and nurse, by whose kind and unremitting attention my leg soon began to mend, which I esteemed a favour, as the frost was now becoming very severe, and we were likely soon again to be much exposed to its pinching influence, which would have proved unfavourable to its healing.

First-day, (10th of 12th mo.) attended meeting at this place. The next day was held the preparative meeting, which was attended by a committee under appointment of the monthly meeting of Scipio, to visit the several preparative meetings of this monthly meeting. The answers to the queries were brought into the meeting, ready prepared by the overseers. This practice placed me in a trying situation, inasmuch as, to make objections to what was brought in by the overseers appeared like doubting the veracity of the Friends who had prepared the document for the meeting; and yet I found nothing but faithfulness and plain-dealing would acquit me in the sight of that Divine Being, who alone was able to sustain through the future trials that might await me in my wilderness' journey through time: I therefore earnestly besought the Lord for counsel in my movements, and when that was in mercy clearly unfolded, for his sustaining help, that faithfulness might mark all my steppings in that meeting. Before the meeting closed, vocal acknowledgments of gratitude



were made by a Friend of the monthly meeting, for the merciful help that had been dispensed, during the transacting the weighty matters that came before the meeting.

Third-day morning, we had nine miles to ride to attend Sempronius meeting: when breakfast had closed, feeling a call of duty to relieve my mind of an exercise which it had been brought under, I endeavoured to seek after holy help to discharge this duty: we parted under feelings of affection for each other, and were favoured to reach the meeting-house before the time of Friends' assembling, for which there was cause of thankfulness, considering the badness of our roads. The preparative meeting, being under adjournment to accommodate the visiting committee, was held here this day: we here met with a few well-concerned members of our religious Society; but there was reason to fear, as it respected others, little more remained with them than a claim to outward membership. Although my being willing to sit where the people sit, as it respected the bulk of this meeting, was the way to enter into suffering, which the creature was ready to recoil at; yet I was sensible this must be the case with us, if we labour in the Lord's vineyard to the benefit of the people. After meeting was over, my companion, myself, and the committee, proceeded towards Salmon Creek meeting, and took up our abode at Jacob Griffin's.

The next morning we attended meeting at Salmon Creek; the state of the Society here was trying to the rightly-exercised members amongst themselves as well as the visitors; yet it was pleasant to find a willingness to receive the close doctrine that was offered amongst them, and to observe the apparent love that was manifested towards us at our parting. After meeting, we proceeded towards Scipio, and took up our abode for the night at the house of the widow Line's.

Fifth-day morning, attended Scipio preparative meeting: the meeting held long, Friends appearing disposed to go into the state of this meeting more fully than I at first expected would be the case; much counsel was imparted through different instruments, I humbly hope, rightly fitted for the work. The meeting closed to good satisfaction upon the whole, though the spirit of unsoundness of principle, and a disesteem of the Sacred Writings, which afterwards made such havock in this monthly meeting, had already a little manifested itself at this time. After meeting, we rode to Aaron.

Sixth day, we attended the North-street preparative meeting, where we found a considerable body of goodly-looking Friends, with whom we had as comfortable a meeting as any that has fallen to our lot, since coming into this monthly meeting; I considered it a favour, our being thus incorporated with the com-

mittee during our passing through these monthly meetings: after meeting, we rode to Union Springs.

The following day, we attended the preparative meeting: here Friends have a commodious, nearly new-built meeting-house, beautifully situated in a very retired spot, with but quite a small number to attend it. If I had any sense given me of the state of our Society here, the life of religion was at a very low ebb; yet it was pleasant to find a disposition on the part of the members to go further into the state of things than the answers to the queries brought in by the overseers had done. Intending to go to Junius meeting to-morrow, and the distance being too far for us to reach in the morning, we requested Friends' assistance in pointing out a suitable stopping-place to-night: the Seneca Falls was proposed to us, where we were informed resided a family who were members of our religious Society: after taking our leave of the committee, and the kind friends with whom we took up our abode, we pursued our journey to the Falls.

First-day morning, we rode to Junius before breakfast: here we found a large new-built meeting-house, erected under the expectation of there being a very considerable settlement of Friends, but after the house was finished, most of the new settlers emigrated to some of the back settlements; in consequence of which the meeting was small, as to members of our Society; a few not in profession with Friends attended; but the whole of us made a desolate appearance. The straggling and unseasonable manner of the meeting's gathering, together with the careless posture in which some took and kept their seats, was cause of much exercise to my mind; the sorrowful tendency of which was felt, by keeping the meeting for a length of time in a very unsettled state. I found my peace very much depended on my being faithful, by recurring to these painful circumstances: before we separated, in fear and trembling I ventured on my feet, craving of the Lord to keep me faithful to his requiring; and in the course of what I had to communicate on these disorderly proceedings, I was led to address some individuals implicated therein, who were taking an active part in the concerns of the Society, and to lay before them the loss they were sustaining themselves, and the danger there was of their example encouraging others in these practices. After I had been thus engaged, when taking my seat again, my mind was plunged into great suffering, through a fear that took possession of it, that I had not had a sufficient warrant for expressing myself as pointedly as I had done, and that it had been the enemy's work to lead me into difficulty: I would gladly have slunk out of the house before the meeting broke up, to miss remarks that I thought I should not escape hearing. Before I got clear of the meeting-house

premises, when the meeting broke up, a goodly-like aged woman Friend came up to me, giving me her hand in an affectionate manner, exhorted me with much apparent feeling of mind, to be faithful in my moving along in the service assigned me amongst Friends, adding, with tears, "I am one of those thou was led so pointedly to address near the close of the meeting, and I hope thy exercise will not be lost upon me." These remarks felt as a cordial to my tried mind, accompanied by feelings of gratitude, that dismay had not been permitted quite to overwhelm me; I did not doubt my Divine Master well knew the need there was for me to pass through this dispensation, to humble and keep down the creaturely part in me.

## CHAPTER XXXIII.

SECOND-DAY, 18th of 12th mo. 1826, we rode to Rochester, a new-settled city: in the evening, whilst sitting in the family with whom we abode, my mind was brought under religious exercise, accompanied with matter for communication; but conversation was so continually kept up, I felt unequal to come at that quiet my soul longed for, in order to obtain relief. I retired to bed, sad although not sick, a state of mind the Christian traveller must expect to be frequently baptized into, if a real desire continues alive in the soul to be made willing to suffer for and with Christ, whilst he continues to be under suffering and persecution in the hearts and minds of so many among us in the present day; this I believed I was given to see and understand, was sorrowfully the case in this meeting. A hope was awakened in my mind, that if I was careful to watch it, an opportunity might be found, should my exercise continue with me, at the close of our taking breakfast next morning; but by the coming in of persons of other societies, no quiet could be attained: this free access to the private apartments of Friends in this country, which those of other societies are allowed, is a great interruption to the orderly conducting of families, and I doubt not injurious at times to both parents and children, by the hearing of conversation inimical to their best welfare.

The next morning, we took our leave of the family who had kindly entertained us, accompanied by Henry Moser, we proceeded towards Hartland this night, and lodged at an inn. We continued our journey, and reached my kind countryman, Michael Robson's, in time to attend the select monthly meeting in the afternoon. Attended the monthly meeting the next morning, which was held in a log meeting-house: the meeting was not fully gathered until an hour after the time appointed, which had a very unsettling effect. I was constrained to endeavour to awaken the attention of the well-concerned members of the meeting to this subject, to consider if something more was not required than had been done towards a remedy: what service I had amongst the



Friends of this meeting, to the creaturely part was humiliating, yet I trust I had no cause to be dissatisfied with that which had fallen to my lot; the closing minute made on their books, after noticing my certificates, stated that my gospel labours had been acceptable.

I had requested my kind companion, Samuel Wood, to inform me when we were in the neighbourhood of any of the Indian settlements; this I found was now the case, and that the settlement of the Tonawonta Indians could be taken on our way to Canada, whither we intended soon to bend our course; I also learnt that there were Friends attending the monthly meeting who resided about nine miles from this settlement, and who were well acquainted with the Indians of the Tonawonta tribe, by being at times called upon to be in council with them, when any matters of importance between them and the white people claimed their attention. These Friends being spoken to on the subject, very kindly offered to give us any assistance in their power towards collecting them; but on turning the subject over in my own mind, I durst not give expectation at present of my being likely to accept of these kind offers of service.

Sixth-day morning: after rather a sleepless night, partly occasioned by the exercise of mind I was brought under, that I might be rightly directed in the matter respecting the Tonawonta Indians, and not have to return again, after I had passed the road that led to their settlement, we proceeded towards Lockport through the woods, on a new road. Little more, however, appeared to have been done to this road, than cutting down and clearing away the trees for carriages to pass, and making a few ill-contrived bridges, by laying trees across some of the worst of the swampy places which we must otherwise have passed through; these trees were placed the reverse of what they should have been, and some of them were so far apart, that the wheels of our carriage very narrowly escaped dropping down between two of these trees. Some of the mud-holes we had to go through were so deep, it was difficult for our horses, when appearing to exert their utmost strength, to raise us out of them again: a large tree had been blown down across our road, which at first sight threatened to impede our journey, but as no other way appeared for our help, we were obliged to risk our wheels, and exert our endeavours to get the waggon over it; which having accomplished, we pursued our course by a letter H which we found cut on the trees, denoting where the high road lay to our place of destination, which we were favoured to reach in safety, and were kindly received by Ralph Coomstock and family.

The next morning, we made a visit to a sick Friend, and a few other calls: I was led to hope our time thus spent had not

been unprofitably passed over, either to ourselves or to those we visited.

First-day morning ; we attended meeting at this place ; it was a new settlement of Friends ; the meeting was held in a log meeting-house ; it was much crowded by Friends and others. I almost despaired, for a considerable time, of our being able to arrive at such a quiet settlement in our minds, as to be favoured with any thing like a qualification to perform the important duty we professed to be met about ; but I humbly hope it was experienced by some of our company. I felt thankful when it closed, that our lot had been thus cast with Friends of this meeting. We dined with a young couple ; had a sitting in the evening in their family ; and thus this day closed, in addition to those gone before, to account for to a just and a jealous God,—an awful consideration !

A very heavy fall of snow occurred during yesterday and in the night ; the prospect of our proceeding towards Canada looked very discouraging, not knowing whether it would be better to take our waggon, or procure a sledge for our accommodation ; but on consulting our friends on the subject, they advised us to continue our waggon. Being given to understand, that on our way to Lewis Town, we should pass very near a settlement of the Tuscarora Indians, this brought me into fresh exercise ; yet I was preserved in a calm, quiet, and resigned state of mind, should we be called upon to make a halt at this settlement, and thus was I enabled to pass the remainder of the evening comfortably, under a hope I should be favoured (if I kept simple enough in my views, as we approached near to this settlement,) clearly to see what steps, if any, were to be taken towards having a meeting with them.

Third-day morning, (26th of 12th mo.) accompanied by Jesse P. Haines, we began our journey towards Lewis Town : my mind being preserved in quiet, and not disposed for conversation, afforded me an opportunity of endeavouring to come at a clear sight and sense of what would be right for me to do, when we arrived at the road that led to the settlement of the Tuscarora Indians. We halted at a tavern near the road which led to the settlement, on which I told my friends how it fared with me,—that I feared to pass on ; and yet the prospect of a meeting with them appeared very discouraging, from the probable difficulty of our being able to procure a suitable interpreter ; but after all, I was willing to leave my friends to do that which to them appeared to be for the best : on which my companion and our guide proceeded towards the settlement, to ascertain if a suitable interpreter could be found out, and if the Indians could be collected, in order to our having a meeting with them to-morrow morning. After a shorter absence

than I at all expected, they returned, informing me, that they had met with an aged man, who lived in the settlement, and acted as their interpreter, who engaged to give notice of the meeting to be held in their school house at ten o'clock to-morrow morning.

Fourth-day morning, the snow continuing to fall heavy, and the cold so very intense that it was said to be thirty degrees below zero, made the prospect of our having the Indians collected discouraging : on our arrival at the school-house, no Indians were assembled : we proceeded to the log-house of the interpreter, who assured us, notice had been given of our intention ; but as the morning was so stormy, and the cold so severe, it was doubtful whether many of them would venture out to attend the meeting. During our sitting with the interpreter, he gave us some account of a son of his, who had been long confined at his own home through sickness : from the impression made on my mind, I proposed to make him a visit : we proceeded to his log-house, found him a cripple in his limbs, but was kindly cared for by his mother and family, and he understood the English language well. After some time spent with him in conversation on various subjects, I found it best for me to endeavour after silence as much as possible, and when he put questions to me, to give as short a reply to them as I well could, so as not to give him to suppose I was offended at his so doing ; then watching my time to express that which it appeared to me was given to lay before him for his consideration, and the future government of his conduct. He appeared to settle down quietly, and ceasing to put any more questions, he afforded me a full opportunity to relieve my mind ; and at our parting, he expressed in a feeling manner his thankfulness for the counsel that had been communicated to him, and the desire which he felt, that the Divine protection might go with me and conduct me safe to my own home again. I thought if nothing further resulted from our coming to this settlement than this visit, I was well rewarded for it. We returned to the interpreter's house, but none of the Indians had arrived at the school-house ; it being now past eleven o'clock, and knowing how slow the Indians are in their movements, we concluded it would be best for us to wait until twelve o'clock before we took our departure. Whilst we were waiting in the interpreter's house, some Indians came in, whom I requested to take seats, and we dropped into a short quiet : that which I had to offer amongst them appeared to be well received, and at our parting they manifested signs of thankfulness for our visit.

We then proceeded on our way to Lewis Town, and after refreshing our horses and ourselves, having suffered not a little from the intense severity of the weather, we concluded to cross the Niagara river to Queen's-town this evening. The access to

the ferry-boat is down a very steep road, covered with ice, and having no guard at the side of it nor at the foot, (which is very near the edge of this deep river,) I could not divest my mind of apprehensions of great danger; but there appeared no alternative, Canada being the place I was to spend the winter in, and this appearing to me to be the route I must take. Our poor horses with all their care, could hardly keep any footing as they went down, so that it appeared miraculous the carriage did not overpower them; but we were favoured to reach the bottom in safety. The next difficulty to be encountered was, how to get the horses and carriage safely into the boat and out again, but to my humbling admiration, we were favoured to land safely on the shore of Upper Canada: gratitude clothed my mind to Him, who remains, as He ever was, sufficient to enable his creature man to bear all things and to endure all things, when in humble confidence he is made willing to cast his care wholly upon Him, who is God over all, blessed for evermore! We had another great steep to ascend to the custom-house, which, after such a day of severe travel, was exercising to us and heavy upon the horses. After passing the custom-house, we proceeded to our inn, in hopes of meeting with good provision and comfortable beds, after the difficulties which we had encountered. I could not doubt, but that the keeper of our inn was disposed, as far as his means would allow him, to do his best; our provision was not to be complained of, but our fire was so scanty, our lodging so miserably cold, and we were so sparingly supplied with covering, that I passed an uncomfortable night.

Fourth-day morning, we rode several miles to the tavern at the Niagara Falls to breakfast; we observed at a distance of at least five miles, the mist rising like a large white cloud in the air, from the immense fall of water that passes over this wonderful production of nature; and we were assured, when the wind is favourable for it, the roaring noise could be heard eighteen miles. After refreshing ourselves and our poor horses, we proceeded towards Black Creek; the snow was now so deep on the ground that our horses had hard work to drag our waggon along; after much patience on our parts, and perseverance on the part of our horses, we were favoured before dark to reach the house of Daniel Pounds, at Black Creek, who undertook to have a sledge provided for us to pursue our journey.

First-day morning, we attended Black Creek meeting. I had hard things to deliver in this meeting, yet I felt comfortable under the renewed assurance, that Divine mercy is still following the gainsayers amongst us, in order to bring them back again from that state of captivity to outward ease, indifference, and a life of indulgence to the creature, which many amongst us are giving proof of various ways that they have sunk into,—sitting



down fat and full, and kicking at those Divine reproofs which continue in mercy to be following them.

Fourth-day, 3d of 1st mo., 1827, I attended the select monthly meeting; but it was an hour after the time appointed our little company, of five in number, assembled: this circumstance occasioned the answers to the queries (which were brought to the meeting ready prepared) to be hurried through. The monthly meeting for business followed this meeting, commencing with a meeting for worship, which was largely attended by Friends, and some few persons not in profession with us: the answers to the queries occupied some considerable time, a desire being manifested by a few well-concerned Friends, that the true state of the meeting should be forwarded to the half-year's meeting: the meeting closed to a good degree of satisfaction.

The next morning, our sledge being in readiness for us, we left Daniel Pound's, and proceeded on a road newly-cut through the woods, about twenty-three miles to Pelham; a kind young man offering to take the charge of driving us, we gladly accepted his services, which spared us much anxiety, from the difficulties we should have had to encounter with our new vehicle in making our way with safety, the road being barely wide enough in places for our sledge to pass the most crooked and sharpest turns we had ever yet met with; stumps of trees were standing close to the road, some three feet high, we had the greatest possible difficulty to avoid being upset from the jolts occasioned when coming in contact with them: trees also were lying at times across the road, over which we were obliged to make our way in the best manner we could; my back and shoulders suffered very severely from the shocks I received. I felt truly thankful when we arrived safely at the comfortable home of Samuel Taylor and wife, at Pelham.

Our sledge required some more covering over our heads than we had been provided with, to secure us from the inclemency of the weather, which we found was on the increase, we had this attended to; we then took an affectionate leave of Samuel Taylor and his wife, and proceeded on our journey, accompanied by a Friend, who took the charge of driving our horses. Our road to-day lay pretty much through the woods; we frequently came to large dead trees close to the road-side, sometimes hanging over the road, as if they were in the very act of falling: and as I had heard of a fatal accident that had recently occurred by a tree falling on a stage-coach, and two persons losing their lives in consequence, my faith was not a little tried; but I found I must look beyond all these fears, to Him who, I was led humbly to hope, had called me forth thus to journey in his service.

Seventh-day, we rode twelve miles to breakfast: our tract this day was chiefly through the woods, which at this time of the year

make a very dreary appearance. I did not feel disposed to join much in conversation on any subject, my mind being turned inward unto the Lord for his counsel in my future movements. At Ancaster, the place to which we were going, I understood there was a small settlement of Friends, and an allowed meeting; and about ten miles further, a settlement of the Mohawk tribe of Indians. My companions appeared to be looking towards our sitting with Friends at Ancaster in their usual meeting to-morrow, and, if I should feel it right, to visit the Mohawk settlement, to do it on Second-day, and send forward a messenger to the settlement to inform them to that effect: although the subject had much occupied my attention, yet it appeared best for me to keep quiet until we should reach our quarters at Ancaster, which we did about noon, and were kindly received by our friend, Obed Wilson. I took my seat in our temporary abode in solemn silence, in which state of mind I was mercifully much preserved, until I was able to come at some clearness as it respected my future movements. I soon found the arrangement my companion had in view was in accordance with Friends at Ancaster, but contrary to the prospect which opened in my mind; there appeared, however, no way for me to move different from that which had opened before me; and I ventured to say, if I had a meeting with Friends of Ancaster, it must be that afternoon or evening, and proceed to-morrow morning early to the Mohawk settlement. This plan I observed appeared to try the Friends of Ancaster, who were desirous we should pass the First-day amongst them; this being the case, I humbly hope I may say, I endeavoured again to give the subject all due consideration; but as no way opened in my mind but that of pursuing my first prospect of duty, I told the Friends of Ancaster if I had a meeting with them, they must fix the time for it this afternoon or in the evening: the evening was agreed upon and notice given. Friends met in a common sitting-room in a private-house. Soon after taking our seats in the meeting, I felt not a little disappointed, in observing that my request, in regard to giving notice, had not been attended to, but that information of the meeting had been spread far and wide in the neighbourhood: the people coming in, we were soon so closely packed together as to render the air of the room very oppressive, and occasioned the infants to be very restless; a great fire had been made up, which not a little increased the oppressive state of the air of the meeting-room. A hope accompanied my mind when we separated, that this meeting might prove of lasting benefit to some of our company, and that my movement thus far had not been in my own will.

First-day morning early, we proceeded to the Mohawk Indian settlement, about two miles from the Grand River Bridge. Understanding that some Friends who had visited this settlement before,

had received attention from the children of the late Captain Brant, an Indian, we proceeded to the house of his widow ; but to our great disappointment, found she could not speak or understand English, so as to be any help to us ; the gravity of her countenance and her solid deportment raised regret in my mind, at not being able to converse with her. Being advised to proceed to the house of Dr. Henry Aaron Hill, who also is an Indian, and has acted as an interpreter, when Friends have had meetings in these settlements, as the distance for us to walk was considerable, and the snow in places very much drifted, my kind companions proposed my staying behind ; but as I have always found it tended most to the peace of my own mind, with the kind assistance of my friends, to follow up my own business, and share with them in the difficulties as long and as far as my nature will hold out, we accordingly proceeded to the house of Dr. Hill ; but on our arrival, we found he was absent from home : his man, who could understand English, on hearing our business, recommended us to go to the house of the chief, about half a mile further. On our entering the hut of the chief, he appeared to receive us with marks of pleasure, and spoke English well. On his hearing the business that had brought us to the settlement, he manifested his full approval of our views, informing us that Dr. H. A. Hill and the Episcopalian preacher lately sent over from England, would be at the widow's of Captain Brant before they went into the Indian place of worship, at which the English preacher officiated. We accordingly made our way there as speedily as we were well able, in order to ascertain if a meeting could be obtained in their place set apart for religious worship, as it had been free for Friends aforetime, and to consult the doctor as to the best time for its being held, with the manner of giving notice. After waiting at the widow's, the preacher from England and Dr. H. A. Hill, who acted as the preacher's interpreter, came : my companion proposed to me to give them my certificates to read, which I accordingly did : after they had read them, I gave them to understand what had been my views in coming to the settlement ; on hearing which, my countryman, the preacher, demurred as to our having the use of the Indian place of worship. A person present queried with him, had there not been a precedent to justify such a grant ? to which the doctor replied, not only as it respected Friends, but also as it respected other religious professors, the use of the house had been hitherto granted them ; notwithstanding which, the Episcopalian preacher manifested his decided determination we should not be indulged with this privilege ; we therefore proposed holding a meeting in the school-house next morning. It appeared evident to us, the doctor would gladly have given us permission if it had been in his power. He kindly offered to give notice of the meeting to be held to-morrow, at the

close of their worship to-day, and to meet us at the school-master's house. Previous to the meeting, my companions expressed a belief this day's work would not all be time lost, with which my mind could fully unite: the countenance of the Episcopalian preacher, whilst reading my certificate, I thought evidently manifested that some of the expressions he met with therein touched him to the quick, although he opposed our having the use of the house. Having thus far done all in our power towards our views being accomplished, we rode to Burford, and were kindly received by James Fell and his wife, where I was favoured to have a comfortable night's rest.

Second-day morning, we proceeded to the settlement again: on our approaching the Indian place of worship, observing the window-shutters opened, and the bell ringing, I was ready to conclude the preacher had recanted his former opinion; but this we found was not the case, but that the doctor had given orders for the bell to be rung, to give notice of the time of the meeting. After arriving at the school-house, several male and female Indians assembled: our interpreter appeared to give what we had to offer, in a manner that led me to hope he felt some of the weight of it; from the solid countenances some of the company manifested at our parting, I was encouraged to believe our visit would not be altogether in vain.

The next day we left Burford, and proceeded towards Norwich, and took up our abode at the house of Frederick Stover. In consequence of the divided state of the members of this select monthly meeting, this meeting had been dissolved by the half-year's meeting, and such of the members as retained their stations were united to the select meeting of Yonge-street.

Fourth-day morning, the meeting for discipline was preceded by a meeting for worship, which was largely attended, but much interrupted by the late comers-in to the meeting, and the great number of dogs that were brought to the meeting-place, barking most of the meeting-time: but, alas! as the business of the monthly meeting proceeded, I found there was much more to try the rightly-exercised mind than these things; it soon became manifest, that the enemy to all right order in religious society had obtained a place in the minds of not a few of the members of this meeting, and that the meeting was become like a house divided against itself: and unless a remedy be soon applied, there appeared no other prospect, but that this monthly meeting must be dissolved, as had been the case with the select monthly meeting: the meeting sat six hours, not because of the multiplicity of business that came before it, but from a want of unanimity in transacting the concerns of the Society.

On Sixth-day (12th of 1st mo.), we left Ancaster, on our way to York, and made a halt at the residence of a man who



once had been in membership with Friends. When he understood how we were engaged, he inquired if I intended to make a stop amongst them and give them a sermon; this matter being mentioned to me by one of our company for my consideration, I thought I could truly say there was no answer from my Great Master that would have justified me in taking such a step; and therefore we moved forward and lodged at an inn. The Messasagua tribe of Indians had at times come before me, and occasioned me some exercise of mind; understanding we were in the neighbourhood of a settlement of part of the tribe, the subject again came weightily before me; but the mixed company we were obliged to sit with in our inn, and the conversation kept up, precluded me from coming to any clear judgment in the case.

The next morning, we rode thirteen miles, and breakfasted at an inn, which afforded us an opportunity of making inquiry respecting the road to the settlement, and the individuals that had the most influence in this portion of the tribe. While these inquiries were going on, I felt so stripped and emptied of all good, that the prospect of our proceeding to try to have a meeting with them felt very humiliating; and yet I found I must stand resigned to it, if I preserved a conscience void of offence in the sight of Him, before whom every knee must bow, and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord over all. Having received the necessary information, we pursued our journey towards the River Credit, where this part of the Messasagua tribe reside: the depth of snow, unbeaten road, and a large tree lying across it, so impeded our progress, that I feared we must have turned back again; but our driver so skilfully managed this matter, as to force our horses and our sledge over the tree, but not without some suffering to ourselves from the jolt we had to endure. Soon after which, we entered a road so grown over with trees and shrubs, that one of our company was under the necessity of resorting to our axe, which we carried with us, and to cut our way through; but my mind was preserved quiet through the whole of these trials of faith and patience; and on leaving this narrow pass, we soon found ourselves entering upon a part of the settlement. Agreeably to the direction we had received, we proceeded to the house of Peter Jones, an Indian of half-blood; he spoke English well; we had previously been informed he was a pious man, and a preacher in connexion with the society of Methodists. On our reaching his habitation, we found it clean and well furnished, which appeared to be generally the case in this settlement, as far as our observations extended, every thing about the settlement manifesting marks of civilization. He received us with cordiality: I presented him with my certificates, which, when he had read, I opened my prospect of a meeting with the Indians in their settlement; to which he unhesitatingly replied, there would be no dif-

ficulty, showing us their meeting-place. He went to the door of his house, blew his horn a few times, soon after which I observed the Indian men and women, the latter wrapt in their clean blankets, as is their custom, making their way towards the meeting-house. Not more than half an hour had elapsed, from the time of our first arrival, before our kind friend Peter Jones informed us he believed the meeting was now gathered; and he taking the lead, we followed him. The building is a commodious one for the united purposes for which it was intended,—a meeting-house and school-house, equal to accommodate nearly three hundred persons: the women were seated on one side of the house, by themselves, and the men on the other side, the youth and children seated immediately under the notice of the preacher and the more aged Indians of the settlement, in order to have the oversight of them during the time of religious worship: the solid deportment of both the men and the women was very conspicuous. Feeling myself called upon to stand upon my feet, my kind friend, P. Jones, rose with me, delivering in the Indian language, sentence by sentence, what I had to offer to the people, and in a disposition of mind, that evidently proved he was brought under the weight of the task he had to perform: we had reason to believe what we had to deliver amongst them had found place in their minds, from the tenderness that was manifested when the meeting closed: under feelings of gratitude for that help we had been in mercy favoured with from our heavenly Father, we separated. This we were informed was the first visit of the kind that had been made to the settlement by Friends. I felt thankful when taking our leave of our worthy friend, P. Jones, and this part of the tribe, in believing we had left an open door for such of our friends as should hereafter feel a like concern. From the acknowledgment made by him, of the satisfaction the meeting had afforded them, and the desire that was expressed that we might have them in remembrance when absent from them, I left the settlement well satisfied we had not passed them by, and made our way through the woods again into the main-road, taking up our abode for the night at an inn.

First-day morning, we rode to York to breakfast, and concluded it best, as there was not any meeting of Friends in this place, to remain at our inn during the day, as quietly as our situation would allow of, except making a visit to an individual who once had a claim to membership in my native land. I had been informed, there were several serious persons in the town, that no difficulty would be found in having a meeting, and that the town's people were expecting such would be the case; I hope I can say in great truth, I stood quite resigned to have taken such a step, could I have seen with clearness it was called for at my hands. Some of the company at our inn, who by some means became acquainted with my errand to this country, queried with me, if I

did not mean to have a meeting in the town; but I had to inform them, except I felt differently to what I had yet done on that subject, I must pass quietly away to-morrow on my journey: my answer produced this query, Why were they to be passed by? From my own feelings, I might have replied,—perhaps they had more of a desire to hear than to practise, for this felt to me to be much the case: in the evening, we had a very relieving opportunity with the only member of Society here, and his motherless children.

I was glad the way clearly opened for us to quit York the next morning, it being the time when the session of parliament was about closing, and a great deal of party spirit, we understood, at work in the minds of the people, whereby the town was kept in continual bustle, and much appearance of gaiety and dissipation: we were favoured to reach Joseph Pierson's, at Yonge-street, before dark.

Fourth-day, attended the select monthly meeting, which was very small; after the close of it, I was favoured to return to my quarters with a peaceful mind; thankful for the strength that had been mercifully vouchsafed to me, whereby I felt comforted in a hope that faithfulness had marked my movements. We were much importuned to divide our time amongst Friends hereaway, and dine at one place, take tea at another, sup at another, and so go on from day to day; but being afresh warned by the good Remembrancer, if I expected to escape that danger which awaited me, I must attend to the salutary caution I had received, before I left my own home, of,—“Go not from house to house,” I with feelings of gratitude yielded to the warning, leaving my kind companions at liberty to accept or reject such invitations as they pleased; but I kept close to my quarters: and in doing which, I afterwards had clearly to see my safety was, from the sorrowful manner in which unsoundness of principle had developed itself,—having spread nearly over the whole of this meeting.

Fifth-day morning (18th of 1st. mo.), my inward plungings for a time felt hard to the creature to bear; yet, as patience was laboured after, they proved the means in the Divine hand of preserving me from joining in that very wide field of conversation which took place at our quarters before the meeting, and which I have ever found has had a tendency to unsettle and scatter the mind, and divert it from the true centre and entire dependence on that Omnipotent arm, which alone is able to prepare us for the performance of Divine worship, or for rightly taking an active part in the affairs of the Society. The meeting for worship was disturbed by the unseasonable manner of its gathering. I was constrained to stand up, and utter nearly the following expressions:—“God is a God of order, and by him actions are weighed in a just and equal balance, who will not condemn the innocent, neither will he acquit

the guilty ; and therefore the Almighty can have no fellowship with those who had occasioned the disorder that had taken place this day, if the cause for so unseasonable coming into the meeting had not been produced by unavoidable circumstances, but was for want of proper care and forecast, on the part of those who were the cause of it, who ought so to leave their outward concerns and home as to allow of their being able to reach the meeting-place by the time appointed." The meeting for discipline lasted six hours ; the spirit of disaffection and of party was evidently to be felt at work in the minds of not a few of the members of the meeting, which in due time was fully manifested to be the case.

We next rode to Pickering. The way opening with clearness in my own mind, I ventured to call upon two families of Friends in the neighbourhood, natives of Ireland, and a young couple ; in all of which there was a call for religious service ; the day closed peacefully.

First-day morning, attended the usual meeting held at this place ; at least one hour had elapsed before the meeting could come at any degree of settlement from the members of the meeting being so unseasonable in their attendance, some not coming in until near the time the meeting closed. I sat and mourned under a sorrowful sense of the prevalency of this evil practice amongst the members of our religious Society in this wilderness part of the country.

We the next morning left Pickering, intending, if possible, to reach Alderman to-night, a journey of fifty-two miles : stopping on the road to take our dinner at an inn, we had the company of our kind friend Peter Jones, the Indian of the Messasagwa tribe. Our thus meeting again appeared to be mutually consoling to our minds ; on inquiry, he informed us he was on a religious visit to a settlement of Indians in the neighbourhood : it appeared he was known to our landlady and her family, and from their conduct towards him was held in esteem. They urged him to stay and have a meeting with them, adding, perhaps, he might do as much good thereby as going to the Indian settlement ; to which he replied, with very great apparent diffidence, perhaps, he might take a meeting with them on his return ; his countenance and whole deportment bespoke the gathered state of his mind to the one only qualifying power for religious usefulness amongst mankind : we parted under feelings of much affection, and proceeded on our journey, and were favoured before it was quite dark to reach Freeman Clark's.

Fourth-day morning, we attended the usual meeting held at Ameliasburg, which was small. I felt satisfied in our sitting with this little company, and left the meeting under a fresh occasion of gratitude on my part, for the help that had been given me to acquit myself faithfully amongst these Friends. Before we sepa-



rated, a Friend stood up under much apparent exercise of mind, exhorting Friends not to try to put away from them the truths that had been declared that day,—the state of the meeting, he said, having been so clearly laid down; for if there was not a willingness to receive that which had been thus offered, it would redound to their own great loss in a future day. Thus Divine goodness at times condescends to permit the poor, weary, disconsolate traveller to receive a word of encouragement, it feeling like a cordial to my mind. We rode to Westlake, and were kindly cared for by Jonathan Boardman and his family.

We intended to go to Grass-point meeting next morning, which we had been informed was only eleven miles distant, but now we were informed, that we were at the distance of eighteen or twenty miles from it. The frost being more severe than had been known for several years, the days short, and the snow in places very deep on the ground, all combined together to discourage our proceeding; some Friends also expressed their doubts about its being meeting-day in course at Grass-point, which involved my mind in yet greater difficulty: but, after all, I found nothing would do for me, but to labour to surmount it, and proceed. This being concluded upon, a kind Friend offered to drive our horses, and we gladly accepted his services.

Fifth-day morning, we proceeded on our way before sun-rise: I had passed a sleepless night, and found myself in a very feeble state as to the body, and not much otherwise in my mind: we rode about six miles to breakfast at the house of a Friend, where we found some promising young people, and a man advanced in life, a visitor, who was so talkative it seemed almost impossible to come at any quiet. I felt something stirring in my mind towards the young people, but as our time was so circumscribed, and this man continuing so intrusive in conversation. I saw no way for me but to burst out with a few words in the midst of his conversation; on which silence took place, and my mind being favoured to obtain relief. We proceeded on our way, and reached Grass-point in time for meeting, which fell in due course this day. The meeting was very small, but I felt well satisfied we had pressed through these difficulties to sit down with the little number we found gathered there.

26th of 1st mo. 1827. Understanding there was a large settlement of the Mohawk Indians in this neighbourhood, and feeling drawings in my mind to have a meeting amongst them, I opened my prospect on this subject to Friends, who informed us, a Friend had recently had a meeting amongst them: this led me to hope they were not so much under the controul of the Episcopal clergy as I found was in some instances the case with the Mohawks, with whom we had obtained a meeting. Some Friends kindly offered to proceed to the settlement, and inquire whether a meeting

could be obtained; but feeling as I apprehended that it would be most likely to afford peace to my own mind if I accompanied them, I made the proposal; to which one of the Friends replied, there was the Bay of Quinton to cross upon the ice, about a mile and a quarter over: at the hearing of this, I was at the first not a little dismayed, but I found I must yield and proceed with them. On our first coming upon the ice, I involuntarily exclaimed aloud, "Into thy careful keeping, O thou Preserver of men, I commit this poor body of mine!" the prospect of this undertaking appearing, as it did to me, awful; for we had not travelled far on the bay before our horses were up to their knees in snow and water, our sledge plunging first on one side and then on the other, as if we should be upset: although I never lost my confidence in the sufficiency of Divine power to preserve from harm amidst the greatest dangers, yet my arms, shoulders, legs, and thighs contracted a soreness I cannot describe. We were favoured to land safe at the settlement; but then we had to return the same way, and were informed, we must expect to find the places we had thus travelled through worse on our return. We proceeded to the school-house, at which we found the schoolmaster, with his scholars: on our informing him of our business at the settlement, he told us, with apparent regret on his part, that the archdeacon of the Episcopalian clergy had recently written to him a letter, forbidding any dissenters having meetings in that settlement, and that their place of worship was wholly under his control. On inquiry, I found they had not been visited by the archdeacon, (who was the only person in attendance upon them,) for now two months; and that the Indians stood so much in awe of him, that if a meeting were appointed anywhere in the settlement they would be afraid to attend. The probability of the cause is this, that the archdeacon has the controul, we were informed, of what is called *their presents* when they are handed out to them, which is the interest due for land purchased of them by the English nation, and paid them in articles of clothing, blankets, &c. My mind was affected with feelings of horror on reflecting upon this conduct of the archdeacon, who had taken upon himself, as he had done, the religious care of this portion of our fellow-creatures, and yet was in such an almost total neglect of them; and would not suffer such as might feel their minds interested in their best welfare, to attempt to do their part towards their improvement. We found about twenty Indian children under the care of a schoolmaster, who appeared to be a well-conducted man: two of his scholars were full-grown lads, and pretty good English scholars. I observed the copy that one of them was writing contained the word 'Godliness;' feeling it laid upon me to query with the lad, if he correctly understood the meaning of the word 'godliness,' I found him very diffident in giving his reply, yet, it was evident

the question thus put to him produced some serious sensibility in his mind: whilst I was engaged in explaining to him my views on this all-important word, others of the scholars, as well as himself, appeared to give attention. I endeavoured to impress on his mind the great need there was for him, now in early life, to aim to be found daily living a life of godliness, which he would be enabled to do, if he was willing to accept of God's offered help; and that this would be the way for him to be fitted for heaven and happiness, when he came to die. The tears fell from his eyes, and a degree of solemnity manifested itself on the countenances of others of the children. I felt well satisfied with the time we had thus spent with the master and the scholars, and that it was well worth encountering the danger I thought we had been carried through, and yet had to encounter. I could but hope our labour would not be all lost on the lad, and some others of the scholars; and that our visit to them, although so short, would at times come up in their remembrance. We left the school again, and proceeded towards the bay: on our return, the snow and water was considerably above our horse's knees, and we so rocked from side to side, that our driver, who was well acquainted with the pass, told us, he expected no other but that we should have been upset in the deepest of it; the water flowing up through the cracks in the ice occasioning this difficulty. After I had endured no little trepidation of mind, yet, without loss of confidence in the outstretched-arm of Omnipotence, I felt truly thankful, not only for our safe arrival on land again, but increasingly so for having been preserved from giving way to discouragement, or declining to accompany the Friends across the bay to the settlement.

First-day morning, attended meeting at Adolphus Town, which was small: I felt well satisfied in sitting with Friends of this meeting: in the afternoon we proceeded towards Westlake again, and reached Holloway, and took up our residence with Joshua Waring and wife.

Third-day morning, we were favoured to reach Westlake, after having much difficulty to encounter from the snow and severe cold; attended the half-year's select meeting, which was very small, considering this half-year's meeting is composed of four monthly meetings: the travelling being so very difficult had, no doubt, in degree, contributed to prevent a more general attendance of its members. The state of this part of the body, from the answers to the queries brought up from the select monthly meetings, was very discouraging; and to look for an improvement from the existing circumstances under which the Society is labouring in this half-year's meeting,—the prevalency of unsoundness of principle, a disposition to undervalue the sacred writings and the wholesome discipline established, felt to me like hoping

against hope ; and that little more at present could be done by the members of this half-year's meeting, who were preserved alive in the truth, than to bear their portion in lamentations, because of the desolations that prevail in the camp ; for truly it may be said of this part of the heritage,—“ Death is come up into our windows, and is entered into our palaces, to cut off the children from without, and the young men from the streets.” The prospect of a succession of faithful standard-bearers, from the present conduct of the youth, is altogether discouraging. By endeavouring to acquit myself faithfully in the discharge of the little that I was entrusted with to communicate, I was favoured to leave the meeting peacefully, which is an ample reward.

Fourth-day, (31st of 1st mo.) the half-year's meeting for discipline commenced with the meeting for religious worship : the morning proved so very stormy, and the snow fell in such abundance, that the meeting was very long in gathering ; and from the great number of infants which were I expect of necessity brought to the meeting, I very much feared our being able to come at any quiet ; but having aforetime found from experience, that when placed under such circumstances, so much depended on my aiming to attain to quietness in myself, and having my mind and attention as much as possible abstracted from every outward object and vocal sound, I endeavoured after this inward quiet, and found the declaration still remains to be a truth, “ As is thy day, so shall thy strength be.” An adjournment took place to the close of the meeting for worship to-morrow.

Fifth-day morning, the meeting for worship was largely attended by Friends and others, with a great train of infants ; some of them would not be restrained from running about the meeting-house, others manifesting a fretful, impatient disposition to get out of their confinement ; notwithstanding these impediments to that quiet so desirable in these our religious meetings, by endeavouring to have my mind as much as possible brought into resignation to my present allotment as respected myself, the meeting closed under a thankful sense that the arm of Omnipotence had been near for my help, whereby I had been enabled to bear all things and endure all things which otherwise would have tried me much in this meeting ; and I have learned afresh the lessons of patience and forbearance with and towards others, who, in the outward, were differently circumstanced to myself.

Sixth-day morning, my very kind companion S. Wood, feeling his mind drawn towards his own home, being pretty much exhausted and worn down in his bodily strength with the fatigue of travelling, and the inclemency of the weather, left me under the care of Benjamin Birtsall, until I should reach Pelham again. The prospect of my kind companion, S. Wood, having to travel so many hundred miles home alone, feeble in body, and exposed



to the extremity of the cold, as he must be, night and day, was a fresh and continued trial to my mind, until I heard of his safe arrival at his own home, but in a yet more enfeebled state of body than when he left me.

First-day, 4th of 2d mo., attended the usual meeting held at Ameliasburg.

Third-day, we attended the meeting of Coal-creek : Friends meet in a private room, which was much crowded, and for want of better management in making the fire, the air of the room became so oppressive, that some of our company were under the necessity for a short time to leave it, which proved a great interruption to the quiet of the meeting. After the meeting closed, we went home with John Valentine, formerly of the city of Dublin, in Ireland, to their very comfortable, hospitable log-house, which furnished every comfort for the weary traveller, and that sweet, outward quiet, which in degree conduces to quietude of mind ; and this, at times, proves instrumental in replenishing the bodily powers. Here tarrying for the night, I received a fresh lesson of instruction, that man wants but little here below, to come at the real enjoyment of this life. I thought the situation of this family, settled as they were in the woods, near six miles from any high-road, out of the way of the temptation to make a figure in life, which is so continually before the eyes of those who live in cities and towns, was a striking one ; and so truly content they appeared to be with their allotment : yet the enemy of all righteousness, I found, had obtained hold in the minds of some of the members of this meeting, by producing a warm disagreement relative to the place for building a meeting-house upon, which has prevented its going forward, although they are much incommoded where they now meet.

We rode to Pickering, and next day to Uxbridge, mostly through the woods : a large tree having fallen in the night across our path, we were obliged to do our best in making our way through the brush-wood, which not a little harassed our poor horses, but we were favoured to reach our quarters early in the evening.

First-day, (11th of 2d mo., 1827,) the wind during the night blew a hurricane, which awakened fears in my mind, as our journey to Whitechurch after meeting to-day lay through the woods, that we should have much difficulty to contend with, before we reached our quarters at night ; but as it rarely happens much advantage is gained by our anticipating difficulties, I endeavoured so to cast all future care of this sort behind me, as not to have my mind unfitted for that which might be the duty of the coming day. Attended the usual meeting here, in which I was enabled to enter into near sympathy with the few members of the meeting, who are mourning under a sense of that state of barrenness and poverty, with which

many of these brethren in religious profession are contenting themselves: after meeting we proceeded to Whitchurch, a journey of twelve miles through the woods; the snow was very deep, and we had at times snow-drifts to pass over in the valleys; they had the appearance, on approaching them, of letting us in and smothering us and our horses. I felt truly thankful when we reached our destined abode for the night, where we were kindly cared for by our friend Asey Randall.

Fifth-day, we attended the monthly meeting at Yonge-street; the meeting for worship was largely attended; many of other societies gave us their company. Early in the meeting I rose on my feet, and delivered that which I believed was the word of the Lord to the people. After I sat down, an acknowledged minister, who stood high with a party in the meeting, arose, declaring that our supposing Adam's transgression had in any way affected his posterity was an absurd thing, and to suppose the coming of Christ in the flesh was to redeem mankind from sin, was equally absurd. Never before having heard such a manifest public avowal of these anti-christian principles, which were so evidently making their way in the minds of many of our Society in this half-year's meeting, I was brought into a trying situation; but feeling I must not suffer the meeting to close without endeavouring, as help should be afforded me, to maintain the ground I had taken in the opening of the meeting; and yet the consequences were to be feared from the strong party the individual had in the meeting; I stood upon my feet, and informed the meeting, notwithstanding what had been last communicated was in direct contradiction to what I had offered in the meeting, and altogether at variance with the well-known doctrines of the Society of which I was a member, yet I durst not recall a word of any thing I had offered. In propagating these anti-christian principles, a party-spirit had so spread in the minds of some of the members of this meeting, and such opposition to the conducting the discipline in the true spirit of it was manifested, that the meeting sat from eleven in the morning until near six in the evening before it closed.

Sixth-day, 23d of 2d mo., 1827, we proceeded towards York, where I expected to find letters from home, not having yet received any since I landed on the American shore; but this was not the case: my patience was to be further tried in this respect, as I heard that a letter from England had been in the post-office for me, but was forwarded to the place we had left last: we took up our abode at an inn.

Seventh-day, having a journey of fifty miles to accomplish, to be at Pelham meeting to-morrow, we made an early start, but found the snow so deep and such drifts to encounter, that we were in great danger of being overturned; but before it was quite dark we reached in safety our friend Stephen Becket's.

First-day morning, we rode about five miles to Pelham meeting-house, the meeting was large; it appeared to separate under a solemn covering, for which I humbly hope many of our minds were made truly glad.

On Fourth-day we left Pelham, and rode to Black-creek:—here we attended the usual week-day meeting; it was to me a time of inward quiet, for which I hope I felt truly thankful to that Almighty Power, who only is able to still that roving of the mind, which the unwearied enemy fails not to produce and foster, if he can, to defeat the end proposed by our assembling together. We next rode to the house of Joseph Mash, where we received every possible attention. On Sixth-day we left this comfortable family, and took to our waggon again, for the ferry at Black-rock, in order to cross the Niagara river, which ferry is above the great Falls. The *scow*, as it is called, which was to take us, our horses, and waggon over, appeared very small for the purpose; and in consequence of the current's running very strong, we were obliged to pass a considerable way up the river, which is considered about three-quarters of a mile wide at this crossing. I began to fear one of our horses would have become unruly, but we were favoured to land safely on the Buffalo side of the river; here I received good accounts from home of my dear wife and family. We then rode to Hamburg, and were kindly received by John Durham's wife and family, he being from home.

First-day, we attended the usual meeting held here, which was greatly disturbed by the noise of the dogs brought by members of the meeting, also by Friends moving to and from the stove to warm themselves. Endeavouring to acquit myself faithfully on these and other subjects which arose in my mind, I left the meeting-house peacefully. In the afternoon I had a religious opportunity with a number of young Friends, and the day closed with feelings of gratitude for the help that had been dispensed: may the praise of all be given to Him who sits on the throne and to the Lamb,—is the prayer of my soul. We attended the monthly meeting held at this place next day.

Fifth-day, we proceeded towards Collins: on our way we were informed, that the bridge over a stream which crossed the main-road, over which we were to have travelled, was broken down, and we were advised to take a road through a swamp; we proceeded agreeably to the instruction given us, without much difficulty for a few miles; after which our difficulties began. My companion, who had been a great traveller in this wilderness-country, acknowledged he never before had met with such a dangerous, bad piece of road, as we had now come to; in one place we were all obliged to get out of the waggon and take to our feet to get it through the swamp; in consequence of which, stepping as I supposed, on a parcel of leaves, I sank down into a mud-hole

half-way up my legs, and had not my companion come to my assistance, finding myself sinking deeper and deeper, it hardly seems likely I could have extricated myself from this perilous situation. The road we were upon was so narrow, we could not turn about our carriage to pursue our journey back again; and to proceed forward, appeared to be attended with great danger and difficulty to ourselves, our carriage, and our poor horses, which last were obliged to put forth their whole strength to bring the waggon out of the mud-holes. But we found again to our discouragement, that we had as great a difficulty to encounter, by coming to the stump of a very large tree, which we could only pass on one side; on the other side of our road there was a mud-hole, which appeared deep enough to take in the whole of our carriage, and the road was so narrow we doubted the possibility of our escaping an upset; but as no other way appeared for us than to attempt to do our best, my companion keeping the horses to their work with all his skill, managed to get the carriage through, but not without apprehension the harness and carriage had received damage. This last effort was so great, that our poor horses for some time after, when they came in sight of a hole, in which was mud or water, appeared struck with so much terror, that they would make a halt, and then plunge through with all their might: at length we reached our friend Samuel Tucker's.

The next morning, we proceeded to Collins meeting-house, and attended their monthly meeting. A difficult case came before the meeting, which considerably agitated the minds of Friends, so much so, I could not but fear, unless there was more of a disposition manifest to labour after brotherly condescension, it would have a tendency to break that bond of love and unity, which only will preserve our religious Society as a city that is compact together. After meeting we rode to our friend Isaac Shearman's.

Seventh-day morning, we rode to David Pound's, intending to be at Clear-creek meeting to-morrow. My mind having been drawn to make a visit to the Seneca tribe of Indians at Cataragus, the concern continued with me, and being now in the neighbourhood of their settlement, I opened my prospect to some Friends of Clear-creek, who arranged matters for a meeting with them on Second-day.

First-day morning, (4th of 3rd mo.) attended Clear-creek meeting: the house was much crowded by Friends and others; it proved to me an exercising, trying meeting; and yet I thought I felt cause for thankfulness, that my lot had been amongst Friends here. The next morning, accompanied by several Friends, we proceeded to the Cataragus settlement, as emptied and stripped as I think I ever witnessed; I was even tempted to call in question the propriety of the step which had been taken by Friends at my



request, to have the tribe called together. I sighed and I wept in the inmost of my soul to the Lord for strength, that I might be preserved faithful to his requirings; and if silence was the word of command in the meeting I was about to have with the Indians, it might be faithfully maintained by me. On our arrival at the council-house, where the meeting was to be held, I could scarcely suppress my voice being heard in a strain of language, which would have disclosed the feelings of anguish my soul was plunged into. We found some chiefs and other Indians were already assembled in the council-house, a building constructed of wood, about one hundred feet by thirty feet; the floor was boarded, except three spaces of bare earth left for kindling fires; over each of which a space was left in the roof for the smoke to escape; these holes also were intended to admit light, there not being windows to any part of the house. On each side of the house were platforms placed about four feet wide, to answer the purpose of seats, and to sleep upon when their councils lasted longer than one day. The head chief received us with marks of respect, and which, as far as my observation served me, has been the case wherever I have met with Indians of any tribe, who have manifested great respect for members of our Society. They were very slow in gathering: after we had waited an hour, the chief warrior, Wondongluthta, a man of grave countenance, stepped forward, and taking off his hat and placing his hands on the back of a chair, he expressed himself, through the interpreter, as follows; which was afterwards confirmed to me by a Friend present well versed in the Indian language.

“ Brother, we received a notice two days ago, by a particular friend, that you requested an opportunity with the Indians of Cataragus; this is the day you wished to meet with us, we have now come together at your request; we are pleased to see you, also the kind friends who are with you, and are thankful we have all met in good health. Brother, we understand you have come a long journey from a distant country, and have crossed the great salt water; and, amongst others, to visit us red people living in this place. Brother, the Good Spirit must have strengthened your mind in so great an undertaking, and we hope he will still be with you, and protect you on your way. We are now ready to hear what you may have on your mind to say to us; we are always disposed to listen to the counsel of those who feel a desire for our welfare, and we wish you to communicate freely the whole of your message to us. You must not feel disappointed that we are not all got together; many of our people are gone to the woods to make sugar; we will at some convenient time explain to those that are not present what we shall hear from you.” (A Friend, well acquainted with their manners, assured me this would

be faithfully performed.) “ Brother, it is our custom in this way to introduce strangers, you are now at liberty to proceed.”

After the chief warrior, Wondongluthta, had closed what he had to offer, and which he appeared to do in a solid, feeling manner, and great quietness being observed by the other Indians, he retired to his seat again : a pause then took place, and believing I had something giving me in commission for them, I stood up on my feet. The Indian who had been engaged as my interpreter arose, as did also my kind friend Jacob Taylor, a resident from his birth near the settlement, giving the interpreter such assistance as he appeared to stand in need of. Great quietness was observed during the time I was in testimony amongst them ; and when I had closed, after a pause, the chief warrior again stepped forward, resuming his place at the chair as before, and expressed himself in a very broken, feeling manner, as follows :—

“ Brother, we have listened with attention to what you have said,—your words have sunk deep in our minds ;—we hope we shall remember your good advice :—we are not in the practice of making long speeches after such opportunities, but we wish you to know that we thank you for the concern you have manifested for our welfare. We feel sensible of the truths you have told us, and we will try to treasure them up in our minds ;—we feel thankful to the Good Spirit for his continued care over you, and for the present opportunity afforded us.”

After giving our hands, both to the Indian men and women, we parted ; and I returned to our friend David Pound's for the night. The Seneca tribe of Indians at Cataragus having divided, one part of the tribe was distinguished by the title of the Missionary party, the other the Pagan party ; this was occasioned by a missionary coming into the settlement against the minds of many of the tribe, and endeavouring to impose religious sentiments upon them, which some could not receive ; such as these,—that the Scriptures were the only means whereby they could obtain salvation ; and that they were to be the only rule for their conduct ; that he the missionary alone was to be looked up to by them for a correct explanation of the Scriptures,—they not being competent themselves to understand them, and therefore they must not put their own constructions upon them :—endeavouring by these means to keep them, as has been the case with the clergy of the Roman Catholic denomination, in bondage to himself, and, as those who are denominated the Pagan party say, to enable him to live an idle life. On inquiry which of these parties were the most orderly in their conduct, I was informed from undoubted authority, by a Friend residing very near the

settlement, that those who were denominated the Pagan part of the tribe were more sober, industrious, honest, and upright in their transactions, and were better husbands, than was the case with those denominated the missionary party. At the close of what I communicated, I recommended them when collected in each other's houses in the evenings, that such as were able should read the Scriptures to those who were not able to read them, in preference to spending their time in such reading, conversation, and practices as were unprofitable. I was informed the Scriptures were called "the holy book"; a term given to them by the missionary part of the tribe. My friend, Jacob Taylor, told me, he had been spoken to by some of the Indians after the meeting, who informed him, my calling the Scriptures "the holy book" had made an unpleasant impression on their minds respecting me, as they supposed by my calling the Scriptures the holy book, I favoured the opinions of the missionary, whose conduct and religious sentiments they felt themselves so much opposed to. This circumstance occasioned me some uncomfortable feeling, as being likely to defeat the end proposed in my having a meeting with them: I therefore concluded it best to commit to writing something to clear me in their view, from holding such opinions as the missionary professed to hold, and I gave forth a paper nearly as follows:—

"TO THOSE OF MY RED BRETHREN OF THE SENECA TRIBE, WHO GAVE ME THEIR COMPANY IN THE COUNCIL-HOUSE, ON THE 5TH OF 3RD MONTH, 1827.

"My dear Brethren,

9th of 3rd mo. 1827.

"My reason for using the term 'holy book' was, that I supposed the interpreter might the better understand how to explain my views to you; but finding, since I left you, that some were not well satisfied with that part of my mode of expression, I now declare, that so far from my believing the Scriptures to be the only means of salvation, and sole rule for our conduct, I am decidedly opposed to such dangerous and false opinions on such important subjects as these are. I consider them to be the writings of holy men in former ages, who were inspired by the Great Spirit, and that they contain good counsel and advice. But, brothers, I consider such, as tell you that they are the only rule or means of salvation, to be under the influence of a wrong spirit; for if we are to believe such sentiments as these, what must have become of millions of our fellow-creatures before the Scriptures were in existence? Are we to suppose they are all eternally miserable? And what must become of the millions now in existence in the world who never have heard, and never may hear, of these writings? Does not such an opinion charge the divine and gracious Creator with the wilful destruction of his creatures? I believe such

missionaries have made a wrong use of these writings to answer their own views, which the Good Spirit does not own. Being well assured, brothers, when present with you, that the Good Spirit in each of our hearts and minds, is all-sufficient for our salvation, if we never should be able to read those writings. With sincere desires for the welfare of the whole of my red brethren, I commend them to the care and protection of the Great Spirit, and bid your farwell.

“ THOMAS SHILLITOE.”

This paper I committed to the care of my kind friend Jacob Taylor, from whom I received the following note :—

“ Collins, 3rd mo. 24th, 1827.

“ On the 20th instant I had a seasonable opportunity to explain to both parties of the Cataragus Indians the communication thou left with me: I believe it was entirely satisfactory to them, and left a favourable impression, which will not soon be forgotten; their missionary being also present, but made no objection, and all ended quietly.”



## CHAPTER XXXIV.

FOURTH-DAY, 7th of 3d mo. 1827, we rode towards Collins meeting-house, and took up our abode with our friend Charles Wood. First-day morning, we proceeded towards Eden, where an indulged meeting is held, there being about fourteen families and parts of families that were considered to belong to this meeting. We had previously been informed, part of our road lay through a wood; on entering which, no regular beaten track was to be observed: in some places, trees which had recently been cut down, were left across the only path we could take; and no other way remained, but to do our best in passing over them, to the danger of throwing down our horses and breaking our carriage-wheels: it was with the greatest difficulty I could keep my seat in the waggon. After our faith and patience had been thus exercised, we were, though cold and fatigued, favoured to reach in safety the Friend's house where the meeting is held. After taking some refreshment, we took our seats at meeting with the aged couple belonging to the house, and three other small families, and one individual: it proved a very suffering meeting to me. I was afresh persuaded, these meetings held in rooms where the families generally live, are not, generally speaking, from different causes, attended with much benefit to those who attend them, especially when so largely attended as this meeting would be, if Friends belonging to it were rightly engaged, to be found coming up in the faithful discharge of their duty of assembling themselves together for the purpose of religious worship. I left them sorrowing, on account of the deplorably low state of the Society here, and the manner in which the cause was, I feared, suffering by the continuation of this indulged meeting: Friends here are so much away from the care and oversight of the well-concerned members of the monthly meeting. After meeting, we rode to our friend, Levi Bunting's, where we took up our abode for the night.

Third-day morning, we road to Orangeville, and took up our abode with our friend Jeremiah Butler: here also we found another of these indulged meetings of long standing, with an indulged preparative meeting. The next morning we sat down

with an agreeable little company of Friends. At the close of the meeting for worship, which is held in a private house, the preparative meeting sat: I felt considerable regret, during our sitting together, from the manner in which the meeting appeared to be interrupted for want of better accommodation: on mentioning this subject to Friends, it appeared that ground for building a meeting-house was provided: we left Orangeville, and returned next day to Hamburgh.

Seventh-day, (17th of 3rd mo.) we rode to Boston, where there is a small settlement of Friends, and took up our abode for the night, at the widow Kester's.

First-day morning, we attended the usual meeting held at this place, which was small, but the quietest meeting I have attended since I came on this side the water, as it respected a timely attendance, and Friends keeping their seats: the time of our sitting together was a season in which I thought we had cause to acknowledge, that our God had not forgotten to be gracious to us.

Fourth-day, attended their usual midweek meeting; at the close of which was held the preparative meeting, in which the queries were answered, as in other parts of this Yearly Meeting, the overseers bringing their answers ready prepared for the meeting's use. I endeavoured to rouse Friends to a consideration of the necessity there was for each one to consider for himself, how far the answers that were intended for the monthly meeting did or did not convey a correct state of their meeting, and if any shortness appeared in any part of the answers, that those who were aware of such shortness should be found faithful in opening to the meeting wherein the deficiency was: after meeting we rode to Hamburgh, to our kind friend John Durham's.

Fifth-day, attended Hamburgh midweek meeting, at the close of which the preparative meeting was held, which was to me a time of suffering, when the queries were to be answered, especially that query relative to the timely attendance of meetings, and behaviour therein; for I did not dare to suffer the answer to pass as it was brought in by the overseers, without making remarks on the great neglect manifested as to a timely attendance, and the manner in which the meetings were disturbed by the young people frequently going to the fire to warm themselves, and Friends bringing their dogs to meeting with them, suffering them to be walking about the meeting for worship the whole of the time, also the noise occasioned in the yard by their barking and fighting; my faithfulness I found opened the way for other Friends to relieve their minds on these subjects, with which they said they had long been burthened; this appeared to bring the meeting under considerable exercise and concern, that if possible these things might be prevented in future, several Friends expressing a hope that the remarks which had been made might not be forgotten. Although suffering had been my lot at this time

yet in being thus helped to be found faithful, I thought there was cause for thankfulness on my part.

I felt drawings in my mind to attend an indulged meeting at a place called Holland, where there is a small settlement of members of our religious Society, and made a call on an individual in our way, who is not in membership with any religious body of professing Christians: he had published a work, in which he sets forth the religious principles he holds, professing to be one in principle with Friends, especially so on the subject of war, he constantly attends our religious meetings, preaches in them, and holds public meetings up and down as Friends do; but yet it appeared the solid part of the meeting were not satisfied with him, although his demeanour, dress and address in most respects were consistent with that which a member of our Society should manifest. On inquiry into the cause of Friends being divided in their sentiments respecting him, and the ground of dissatisfaction, I found that he had been a soldier in the late war, and was wounded in battle, in consequence of which the American government had settled a pension on him for life; this pension, notwithstanding he had published his avowed principles against war, it was pretty generally understood, he continued in the regular receipt of, but no Friend of the meeting was able to confirm it as a fact. I could not divest my mind of a fear,—in consequence of the active part some Friends had taken in the sale of his publication, and in attending on him at his public meetings,—also his appearances and constant attendance of our meetings,—being allowed to preach, and the countenance he received from some members of the meeting to continue so to do,—if he really was continuing to receive his pension from the government for his services during the war, the reputation of the Society was in danger of suffering through his conduct. He received us very kindly: these subjects coming weightily before me, I had great strugglings of mind to endure, before I could be willing to yield to open my mind on them; but as my desires were earnestly put up to the Lord for strength to be enabled to divide the word aright, that so what I had to offer to him might be words that were fitly spoken, strength was given me to take the first step, by desiring his children might be requested to leave the room, which took place. As it appeared Friends were divided in their opinions relative to his receiving his pension, some professing to believe he did receive it, and others that he did not, but all was conjecture; I therefore at once put the question to him, Was not a pension settled upon him by the government of the United States, in consequence of wounds he received in the field of battle during the late war? To which he replied, it was the case. I then queried with him, was he still in the practice of regularly receiving this pension? He frankly acknowledged, he was. I then endeavoured to lay before him the inconsistency of

such conduct, with his declared testimony against war in the book he had published and widely circulated : I also related some remarks to him of a captain in the American army respecting him ; “ I have read ——’s book and his outcry against war ; but whilst he is exclaiming against war, he continues willing to drink the broth, which those who have the management of military matters, have to give away.” The only attempt he made to justify his conduct for continuing to receive his pension, was by saying, a sum of money was raised at the close of the war for pensioners, and to keep up a naval establishment ; and as the pensioners died off, their pension was to go into the naval fund, he continued to receive his pension, not so much for his own use, but that the naval resources should not be increased by his refusing to receive his pension. As ability was afforded me, I endeavoured to lay before him the inconsistency of his conduct, with the doctrines and precepts of Christ, whose cause he was making such a high profession of and publicly espousing ; by having people called together and holding meetings with them, professedly for the sole purpose of exalting the Redeemer’s kingdom ; and imposing himself, as he had done, upon Friends, by presuming to preach in their meetings, whilst he was in so great a breach of one of their fundamental principles. I told him, were I in his situation, until I had strength given me to sacrifice gain received through such an impure channel, I should not dare to speak again in the Lord’s name, but must keep silence, and especially so in the meetings of Friends ; where his appearances, I was informed, were very frequent, and of considerable length : and I added, with respect to his holding meetings with those who do not profess to have a scruple against war, I believed the more thinking part of those who read his work, and heard him preach “ Christ crucified, to the Jews a stumbling-block, to the wise Greeks foolishness ; but, to them that believed on him, the power of God and the wisdom of God,” and who were acquainted with his conduct by continuing to be in the receipt of a reward for his services in the field of battle, I believed among such his labours would be made null and void. I told him, however some Friends may have carried themselves towards him, so as to encourage him to preach in their meetings, yet I believed in the end, it would be found by him that they had not been his best friends ; but that they would be the cause of his sitting down short of that experience in the work of righteousness, which by this time he might have attained to, had he been faithful to that very precious visitation, which I could not doubt he had been favoured with. He received what I had to communicate without any further attempt to palliate matters ; and yet it was evident, that, although he could not maintain his ground on Christian principles, upon which he had been at ease, as a warrant for his continuing to receive his pension, the prospect of his being obliged



to sacrifice it brought him into a very great strait ; on which account I hope I was not deficient in a willingness to sympathise with him,—he having a sickly wife, a large family of children, and as I was informed, a poor farm to bring them up upon. I hope I may say, I felt truly thankful to my great and good Master, in that he had not only given me utterance to the relief of my own mind, but had also opened a door of entrance into this person's mind so to receive what I had to offer ; and I could not but hope, from the affectionate manner in which he took his leave of us at our parting, that what had been communicated would become as a nail fastened in a sure place.

On First-day morning we sat with the few Friends of Holland-meeting, in a small new-built log meeting-house ; part of a committee appointed by the monthly meeting to have the care of Friends here, also gave us their company. A cheering prospect accompanied my mind, if the few well-concerned Friends of this new-settled meeting are favoured to keep their places as faithful members of our Society, there will in time be a gathering as from the highways and hedges.

Third-day, (27th of 3rd mo.) we rode to Hamburgh, and attended the select meeting there.

Fifth-day, my face was turned towards Clear-creek ; the Indians in the Buffalo settlement came before my mind, accompanied by a belief I should not be able to leave these parts peacefully, unless I stood resigned to have a meeting with them on First-day next ; I tried after quietness to be able to arrive at some conclusion before we proceeded on our journey, but this I was unable to do ; a Friend who came into the family kept up such a continual conversation, sometimes addressing himself to me, and then again to others, I was obliged to leave the house. I then called upon a Friend, who I had understood was acquainted with some of those who resided in the settlement, to whom I felt it best to put some questions on the subject ; and after being favoured to get a little into quiet, so as to be able to turn the deuce, I found it would be safest for me to have Friends called together ; which being done, I opened my prospect of duty of having a meeting in the Buffalo settlement with the Indians next First-day ; which being united with, Friends concluded to do the needful for its accomplishment.

Sixth-day morning, we proceeded to Clear-creek, attend the monthly meeting to be held there : the meeting was well attended by its members, and the business of it conducted in an agreeable manner.

The next day we proceeded to Hamburgh : on our arrival there we were informed, the Indians in the Buffalo settlement received, with expressions of satisfaction, the request to have a meeting with them.

First-day morning, 1st of 4th mo., 1827, accompanied by my kind friend Samuel Taylor, John Dunham and his family, and other Friends, we proceeded to the council-house of the Buffalo Indians, where the meeting was to be held; here we found the head chief of this district and others of the Indians, who welcomed us with countenances that manifested they received us cheerfully. The Indians are very slow in their movements, whereby the meeting was not fully gathered until an hour after the time that had been proposed by themselves; I was informed the person engaged as interpreter, was not in a fit state of mind to undertake such a service. An Indian man, who spoke the English language, was then proposed to me, and feeling willing to accept of his services, we took our seats, the men at the upper end of the house, the women at the lower end. The chief then stepped forward, and expressed the pleasure it had afforded him, that so many Friends had given them their company, and their readiness to hear what I had on my mind for them: after which he took his seat again and a pause took place. After I had delivered what was given me in commission for them, the chief then stepped forward again, and expressed the satisfaction my communication had afforded them. My mind feeling relieved; the head chief and his company appeared to part from us very affectionately. The company we had sat with, I understood, were denominated Pagans, because they had opposed a missionary coming amongst them. I returned to Hamburgh again, satisfied that I had given up to the service. We proceeded on our journey, and on Fourth-day reached Henrietta, and attended the meeting held there. The meeting was small, and it was a time of close exercise to me to come at a right settlement of mind: after meeting we rode to Rochester.

Fifth-day, we attended the mid-week meeting here: such hard things were required of me to deliver to the Friends of this meeting, that when I had taken my seat again, I was led to call in question all that I had offered amongst them; but when the meeting closed, a Friend, whom I looked up to as one of pretty clear discernment, informed me there was great need for the remarks I had delivered in that meeting: (time also proved the necessity of them, for afterwards the members of this meeting, pretty generally, united themselves to the separatists in this Yearly Meeting.) Thus, in our times of proving, the Hand of help through instrumental means, is sometimes afforded to our relief, when we may be almost ready to faint and grow weary. After meeting we rode to Farmington.

First-day, attended meeting at Galen, in consequence of there being a funeral, the house was much crowded, and I humbly hope it is not presuming to say, the truths of the gospel were largely declared to the people, and the necessity of diligence in

the great work of salvation, whilst the day of grace was lengthened out ; the people manifested a solid, attentive disposition of mind : there was reason for believing it was a time of renewed visitation to many.

Fourth-day, attended the select quarterly meeting at Scipio, which was small : the business was conducted with great unanimity, and proved a season of refreshment to my mind.

The next day, the quarterly meeting for the general concerns of the Society commenced with a meeting for Divine worship, which was largely attended ; it proved a season in which encouragement was held out to the faithful. The business of the meeting for church-affairs was conducted in much harmony and brotherly condescension ; it closed under a grateful sense, that holy help had been near in transacting the various matters that came before the meeting.

Sixth-day, the public meeting was held, and we separated under feelings of gratitude to the Great Head of the church, in that He had been pleased once more to own us by His life-giving presence, to our comfort and consolation : in the afternoon we rode to Union-springs.

First-day morning, attended meeting at South Farmington ; it proved to me a time of deep inward labour and travail of spirit to reach the spring of Divine life ; too many of those I was sitting amongst, there was reason to fear, were contenting themselves with having a name to live, yet at the same time were strangers to that practical part of true religion in which righteousness consists. The meeting, I understood, was small to what it would have been, had the members of the meeting been informed a stranger would have been there ; but I had no warrant for such information being given, wishing if I did sit with Friends of this meeting, to see them in their every-day clothes.

Third-day, (17th of 4th mo.) attended the select quarterly meeting, which was small ; to me it felt a low, trying meeting.

Fourth-day, the quarterly meeting for church-affairs commenced with a meeting for worship ; at the close of which Friends entered upon the concerns of the Society ; after the meeting had gone a considerable way into its business, the meeting was greatly interrupted by the return of a number of lads and young men who had left the house when the meeting for worship closed, and who had remained out of the house thus unseasonably ; but that spirit of insubordination, liberty and equality so pervades religious, as well as civil society in some places in this land, that all prospect of applying a remedy to this, as well as other evil practices amongst our youth, appears hopeless ; and thus the hope of a succession of faithful standard-bearers being raised up amongst them, is feeble.

Fifth-day, 19th of 4th mo. 1827, the closing meeting for worship was held: after which we rode to Galen, where we took up our abode for the night.

First-day, we attended meeting at New Hartford; the meeting was chiefly composed of those of other religious persuasions; afterwards we rode to Utica. On Fourth-day we attended Galway meeting, which was attended by heads of families only, it not being much the practice to bring the children to week-day meetings hereaway; this subject I found I must allude to in the meeting, and also the practice of Friends bringing their dogs with them to meeting. We rode then to Milton, and took up our abode for the night.

Fifth-day, attended Milton meeting, after which we rode to Saratoga. I understood that on the morrow we should have to cross the river in what is called a *scow*; we also heard that the late heavy rains had occasioned such a flood and current in the river that it had been deemed unsafe to venture; as however there did not appear any other course for us but to proceed, I retired quietly to bed, leaving all further considerations of the subject till morning.

Sixth-day morning, we proceeded to the ferry; when we were about the middle part of the river, the current ran at a great rate, one of our horses became very uneasy, so much so, I feared his becoming unmanageable; the bottom of the *scow* to the tide-edge was so very low, we could not have prevented his going over into the river had he been so inclined. I hope I may say, I felt truly thankful when our horses and waggon were safely landed on the eastern shore in the state of Vermont. We proceeded towards Danby, intending to reach Salem this night; but after we had pursued our journey about ten miles, we were obliged to alter our course, being informed that the bridge on the road we were taking to Salem, had the day before broken down, and let a waggon and horses into the stream. I thought it might be considered a merciful escape for us, and fresh cause for gratitude, amidst all our trials, that we have hitherto escaped harm this way, considering the many rotten and decayed bridges over deep waters we had passed.

Seventh-day, after travelling over a rough, mountainous road, we were favoured to reach our kind friend Aaron Roger's, at Danby, this afternoon.

First-day, attended their usual meeting; many of their members and attenders of meeting, we were informed, were absent, but if we could stay and have another meeting amongst them, a more general attendance would be likely to take place; but not feeling the necessity laid upon me to yield to this information, I concluded it would be safest for us to leave to-morrow.

Third-day, 1st of 5th mo., 1827, we proceeded by Granville



towards Queensborough, and after a fatiguing and heavy day's travel, we were favoured to reach our friend Caleb Dean's. I attended the select preparative meeting; a small company, and next day was at the monthly meeting, in which I was comforted in feeling the early, quiet manner in which the meeting settled down. We next proceeded by Fort Ann, Shoreham, towards Ferrisburgh: our horses appeared so jaded with the last three days' bad roads which we have travelled, that I feared their holding out through this day's journey; when we reached the tavern we were to bait our horses at, we could neither procure oats nor Indian corn for them; the grasshoppers had been so numerous the last summer as to destroy the crops of grain in this part of the country; nothing but hay could here be procured.

First-day, I attended Strassburgh meeting; in the afternoon we rode to Monkton, a meeting being appointed to be held there at my request; whilst on my feet, engaged in testimony, a child, that was running about the meeting-house, placed itself before me, looking up in my face, smiling and playing its little antics, on which I made a full stop, requesting the mother of the child would take it to herself, which, to my great grief, occasioned the mother to leave the meeting; assured, as I since have been, that had I endeavoured simply to attend to my Master's business, the actions of this innocent child would not have embarrassed my mind during the exercise of my gift. We took up our abode for the night with our friend Joseph Hoeg.

Fourth-day, I attended the select quarterly meeting, very few in number; and, next day, the quarterly meeting for discipline: the business of this, as well as other meetings in this quarterly meeting appears to be very much done by the clerk, very few (if there are such) manifest by their words a godly zeal for the right support of the discipline of the Society.

Sixth-day, the public meeting was held; after which we rode to Shoreham. First-day, attended the usual meeting.

Second-day morning, accompanied by A. Potter, his wife and daughter, and another waggon of Nathaniel Potter's, we proceeded towards Easton. On our stopping to bait, the women complained much of the head-ache from the heat of the sun, their waggon not having a cover over the top. I offered them seats in our waggon, and took my seat in one of theirs. In going down a hill, at a sharp turn, one of the swingle-trees of our traces came off, forced the waggon against the horse's heels, set them a kicking in a violent manner; at this trying moment the neck-yoke came off, whereby the whole weight of our waggon coming upon the horses, forced them across the road down a steep, it was said thirty feet; my companion and a young woman jumped out, in going down the precipice the horses broke loose from the waggon and ran off with the traces at their heels: the waggon in going

down turned over, whereby a young woman was forced out through the top of the waggon, but without receiving much injury from her fall; the waggon turned over a second time, and threw out the wife of Abner Potter, but how, she was unable to tell. We soon procured medical assistance, and miraculous to say, no limbs were broken or displaced; our carriage was much injured and our luggage scattered abroad; our horses were brought to us without receiving much damage, but the woman Friend was so much bruised and cut by the fall, we were obliged to proceed to Easton and leave them behind, but in a few days they were able to return home. I thought there was fresh cause indeed to acknowledge the mercies of the Lord, they are new every morning, and because thereof the sons of men are not consumed.

Third-day, attended the select quarterly meeting, and next day the quarterly meeting for discipline, which was small. After attending the public meeting the next day, we rode to Troy.

First-day, attended meeting at Crum Elbow; after meeting we rode to Poughkeepsie, and took up our abode for the night with my kind countryman Thomas Smart.

Second-day, we reached my kind friend James Brown's, at Peck's-kiln; and on Fourth-day morning, my home at New York, where I was kindly received and cared for by my much-esteemed friend Elizabeth Bowns, and her daughter Sarah Minturn. On my arrival at New York, I found my kind companion, Samuel Wood, had been placed in a very trying situation, in consequence of some unfounded and evil reports, that were set on foot respecting him and myself, by those very individuals who so strenuously proposed to the committee appointed to provide for my journey, (which was before S. Wood had proposed to accompany me) that nothing should be wanting to make me comfortable on my journey that my advanced age required; charging us with very unfounded reports. My companion had ascertained with whom this report had originated in the city, but the individual would not give up his author, and when requested to meet the overseers on the case, would not come forward. I therefore addressed notes to the overseers, and the individual who had, it was said, been the author of these reports in the city, requesting the party to meet us at Rose-street meeting-house at a time proposed. The overseers met us, but the individual, the author of this report in the city, would not make his appearance: after clearing ourselves of these charges to the overseers, as our accuser would not come forward, nor furnish the name of the other party referred to in the report, I considered I had done all required of me in the matter, and there I left it.

Seventh-day morning, attended the first sitting of the select Yearly Meeting, which was chiefly occupied in calling over the representatives, reading our certificates who were from Europe,

and the certificates of Friends from other Yearly Meetings, which were not a few, after which the meeting adjourned to the afternoon.

Second-day morning, the Yearly Meeting for transacting the affairs of the Society, commenced with an evidence, that amidst all the discouraging prospects on account of the sad state of things in this Yearly Meeting, by the spreading of unsound principles, the outstretched arm of Omnipotence was still extended towards us as a religious body, under all our provings

Fourth-day, the select Yearly Meeting again sat; this proved a deeply baptizing season to many; matters were spoken to in the authority of Truth, in a way that, I doubt not, had a tendency to stimulate to faithfulness those of whom it might be said, they were ready to faint in their minds, through the fear that at times seized hold of them, of the Society becoming deluged by those antichristian principles which were threatening to carry all away with them. Fresh cause was, I believe, felt by not a few, to be willing to set up the Ebenezer to the praise of Him, who was pleased again to appear on the side of those yet left in this Yearly Meeting, who, for Zion's sake, durst not hold their peace, nor, for Jerusalem's sake, be at rest, whilst the enemies of righteousness were endeavouring to make such inroads in the camp. The confusion and uproar which prevailed in some of the latter sittings of the men's Yearly Meeting, and the abuse offered to those who occupied seats in the ministers' gallery, especially such as were from England, equalled any thing my pen can describe. My countrywoman, Elizabeth Robson, had a concern to come into the men's meeting; when the subject was spread before the meeting, some of Elias Hicks's party made objections to her being allowed; but their objections being overruled, as she entered, a great number of those who opposed her coming into the meeting, left the meeting in a body, and remained in the yard until she left the meeting, when they returned. Trying as these sittings were from day to day, I thought it was a favour, that Friends were enabled quietly to sit through them to the end.

Seventh-day afternoon, the last sitting of the select meeting was held: from the disordered, divided state of this part of the body, when an attempt was made for a committee to be nominated to visit the select quarterly and monthly meetings, it met with violent opposition: a female member of Jericho monthly meeting, fearing the clerk should make a minute to that effect, left her seat, and placing herself by him, laid hold of his elbow, and told him he should not make a minute; in this very tried state, without being able to effect any thing, the meeting sat until past eleven o'clock at night.

Fifth-day, 7th of 6th mo. 1827: after taking an affectionate leave of my kind landlady E. Bown and her family, and other

friends in the city, in company with my countryfolks, George and Ann Jones, Isaac and Anna Braithwaite, and divers other Friends, I went on board the Washington steam-boat for Newport on Rhode Island, in order to attend the Yearly Meeting for the New England States. We proceeded on our way without impediment, until about the middle of the night, when on a sudden I found, from some cause, our progress was retarded, which excited in my mind some serious apprehensions: I did not rise and go on deck, as my naturally anxious disposition would have prompted me to have done, but tried to keep quiet in my berth. On inquiry in the morning as to the cause of this detention, we were told that a heavy fog came on, which rendered our proceeding dangerous; soon after we proceeded again, the great swell of the water occasioned the vessel to be so continually in motion, that very few of us escaped the terrible sickness experienced by many who venture upon this unstable element.

About eleven o'clock the next morning, we were favoured to set our feet on shore at Newport, where divers Friends were waiting to receive us. I went to the home of my kind friend Stephen Gould, who, with his attentive wife, afforded me every accommodation my debilitated body required.

Seventh-day, I rode out to Portsmouth, about nine miles; here the select Yearly Meeting was held for the accommodation of Friends from the country, who may be on their way to attend the Yearly Meeting. This meeting was not large; it was a time in which there was cause to acknowledge that holy help was near; in the afternoon the meeting for sufferings was held, the business of which appeared to be conducted in much harmony.

First-day morning, I attended the meeting held at Portsmouth; the house was crowded, the meeting being attended by many not of our religious Society, which we understood was the case at Yearly Meeting time: from the light, airy disposition manifested by many of these at the close of the meeting, it was to be feared, their coming was more for pleasure than from a real desire to be benefitted. In the afternoon I attended the meeting held at Newport: the house, which is very large, was crowded, and numbers were standing in the yard; the concourse of people lead me to fear we should not be able to hold the meeting in that quiet which was so desirable; but holy help being mercifully near to those who were called forth to labour in this part of the Lord's vineyard, a belief was produced in some minds, that the labour of this afternoon would not all be lost; but would become, in the experience of some of our numerous company, like bread cast on the waters, which would be found after many days.

Second-day morning, the meeting for managing the affairs of the Society commenced: in the opening of this meeting we were favoured with a renewed evidence, that the Lord in mercy was



waiting to be gracious to us in this our collected capacity ; if on our parts we were but willing in all our movements to await his putting forth into service. The meeting adjourned until the afternoon, when the same holy quiet was again vouchsafed on our sitting down to business ; this to me, after enduring what we had to pass through from the unruly spirits we sat amongst in the Yearly Meeting of New York, felt like breathing in another and a purer air. After the business of the meeting had been gone through, it closed under a feeling sense of the continuance of Almighty help from Him, who graciously condescended to declare, he would be with his humble dependent children unto the end of the world.

Sixth-day morning, a meeting for worship was held, which was attended by many not in profession with our religious Society ; we were favoured to have a still, quiet meeting before our parting, according to human probability, never all to meet again in this world of probation and trial. After this meeting, accompanied by a kind Friend, I rode to Tiverton, a distance of about eleven miles, and lodged at A. Barker's.

On First-day morning attended Tiverton meeting, where I found a small company. I felt well satisfied I had given up to sit with the few I found here. I then rode about five miles to attend the afternoon meeting at the Falls, where there is a much larger body of Friends ; with those of other societies, who gave their attendance, the house was rather crowded. I left the meeting under a hope I was in my right place in coming to it. On our way towards our carriage, we made a call upon a sick Friend : the evening was hastening on apace, and we having five miles to ride back again, I had concluded in my mind not to make any halt here ; but I soon was made sensible if I would go along under feelings of Divine approbation, I must not chalk out a way for myself. Feeling thus unexpectedly stopped in my proceeding, I yielded to express that which I believed I was entrusted with for expression, and had reason for believing I had been made an instrument in the Divine hand of comforting the sick Friend, and in degree I hope to the edification of others that were present : after which I was favoured to know in some good degree, what it was to go on my way rejoicing, which I had nearly deprived myself of, had I pursued my journey home to my quarters, as I had at first intended.

Fourth-day, 20th of 6th mo. 1827, attended the preparative meeting of Aponeganset ; the overseers not being prepared with answers to the queries as usual, to go forward to the monthly meeting, occasioned some exercise to Friends' minds, but by patience being resorted to, answers were prepared, which the meeting appeared to settle quietly under, and I felt satisfied in sitting with this little company.

Fifth-day, I attended the preparative meeting at Newtown, which I also found to be small. I took my seat in the meeting under feelings of very great depression, and would gladly have been anywhere than where I then was; but by labouring after quiet submission to this dispensation of Divine wisdom, I humbly hope I may say, it proved to me a truly profitable one, and I was enabled to leave the meeting under feelings of the renewed cause there was for me to set up my Ebenezer again, to the praise and glory of the Lord my God, who had thus in his mercy sustained me when I was nigh unto fainting in my mind. In the afternoon I rode to New Bedford, where I was kindly received by William Roach, jun. and his very kind wife.

Attended the select monthly meeting here, which is composed of the select members of the monthly meetings of Dartmouth, Westport, and New Bedford; they being so few in number in each of these monthly meetings, are not considered equal to holding separate meetings: the queries were answered in the meeting, but from the backwardness of Friends in not so fully describing the state of their several meetings, this part of the business went very heavily forward, and the time of the meeting was very unsuitably contracted, and yet I trust, under all our discouragements, there was cause to hope, it had not been an unprofitable meeting to some of us.

Accompanied by a kind companion, we rode to Westport, to attend the monthly meeting to be held there this day: here we found a pretty large body of Friends, and many not in profession with our religious Society, gave us their company in the meeting for worship. I found it hard work to relieve my mind; what I had to communicate being more especially to the members, and such as were in the constant attendance of our religious meetings; but I felt cause to esteem it a favour, when the meeting closed, in believing I had been strengthened faithfully to acquit myself.

First-day, 24th of 6th mo. 1827; attended meeting at New Bedford; the morning meeting was much larger in attendance than I had expected to have seen it: from the sorrowfully divided state which this meeting has been in, through the anti-christian principles which had taken hold of the minds of its members, I had looked towards this meeting with feelings of great discouragement; I took my seat under great depression. Feeling something stirring in my mind for communication, I struggled with it for awhile, until at last I found, if I left the meeting-house in peace, I must give up, and therefore ventured to stand upon my feet, and in a feeble manner uttered what had been given me: when the meeting closed, I was led to hope, the labour thus bestowed would not all prove in vain. The afternoon meeting was to me a time of close travail to obtain full relief to my own mind.

The next day, I made a few social visits—I was led to hope, not unprofitably to the visited: the day closed peacefully, for which I felt truly thankful to that Divine Power from whence all good comes.

Third-day morning, about five o'clock I left New Bedford, and went on board a packet-ship for Nantucket, a passage of sixty miles; we were favoured to land on the island of Nantucket, about twelve o'clock at noon this same day.

Fourth-day, attended the North meeting; the men's side of the house was very thinly attended, there being on this island a much greater proportion of female members of our religious Society, many of whom are in a state of widowhood, occasioned by the dangerous occupation the men embark in, many being engaged in the whale-fishery: from the great distance the vessels now have to make their voyages in search of fish, it takes them sometimes two years from their home. Here again I met with my kind friends Smith Upton and his wife, whose company, as I was now amongst strangers, felt like a cordial to my mind. At the close of the meeting for worship, the monthly meeting for this district was held: the queries were at this time answered; the Friends of the meeting manifested a willingness to receive any remarks, those who were thus come amongst them had to make; we were favoured to separate under a covering of that good which is not at our command, and therefore calls for gratitude on our part.

Fifth-day morning, I attended the South meeting, where we found a much larger body of Friends, but the far greater proportion on the women's side of the house. My sufferings in this meeting were great, on account of the disgraceful behaviour of a number of lads in the meeting, belonging to Friends; I durst not do otherwise than throw this subject before the monthly meeting. I was comforted in finding what I had to offer on this occasion obtained considerable entrance into the minds of several Friends, and obtained much of the meeting's deliberation, which ended in a proposal for a few Friends being convened to consider of some measures being adopted, which would be the most likely to effect a remedy. The business of the meeting was conducted in much quiet; and Friends separated under a feeling of that solemnity which brings us near together, and unites us in desires for an increase of these precious feelings.

We attended the select monthly meeting, composed of the select members of the North and South monthly meetings, the queries were answered for the quarterly meeting, in doing which the meeting appeared to be brought under a care, to send forward such answers as should convey to the quarterly meeting the true state of things amongst them.

First-day, (1st of 7th mo.) this morning I attended the South

meeting, which was very largely attended by Friends and others; it was considered a solid, favoured meeting. In the afternoon I attended the North meeting, which was said to be a large meeting for that district; it was a time to be commemorated. I returned to my quarters in the evening much exhausted; here I found several Friends in waiting to have some of the company of the stranger, but I felt more disposed to retire to my bed, this I found would not bring peace to my own mind; very soon after I took my seat amongst them, silence took place, but which I did not feel at all disposed to cherish, apprehending it would be likely to prove the means of my detention from retiring to my bed, which I very much desired; but by yielding to this silence, which I could no longer doubt was not of man, and endeavouring to settle down quietly under it, I found my Divine Master had some service for me in this company; I endeavoured to be found faithful in the discharge of what might be called for at my hands; and retired to my bed, breathing afresh the language of, "What shall I render to the Lord for all his benefits?" who has been with me through this day's work.

Third-day afternoon, attended a funeral; the company which assembled at the house was very large, and (as is the case with Friends on this island) a meeting was held at the house; in consequence of which the company who assemble at the house, do not feel it obligatory on them generally to follow the corpse to the grave-yard; but apprehending if I did as I should do, although I had a full opportunity to relieve my mind at the house, I must be willing to follow the corpse to its last depositing place, which I did; here we had a large company of Friends, and of other persons not in profession with our religious Society. I found little more was now expected than depositing the remains; I did not see how I could with peace to my own mind let the people depart, without requesting them to try to become more collected; and stepping on an elevated spot, the most suitable situation to be generally heard, I delivered that which appeared to me to be the counsel of my great Master; in doing which I was favoured to leave the grave-yard with a peaceful mind.

Fourth-day, attended the select quarterly meeting, and the next day the quarterly meeting for the general concerns of the Society, which commenced with a meeting for worship. This meeting, I believe, proved a time of instruction and comfort to many; it closed with solemn supplication through a beloved sister, and thanksgiving for that Divine condescension which had been in mercy manifested towards us at this time. The meeting for discipline was conducted in much quiet, yet it was evident it suffered loss for want of more promptness on the part of Friends, in speaking to the business that came before the meeting.

Seventh-day morning, the wind being fair, I took my depar-



ture in a packet for Falmouth, in company with about forty-seven other Friends, on their way home from the quarterly meeting; and after a passage of about five hours, we were favoured to land safely. This afternoon, we called on a Friend who appeared to be plunged into a state of as much despair as I ever before had met with; his horror of mind, from his own acknowledgment, appeared to surpass any thing I had ever heard of; he had no ear to receive encouragement to look for that help, which, I was fully made sensible, only could prove availing. I understood he had been made an instrument in the Lord's hand of good to others, having received a gift in the ministry, and had been considered by his friends very lively in the exercise of it. During my sitting with him, my feelings were such, that I could not divest my mind of an apprehension, he had reasoned with clear manifestations of duty, until the right time for the discharge thereof was clean passed over, whereby this great weakness had been suffered to come upon him; in which sentiments I found I was not alone. The sorrowful state I left him in, made such an impression on my mind, that I craved it might prove a watch-word to me from time to time.

First-day, attended meeting at Falmouth, which was large. I was ready to hope the concern expressed by a Friend at the close of this meeting, that what had been offered at that time might become as bread cast on the waters, and be found by some many days hence, would be fulfilled.

Being clear in my mind of Friends in these parts, my kind landlord drove me to Yarmouth on Cape Cod, where I was kindly received by Abiel Aikin and his family.

Fifth-day, attended the mid-week meeting here; many not in profession with us gave their attendance, to whom I was enabled, I humbly hope I may say, clearly to point out the absolute necessity there was for man to experience, through the effectual working of the power of Christ in his heart, a being enabled to walk in his footsteps.

First-day, attended the usual meeting at Sandwich, which was large, by the coming in of such as did not profess with our Society.

Fifth-day, attended meeting at Pembroke, which was small; at the close of the meeting for worship, was held their preparative meeting; this proved a solid, and I believe, a favoured meeting to most, after which, we proceeded to Shepherd's to lodge.

Sixth-day morning, when breakfast was over, the family was all assembled for the purpose of reading the Scriptures. I rejoiced at this opportunity, believing, as I did, it was conscientiously practised, and not a mere formal matter; after which we proceeded to Long-plain, and were kindly received by Obadiah Davis and his wife.

First-day morning, (22nd of 7th mo.) attended the meeting at Long-plain; this, and the afternoon meeting were considered by Friends to have been solid, satisfactory meetings; the orderly manner in which the people left the meeting-house, I thought was a proof they had met with something more than words; no disposition was manifested to converse, each one seeming disposed to go quietly to their own homes.

Fourth-day, accompanied by my kind young friend Joseph Tillinghurst, we walked from New Bedford to Aponegauset to attend the monthly meeting of Dartmouth: the meeting was small in consequence of its being the hay-season: when we are truly alive to our eternal interest, this fails not to stimulate to seek the kingdom of heaven in the first place, and when duty calls us from our outward concerns, to leave them, and commit them to the great Care-taker, who is able to do better by them in our absence, than we can do by remaining with them, and neglecting our duty to Him, from whom all our blessings proceed. I felt well satisfied I had given up to sit with the few who gave their company on this occasion; yet I could not but regret the dull, heavy manner in which the business of the meeting was conducted, for want of a more lively interest being manifested on the part of the members, in matters that came before the meeting; whereby more was imposed on the clerk than Truth at all warrants. This evening we returned to New Bedford.

Sixth-day morning, feeling drawings in my mind to make a call upon a family, I proceeded alone, believing it would be better for me so to do; on taking my seat amongst them, I was plunged into such distressing feelings as I have not often had to experience: after a time of waiting, matter rose in my mind to communicate, and I endeavoured after faithfulness: what I had to offer appeared to be kindly received, yet it felt to me like hoping against hope. Accompanied by my kind friend, Abraham Shearman, we made a visit to an aged Friend, who had been eight years confined to the house in consequence of an accident, with whom we had a sweet, quiet, religious opportunity. I left her with the assurance, she was sensible of being under better care than poor, frail, mortal man, and that her bitter cup of long confinement was sweetened by the fresh incomes of the good presence of Him, whose presence administers life to the soul.

Seventh-day morning, made my last visit to my kind friend William Roach, now in his ninety-third year.

First-day, attended meeting at Centre, which was large, and very soon settled down in quiet, which, I believe, was generally felt. Earnest were my inward cries to be preserved keeping my proper place in this meeting: the opening given me to stand up with, was so small and simple, I saw no other prospect, if I barely stood up with it, but I should expose my own weakness,

and be unable to proceed either to my own relief or the profit of the people : I sat long under the exercise of it, fearing to stand up, and fearing to take away with me that which had been imparted to my mind for communication ; at length, in great weakness and fear, I ventured to rise ; and for this act of faith and faithfulness Divine Wisdom condescended to deal bountifully to me His help, for the faithful discharge of his requirings in this meeting. And yet after this season of Divine favour, (which I believe the meeting was considered to be,) I was tempted to call in question what I had communicated in the meeting : seasons of this sort, although hard to the creaturely part to bear, after we have, as we believe, done our very best in the faithful discharge of apprehended duty ; yet of this I have been renewedly persuaded, they are in great mercy permitted to be our portion to humble and keep down the creaturely part ; that so God only may have the glory. If patience under these humiliating dispensations has its perfect work, they will not be suffered to harm us, but prove the means in the Divine hand of stimulating us, to be willing to take a faithful retrospect of our movements, and beget in us an earnest desire, if such may have been the case, to see when and where we have missed our way.

Second-day morning, accompanied by a friend, we made a visit to a female Friend in the meridian of life, who had been confined to her bed near twenty years ; the appearance of the languishing condition she lay in was very affecting : a short time after we took our seats in the room, we dropped into solemn silence, and after some time spent in this waiting state of mind, matter was given for communication suitable to her tried condition, and grateful were the feelings that accompanied my mind for the opportunity that had been thus afforded.

Fourth-day, attended the quarterly select meeting for Rhode Island, which was a small, but quiet, favoured meeting. The next day, attended the quarterly meeting for Society concerns, which commenced with a meeting for worship : the business that came before the meeting for discipline was conducted in much harmony and brotherly condescension, and, I believe I may say, Friends were comforted in being thus together. Having a prospect of attending the school-committee at Providence next morning, it appeared necessary to proceed after the close of this meeting to-night, as we had a ferry to cross about half a mile over, and which is sometimes so dangerous, that the ferry-men will not venture to put their boat out : it was now blowing a very heavy gale, and seemed doubtful whether we could get across this afternoon ; but I found I must not risk the morning, if we were able now to get a passage. I therefore proposed our going down to the ferry ; but when we arrived, we found other Friends in waiting, the ferry-men not being willing to take their horses and carriages

across, the wind and the current being very strong; but after waiting a considerable time, the wind rather abated, and the boatmen consented to take us over. Our horses and carriage so filled the boat, that but little room was left for us comfortably to stow ourselves: it proved a tossing time, the wind ahead, and a rapid current running against us, some of our horses appeared not a little terrified; about six in the evening we were favoured to land on the opposite shore, for which mercy, thankfulness was the clothing of my mind, causing my cup to overflow with feelings of gratitude to our Almighty Care-taker. We proceeded to the hospitable abode of our kind friend Moses Brown, of Providence.

Sixth-day morning, attended the school-committee held at the institution, a fine healthy situation, on an agreeable eminence, and a short distance from the town of Providence. After the examination of the children closed, a suitable pause took place: I felt well satisfied with the manner in which this day had been passed over.

Seventh-day, attended the meeting for sufferings, which was held at the school. First-day morning, attended meeting in Providence; the number of Friends of this meeting is small. In the afternoon I attended the meeting held at the school; this, to me, was a very suffering time, occasioned, I had cause to believe, by myself, for want of a more timely yielding to rise on my feet, and give the meeting that which I was entrusted with for communication; yet I felt cause for thankfulness I was not permitted to take away that which, I had no doubt in my own mind, was given me for others. I left the meeting peacefully, but I had reason to believe not with that fulness of the reward, which otherwise would have been dispensed, had a more timely obedience to clear pointings of duty taken place on my part.

Second-day, 6th of 8th mo. 1827, accompanied by Jonathan Longdon, we rode to Smithfield quarterly meeting, to be held there. We attended the select quarterly meeting, which was small; the answers to the queries were read and passed over in silence by the members of the meeting, as if all was well with the heads of the tribes, but which did not appear to be the case; by endeavouring after a right qualification to relieve my mind on various subjects, more particularly applicable to this part of the Society, I left the meeting thankful for the help afforded so to do.

Fifth-day morning, the meeting for worship was numerously attended by Friends and others; after which, the meeting for the affairs of the Society commenced: the answers to the queries were the chief business that came before the meeting. Although much weakness was manifested in these answers, yet they were passed over almost in silence. I ventured to attempt to relieve my mind on some subjects, and in having thus done my best, I



left the meeting more peacefully, than I had reason to believe would have been the case had I kept silence.

Seventh-day, accompanied by James N. Fry, I proceeded to Lynn, and took up my abode with my friend Isaac Bassett. On our way to our quarters I observed many people collected in the front of a house, and persons sitting in the windows, which led me to inquire what was the cause of it; on which I was informed a burial was about to take place, of a young woman who had a birthright amongst Friends; but having imbibed those anti-Christian principles, which had deprived many in that meeting of their membership in the Society, she became one amongst them. My mind was arrested with apprehensions of duty to give my company at the burial; but on making inquiry whether the body was to be buried in the grave-yard of Friends, I was informed that was not to be the case, but in a piece of ground joining to Friends' burial-ground, which had been purchased by those who had thus left the Society, for their separate use. This information brought me into a great strait; I found the father of the young woman, who was a member of Society, had requested some Friends to take the charge of conducting the funeral for him, and which they had undertaken to do. How to proceed under these circumstances, to me felt difficult; the ground in which the body was to be deposited, had been purchased by persons, who, as well as the deceased, had manifested themselves hostile to the Society and to its fundamental principles; but trying the fleece, as I hope I may say I endeavoured sincerely to do, I concluded it would be best for me to go to the house of a Friend, where we should be able to see when the corpse left the house, which I accordingly did; but the company had arrived at the grave-yard before I had strength to proceed, and did not reach the grave-side until the parents had turned from the grave in order to quit it; on which I requested the company, if they were easy so to do, would make a halt, which appeared to be readily complied with; and after a short pause had taken place, strength was given me to plead the cause of my Divine Master amongst them, and declare, as we all had but one journey to perform through this world, before we arrived at our eternal abode, how much it behoved us to be especially careful we performed this journey well; inasmuch as there would be no returning to this world again, to correct any errors that had been made, either in religious principles or in practice: great quietness was to be felt, and the minds of many appeared to be solidly affected. I was led humbly to hope I had not been out of my place in taking this step.

First-day morning, attended meeting here; it was a large gathering: many of those who had separated themselves from the Society and our religious meetings, I was told, gave their attendance. It proved a time of close inward exercise for the arising of

that Divine life, which is the crown of all our assemblings together, and which was, in degree, mercifully experienced. The afternoon meeting, I was informed, was numerously attended by those who had separated themselves from our religious Society. After I had done, as I apprehended, my very best in endeavouring, as ability and matter was afforded, to plead my great Master's cause; yet I sat down short of that relief which I had hoped for, when closing my communication, which plunged me into some discouragement; but before the meeting separated, a Friend stood up, and in a few words endeavoured to press upon all present the necessity of being willing to profit under the testimony that had been borne amongst them that afternoon: I hoped, from the quiet these observations brought my mind into, that not much of a short-coming, or any thing of an overdoing would lie against me on this occasion. In the evening we had a great collection of Friends at my quarters: although the evening was variously passed over, partly in social conversation and partly in a religious opportunity, we separated under something of an evidence that holy help had been near to us.

Second-day morning, (13th of 8th mo.) I rode to Boston, where, in the early period of our religious Society, Mary Dyer and others suffered death on account of their religious principles. The Society of Friends here are now no more; the meeting-house belonging to Friends was so far gone to decay, as to render it expedient to pull it down, since which the ground has been disposed of, it being pretty much in the heart of the city. Friends have it in prospect to purchase a more retired spot, and build again for the accommodation of public meetings, and to fulfil the will of the donor who gave the ground on which the old meeting-house formerly stood. I was informed, if I had a desire to have a meeting with the inhabitants, a place could easily be procured for me: I could not say, I had not at times had some expectations such a service might be called for; but as no way opened with any degree of clearness, that it would be proper for me to take such a step as this, after I had visited one of my fellow-passengers to America, we returned again to Lynn this evening.

Attended the select quarterly meeting for Salem, held at Lynn, which was very small; the disaffection that had taken place in this quarterly meeting having, I understood, swept away some of the once useful members of this part of the body, as well as from the main body of this quarterly meeting. I felt thankful in having to partake with them in a feeling of the sufferings they had endured, and were still in degree, I had reason to believe, at times, labouring under, for the body's sake, even the church.

Fifth-day, the quarterly meeting for transacting the affairs of the Society commenced with a meeting for worship, which was largely attended by Friends and others; it was considered to be a time of Divine favour. The meeting for discipline, to me, was a

low, trying time; yet, by endeavouring to feel a renewal of Divine strength, to be enabled rightly to acquit myself amongst my friends, I left the meeting under feelings of gratitude for the help which had in mercy been vouchsafed to me. In the afternoon, in company with two other Friends, I called upon one of the families, who, with many others in this place, had been carried away with these unsound principles—the sorrowful effects of which had occasioned Friends here so much suffering: I went in fear and trembling. On our sitting down, conversation took place, which continued to be kept up on the part of the family as long as there was power left; but when He, who has all power in heaven above and in the earth beneath, sees meet to proclaim in the ear of the soul of man, ‘Be still,’—notwithstanding all the opposition that may be felt in the mind to silence, how remarkably is that disposition to keep up conversation, and that fear of silence which has been manifested, subdued, which was the case at this time. After patiently enduring question after question to me, in order to keep up conversation, a solemn pause took place, which continued some time; during which I had great strugglings to obtain the victory over that creaturely fear, and those doubtings which came into my mind like a flood, lest, if any thing given me for communication, would not be received; but endeavouring to be found faithful to that which was called for at my hands, strength was given me to break silence; and although a part of that which I had to communicate, was trying to my nature to be obliged to utter, yet, at our separation, all the parties acknowledged the thankfulness that they felt for the visit; the truth of which I thought their countenances and conduct bore testimony to.

The next day, accompanied by my friend Joseph Metcalf, we proceeded to Salem, where we were kindly received by Abijah Chase. First-day morning, attended meeting there: the meeting was large, many of other religious persuasions gave us their company. That share of religious service which fell to my lot this morning, there was reason to believe, had a solemnizing effect on the minds of not a few. A Friend, in a feeling manner, after I had taken my seat recommended to the solid attention of those assembled, the communication that had gone forth in that meeting. The afternoon meeting was also largely attended by those not of our religious Society.

21st of 8th mo. 1827. This evening reached our friend John Brown’s, at Dover, in the State of New Hampshire. Fourth-day morning we left Dover for Berwick, where the quarterly meeting is to be held. We were favoured to reach our friend Joshua Meader’s, in time to attend the select quarterly meeting, which was small; and if I was qualified to form a correct judgment of the state of society as it respects this part of the body, things are at a low ebb.

Fifth-day, the quarterly meeting for discipline was held; the

meeting for Divine worship was large, many not of our religious Society attended. This meeting to me was a very trying one, occasioned, I was led to fear, because so few of those present, who were making a profession of the necessity of silently waiting before the Lord, to become qualified by him to perform that worship which he calls for from his dependent creature man, were willing to accept of the means that would be afforded, if rightly sought after and patiently waited for. The business of the meeting for discipline seemed to go heavily forward: it did not appear, that 'many hands,' at all times, 'make light work;' the meeting was large, but those who were rightly qualified to help forward the concerns that came before the meeting, appeared to be very few in number. Much of the business of the meeting rested with the clerk; and when such is the case, those who are endeavouring to fill such a situation rightly, claim the sympathy of their friends, it too often occurring, that those who sit silent in the meeting when subjects are before it, are the readiest, out of the meeting, to pull to pieces what the clerk has done according to the best of the judgment given him.

First-day attended meeting at Dover: on our reaching the meeting-house, we found a crowd standing in the yard; the bottom part of the house soon became filled; it appeared that half of the meeting were not of our own religious Society, the people behaved solidly and attentively, and when the meeting closed, seemed to manifest rather an unwillingness to separate.

We rode to Rochester, where we visited a Friend declining fast in her bodily strength, having a family of ten children to leave behind her to lament her loss: we had an agreeable religious opportunity with her and her numerous family; there was cause for believing that what was given me to communicate, felt as a balm to her deeply tried mind. Fourth-day, attended meeting here, which was largely attended by Friends and others; the people appeared generally to sit solidly, and when the meeting was over, although it lasted nearly three hours, they manifested an unwillingness to depart. Fifth-day, attended meeting at —; some Friends from Rochester also met us, so that the house was nearly as full as it could well be; we sat a considerable time in silence, and although it was late in the meeting before I had strength to stand on my feet, and deliver that which I believed was given me for communication, yet the people's minds appeared to be kept very quiet to the last. After meeting we proceeded to the high-road, which, being rocky and hilly, we did not reach our quarters until a late hour.

Sixth-day, we had in prospect reaching Sandwich to-night, so as to have a day's rest before First-day, and two Friends of Sandwich calling upon us this morning, (who were anxious to reach their own homes,) proposed our moving forward with them early, after we had taken our breakfast; but feeling, as I very unex-



pectedly did to myself, a stop in my mind against our proceeding, it appeared safest for me to have these two Friends set at liberty to return home at their own time. By endeavouring to get into that inward quiet, where the still small voice of the High and Holy One is clearly and distinctly to be heard, the way opened in my mind to be willing to have the few Friends here called together, who hold their meeting in a private house, leaving the time to be fixed by Friends themselves: eight o'clock this evening was concluded upon as the most suitable, on account of the absence of part of some families. During conversation with the family I was in, I was led to put the question to the female head,—had any individual of late years in that neighbourhood joined the Society by conviction? to which I was informed, a woman had joined Friends some years ago by conviction, and lived in the neighbourhood: she was, for awhile after she was received into membership, a very diligent attender of meetings, a clean-handed woman, and much beloved by Friends and others, and she had been very useful in meetings for discipline; but Friends had been deprived of her company nearly two years, she having sunk into a despairing state of mind. Feeling my mind drawn to make her a visit, I proposed it to the Friend at whose house I was staying, (Joseph Varney,) and we proceeded to her residence. Her husband, who does not profess with our religious Society, received us kindly, and introduced us to his wife: the weather was very warm, yet we found her shut up in a close room, with pieces of woollen cloth hung against the windows, and placed at the bottom of the door, to prevent the air from blowing upon her; the air of the room was so oppressive, I scarcely knew how to bear it, and she herself was clothed as if it had been a severe cold winter's day; her countenance manifested a mind harassed beyond describing, and wholly absorbed in caring for her poor body, frequently putting something into her mouth to chew. Believing, as I did, from the impressions my mind received, that it was more a temptation of Satan she was labouring under than bodily disease, in order to prevent her usefulness in her neighbourhood, and in the monthly meeting to which she belonged, I ventured boldly to declare to her this to be my belief, calling her a cumber-ground,—finding if I spoke at all to any good purpose, it must be in plain terms; and yet I was fearful, as I proceeded, she would not bear my plain dealing; her husband sitting by, I knew not what he would think of me, a stranger as I was. After delivering to her what arose in my mind, which I was led to believe truth warranted me in doing, I entreated her to accept of that Divine help which I believed, from the feelings of my own mind, still awaited her acceptance, and to break off from that bad companion in her own heart and mind, which had brought her into this situation, and was depriving her family and the religious Society of which

she was a member, of that usefulness she was designed for. In a little while evident proof appeared, that her mind was somewhat reached, and the bent of it a little turned to that Divine Witness in herself, which manifests all things; her countenance gradually became more placid,—that harassed appearance it had borne gradually disappeared, and she began to brighten up, as if she had been favoured afresh to lay hold on that faith, which gives the victory over the power of the accuser and tormentor of the brethren: she then began to speak as follows: “I have been hoping that some Friend would be sent for my relief, who would be able to dip into my tried situation, and my mind was confirmed in the belief this would be the case.” Her plea for absenting herself from meeting had been the want of health; she now acknowledged her belief that her declining state of health, and being plunged into her deplorable state of mind, through the ascendancy the adversary had obtained over her, was suffered to arise from her unfaithfulness in not being willing, when called upon, to open her mouth as a minister; but dwelling on her small capacity for such a work, and that nothing she might communicate would be likely to profit others, and by her thus continuing to withstand the call, instead of becoming a useful member of religious Society, and of that use in her own family and to mankind at large, which she was designed to have been, she feels herself a cumber-ground. At our parting, she, in an animating manner, expressed a hope to get out to meeting again, and the desire she felt this visit might be blessed to her, and that I might never be permitted to become rusty, as she was become, for want of being willing to become useful in the Master’s service. She and her husband pressed us to make a longer tarriance; but it appeared safest to leave her under her present impressions, lest conversation should prove the means of dissipating them. On our way home I was furnished with the following particulars respecting this individual. She had been a zealous member of another religious society; and was highly esteemed by those she then was in profession with, for her piety and strict attention to all their religious rites and ceremonies; she had made the bread for what is called the sacrament. One night, whilst lying in bed, it was revealed to her, that there was a teacher in every man and woman, that could teach them more effectually the way of life and salvation, than any outward minister could do: this impression continuing with her, and her mind becoming confirmed in this truth, she was obliged to cease from attending the place of worship she had frequented, and withdraw herself from the company of the minister she had so much esteemed, to the great grief of those in profession with her, by whom she was universally beloved: she also felt herself enjoined to remain in retirement at home, her husband attending their place of religious worship alone; this she continued to do for a considerable length of time.

A Friend being in this neighbourhood, had a concern to have a meeting with the inhabitants, on which account a general invitation was requested to be given; but as the residence of this family was remote from the high-road, and from the place where the meeting was to be held, some Friends considered, as they were such rigid professors in their own way (not knowing anything of what was the state of this woman's mind,) it would be of no avail to inform them thereof. But by some means the information reached her, and she with her husband came to the meeting: from which time she continued steadily to attend Friends' meetings, her husband, on meeting-days, bringing her to the end of the lane, that led to the Friend's house where the meeting was held, and afterwards coming to meet and take her home again. After awhile he came with her to meeting himself, continuing to do so as long as she herself kept to meeting. She had been much given to dress and following the vain fashions of the world; but her mind becoming further visited by this same Divine power which at first awakened her, she came to see the inconsistency of all these things with a true Christian walking; whereby she was enabled to put away from her all her finery, and in time it became very evident, the chief adorning she was aspiring after, was the hidden man of the heart. She applied after awhile to be received into membership with Friends, which request was complied with. Being a woman naturally of much sweetness of disposition, added to her honest simplicity and very becoming deportment every way, she became an ornament to our religious Society, and continued so for some years; but, alas! it appears the enemy enviously strove against her, and against the cause she so faithfully espoused, and by little and little prevailed, and again turned the feet of her mind aside from the right way of the Lord, which she had given such proof she preferred before every other way.

The meeting, which had been appointed at my request, proved a quiet, solid opportunity; afterwards I retired to rest, thankful I was not permitted to proceed with the Friends to Sandwich, as I felt anxious to do.\*

[\* By a communication from a Friend at Providence R. Island, date 7th mo. 1829, to her "esteemed and faithful labourer in the gospel, Thomas Shillitoe," the following additional information is obtained respecting the individual visited by the author, as above described, which, it is believed, will be interesting to the reader.

"The next meeting-day (after T. S.'s visit,) she attended; after which her kind husband, who appeared to be a person of some note, yet not a member of the Society of Friends, called on a neighbour of his, who observed to him, that his wife attended meeting *this morning*; to which he replied, with animation,—'Yes, an aged gentleman came from Old England, to tell my wife her duty; and she thinks it is time to attend to it.'

"From that time she has enjoyed her family and friends, and diligently attended meetings; and is thankful that she is released from that state of depression she had for a long time been afflicted with; and is desirous that Thomas Shillitoe may know, previous to his leaving this country, that his visit was a blessing unto her."]

## CHAPTER XXXV.

SEVENTH-DAY morning, (1st of 9th mo., 1827,) we proceeded to Sandwich, and reached the house of Cyrus Beede, where we took up our abode for the night.

The next day attended their usual meeting, which was very large, owing to the coming in of those of other societies; at the close of the meeting I requested the men and women members to stop, which they accordingly did, to whom I proposed for consideration, (the members of the meeting being numerous, and not out of the reach of the meeting-house twice on a First-day,) their holding an evening meeting during the summer-season: this subject being mentioned appeared to be a relief to many minds, and especially so in the manner it was laid before the whole meeting. In the afternoon we proceeded to the north meeting-house, where a meeting was appointed to be held at my request; the house was greatly crowded, and the weather so oppressive, I much feared our being able to hold a meeting in quiet, but we were not only favoured with a quiet, but a solemn time together; under a sense of which we separated.

Third-day, we rode to Falmouth; and on Fourth-day attended the select quarterly meeting, which was small; the queries were answered in such a summary way, that the true state of the meetings could not be come at; if my feelings were correct, the state of this part of the body here was in a very low feeble, condition. I endeavoured, as strength was afforded me, faithfully to leave with Friends of this meeting, that which I believed was given me for them.

Fifth-day, 6th of 9th mo, 1827, the quarterly meeting for discipline commenced with a meeting for worship; this meeting was large, being attended by those not in profession with our religious Society. I marvelled not at the plungings I had endured, on my taking my seat in the meeting-house, from the close searching testimony I had to declare to the members of this quarterly meeting: although what I had to offer was close and pointed, I was thankful to find it had found entrance into some minds; so as to call forth public expression from individual members of the meeting, in confirma-



tion of the truths that had been given me to deliver. The meeting for discipline was equally trying; the answers to the queries exhibited a sorrowful picture of the low state of the Society in this quarterly meeting; and yet there was cause for rejoicing to find, there were a few individuals left, who did manifest a desire for the welfare of the cause of truth and righteousness; but I was not able to divest my mind of a fear, that faintheartedness was a disposition prevalent with such, for the defects that were noticed in the answers to the queries, instead of being seasonably attended to, were suffered to remain and be passed over in silence from quarter to quarter. By endeavouring to acquit myself faithfully in the meeting for discipline, I was favoured to retire from it with a peaceful mind, thankful I had been made willing to share in the sufferings, which the well-concerned members of this meeting, I believe have, at times, to wade through.

Sixth-day, the breakfast being over, some of our company were on the move; but my mind feeling charged with something for communication before we separated, I was obliged to burst into expression, which produced a quiet settling down again, affording me an opportunity for my relief; after which we proceeded towards Brunswick, in the state of Maine, where we were kindly received by Stephen Jones and his family.

First-day, attended Durham meeting, which was large; my friends considered it to have been a solid, favoured meeting. The next day, we rode to Lichfield, and were kindly cared for by our friend Noah Farr. I had been apprehensive, for several days, I must have a meeting with Friends at this place before the quarterly meeting: I opened my prospect to suitable Friends of the settlement, and they appeared readily to unite with it; to accommodate us on our journey afterwards, the meeting was obliged to be appointed to be held at an earlier hour than usual next morning.

Third-day morning, from the early hour the meeting was appointed, I was led to fear it would gather stragglingly, and be thinly attended; but this was not so in either respect, the house being nearly full. I felt much tried with poverty and strippedness on taking my seat, which led me to fear I had not sufficiently digested the subject, before I took this step of having Friends called together; I was suffered to remain for a considerable time in this tossed state, to the abasing in me of all that was of the creature, whereby a willingness was brought about to become any thing or nothing, whatsoever my Great Master willed I should be: but He condescended, in his own due and appointed time, to say, It is enough, and light arose out of obscurity; and I was favoured to leave the meeting, well satisfied I had yielded to this pointing of duty. After taking some refreshment, we rode to Vassalborough, and were favoured to reach our friend Moses Sleepen's.

Fourth-day, attended the select quarterly meeting here, which

was considerably larger than most I had of late attended ; there appeared to be many Friends who, from their solid countenances and general demeanour, were concerned for the promotion of the welfare of the Society : but when the business of the meeting was gone into, it was distressing to observe such a want of religious animation in the right conducting of the business, by not giving that due attention to the answers to the queries, which it was evident the state of some of the meetings called for.

Fifth-day, attended the quarterly meeting for discipline ; the house was very much crowded ; the meeting for worship held very long, as did the meeting for discipline. Friends, I believe, separated under feelings of thankfulness for that Divine condescension and goodness which had been near to us at this time. After meeting, we rode sixteen miles to Hollowell, and took up our abode at the widow Ramsden's, who, with her children, kindly cared for us.

Seventh-day, we rode to Portland, a large, thickly-settled town. First-day, attended their usual meeting : Friends here are few in number ; some of other societies gave us their company. This, to me, was a trying meeting, the life of religion appearing to me to be very low amongst Friends. After meeting, we rode about ten miles to Scarborough, and had a religious opportunity in a large family, (part of them not in membership with Friends ;) they were placed in a very solitary situation, no meeting being held nearer them than Portland : we took up our abode with them for the night.

Third-day, we rode to Hopkin's village ; having a hard day's travel, we were anxious to reach our journey's end, hoping to find a quiet abode, from the character we had received of the tavern we were to stop at for the night ; but on our entering the village, all appeared to be bustle and confusion, it being the day when the young men had turned out to be trained for the army ; to proceed further would not be doing justice to our beasts, we therefore resolved to make the best of our situation. The widow who kept the tavern appeared to be willing to do all in her power to care for us, and make us as comfortable as circumstances would allow of.

The next morning, we rode to Ware, to the north meeting-house ; the meeting was small. In the afternoon we rode to our ancient friend Daniel Gore's, and took up our abode for the night.

Fifth-day, attended meeting in Ware, at the south meeting-house : Friends coming in from the north meeting, occasioned a large gathering.

Seventh-day, we rode to Cumberland, and were favoured to reach the comfortable abode of my kind companion, Joseph Metcalf. First-day, attended meeting here : we had a great coming-in to the meeting of those of other religious societies. The people appeared solid, and I felt satisfied my lot had been thus cast amongst them ; and here, if service has fallen to my lot in this Yearly Meeting, for the present it closed.

Second-day morning, accompanied by my kind companion, I rode to Providence, where I was informed it was their monthly meeting on Fourth-day next. I was willing to give this subject all due consideration; but my face, I had good ground for believing, was now rightly turned to New York, to reach there by first conveyance. The steam-boat proceeding on the morrow afternoon, I arranged for my departure: my kind companion, Joseph Metcalf, now left me, after we had travelled together in much harmony.

Third-day afternoon, 25th of 10th mo., after taking an affectionate farewell of my kind friend Moses Brown and his family, with many other Friends, I went on board the steam-boat, and was favoured to land safely at New York on Fourth-day, and was kindly received by my esteemed friends, Elizabeth Bowns and family.

Fifth-day, attended Hester-street meeting, at the close of which the preparative meeting was held much in quiet, which was a great favour, as the state of the Society is now becoming more distressing, in consequence of the disaffected part of the members here becoming increasingly clamorous. In the afternoon, attended an adjournment of the preparative meeting of Rose-street, which was held on account of an application by the disaffected part of the Society for a certificate, to be addressed to Green-street monthly meeting in Philadelphia, that meeting-house being in the possession of those who have seceded from the Society; in consequence of which that monthly meeting has been dissolved. Many Friends very promptly rejected this request; the clerk also refused to make a minute, which should order one to be prepared for a meeting they could not hold correspondence with; on which the disaffected part of the meeting became very turbulent, proposing that the clerk should be displaced. This proposal produced great commotion: individuals of the disaffected party were called upon to name a clerk; the name of one of their own party being brought forward, he was ordered to the table, to make a minute displacing the clerk that had been regularly appointed by the meeting, and to confirm this fresh appointment, also ordering the clerk of the preparative meeting to quit the table, and give up the books and papers; but this order not being complied with, attempts were made to obtain forcible possession; but their attempts failing, they were obliged to make their minute on loose paper. During these hostile proceedings, the clerk and sound members of the meeting were, in a very remarkable manner, kept from manifesting any thing like impatience or resentment on account of the abuse and outrage thus committed. Their newly-appointed clerk opened their meeting, the regular clerk of the meeting and Friends sitting quiet, not taking any part in their transactions; their newly chosen clerk made a minute, ordering a certificate to be pre-

pared, addressed to Green-street monthly meeting, appointing individuals of their own party to prepare it for the next preparative meeting, to go to the monthly meeting. Having accomplished their business, and about to adjourn, a Friend requested those Friends who felt themselves aggrieved at the proceedings that had taken place, would remain in the meeting-house. This request at first occasioned great confusion, some of the disaffected party saying they would not leave Friends in the meeting-house; but, in time, the newly-chosen clerk and most of his party left the meeting. After which a considerable time was spent in silence, Friends' minds were much broken and tendered under the consideration of this sad state of things amongst them; a sweet quiet was to be felt over the meeting, and after the casting before the meeting of the views that had passed the minds of many Friends relative to the proceedings that had taken place in the preparative meeting, Friends being much exhausted, it was concluded better to adjourn to Seventh-day afternoon.

Seventh-day afternoon, Friends again met, and endeavoured to come at a judgment how to proceed, in order that a remedy might be proposed, that such inconveniences as had been experienced at the last preparative meeting might not occur in future: it was concluded to select a committee to prepare a statement of facts for the monthly meeting. This proved a calm, quiet opportunity, and the meeting adjourned to Second-day morning.

First-day, attended Hester-street meeting in the morning, and Rose-street meeting in the afternoon, both of which meetings were to me seasons of much inward labour and exercise to come at any real settlement of mind.

The next morning, the aggrieved Friends of Rose-street preparative meeting met, when the committee appointed for that purpose produced a statement of the proceedings at the late preparative meeting of Rose-street, drawn up in as conciliating language, and couched in as impressive terms as the nature of the case would allow of, which was to be laid before the monthly meeting by a committee appointed for that purpose.

Third-day, attended the select monthly meeting, which is composed of the select members of the city and Flushing: the queries were answered, and some of the deficiencies that were apparent in this part of the body spoken to. Although this meeting was a time of inward suffering to many; yet I was led to hope it would prove to some of us a profitable season.

Fourth-day, attended Rose-street meeting. After the meeting for worship closed, the men retired into their apartment, to transact the business of the monthly meeting. My kind friend John Hancock had offered to accompany me towards Baltimore, until some other Friend offered, he being considered by the sound members of the monthly meeting as a suitable Friend for my purpose, and he had



concluded to mention the subject to the monthly meeting; but from the proceedings going on in the meeting, he felt discouraged about opening his prospect of accompanying me. To relieve his mind from further care, I proposed, when a suitable time offered, to do it myself, which I accordingly did. This proposal met with much opposition from some of the disaffected party; but by keeping in the patience, the proposal made its own way, and he was set at liberty. The case representing the situation of Rose-street preparative meeting was presented, and great opposition made to the reading of it; and after much time had been spent, the meeting concluded to have it read, which was done. After the subject had considerably agitated the meeting, how to dispose of it; the disaffected part of the meeting, who now very much bore rule, not by soundness of principle, but by violence, would not allow of any further notice being taken of it, and the clerk being with them, a minute of adjournment was made. Before the minute of adjournment was read, a Friend proposed, that such Friends as prepared the case relative to Rose-street preparative meeting, and any other Friends who inclined, should stop in the meeting-house after the adjournment was read; the number who remained became more considerable than at any other opportunity, amongst whom were many young people: this was a time in which those who composed the solid part of the meeting appeared to be brought very near together; the weight and exercise of their spirits appeared to have an influence on the minds of some of the youth; their countenances, I could not help thinking, bore this testimony; and after weighty and solid deliberation had taken place in viewing the state of this monthly meeting, and many interesting observations had been made, Friends adjourned to a future day. A very dressy young man expressed his thankfulness in being at this opportunity, saying he had not known such quiet and comfort in a meeting of Friends for a long time before.

Seventh-day morning, accompanied by my kind friends Samuel Wood and John Hancock, we proceeded towards Rahway; after crossing the New York river by a steam-boat, in passing through Newark, some boys were throwing pieces of paper into the air, which had been torn off a wall; one of these pieces falling before our horses, and the wind gathering under it, so frightened one of them, that he made a jump, whereby his hind leg went over the pole of the carriage; this set them both a kicking with such violence, there appeared no other prospect but that every thing belonging to the carriage within their reach, would be broken to pieces, and we should be prevented from proceeding on our journey. A collection of people about a tavern-door immediately came to our assistance, at the risk of their being injured

themselves ; the horses continued to kick and plunge until they were quite loosened from the carriage. One of our horses snorted and trembled at such a rate, through fear, it was considered doubtful whether we could with safety proceed with them ; but putting them awhile in the stable, and washing the wounds which the plunging had occasioned, it was proposed we should venture. From the feelings of my own mind, I yielded to it, under the assurance, that no further harm would befall us. Here my kind companion Samuel Wood, parted from us, and we were favoured to reach the house of our kind friend Robert Bown's this evening in safety, I hope under a thankful sense of the mercy we had experienced in the preservation of our lives.

First-day morning, attended Rahway meeting ; I had no pleasant things to deliver : I felt cause for thankfulness that I was not sensible of any thing like resisting that which I had to offer ; this I found was the judgment of some Friends of the meeting, as well as myself. In the afternoon we rode to Plainfield, a meeting being appointed at my request ; it was largely attended by Friends and others, and considered to be a solid, satisfactory meeting ; much encouragement being held out to the mourners in Zion, because of the desolating effects which unsoundness in principle was making in our borders. After this meeting was over, I was told the greater part of the members of these two meetings I had last attended, had united in sentiment with the disaffected part of the Yearly Meeting of Philadelphia. I esteemed it a great favour that this day's work was, as I trust was the case, well got through ; I felt afresh the need of great watchfulness on my part over the whole of my conduct, as it now appears I am become as obnoxious to the followers of Elias Hicks, as my country-folks are, who are here on a religious visit.

Second-day morning, we proceeded towards Trenton : our horses performed their journey well, yet at times manifesting they had not forgotten the fright they had received ; but my confidence in that overruling Providence, which had thus far cared for me, abiding with me, I was enabled to pass along without yielding to that slavish fear which my nature is so much prone to ; we were favoured to reach the house of our kind friend, Samuel Paxton, in due time. Friends were desirous we should have a meeting with them ; I had also been looking at the same subject, but as I understood some of the Friends lived at a distance, calling them together on purpose, felt rather trying to me ; neither was this subject so fully matured in my mind as to warrant such a step being taken this evening ; I therefore proposed leaving the subject until the next morning.

Third-day morning, earnest were my cries to the Lord to be preserved from suffering the fear of man so to predominate, as to be

the means of putting me by from having a meeting with Friends here, if it was required; and after much weighty deliberation, the way opened in my mind to yield to Friends being called together. I passed the afternoon agreeably with a family, who had a few children under their care for education; the day thus far closed peacefully, an ample reward for every sacrifice we may have made in crossing our own wills.

Fourth-day morning, I awoke with the prospect of the meeting called this day at my request, accompanied with earnest desires, that I might be preserved in my proper place therein: if any religious service fell to my lot this day, it was to warn such as were in danger of being carried away by the tide of ungodly principles. In the afternoon we rode to Burlington, and reached my kind friend Stephen Grellet's early in the evening. Fifth-day, attended meeting here.

Sixth-day morning, we proceeded to Philadelphia, and reached our kind friend Thomas Stewardson's to dinner. The minds of some Friends in the city appeared to be a little tried, from a report in circulation, that the disaffected members of this Yearly Meeting, in conjunction with those who had been disunited because of their unsoundness of religious principles, were about establishing a Yearly Meeting in this city, to commence next Second-day.

First-day, attended meeting at Arch-street; in the afternoon, the North-street meeting.

Second-day, attended the select meeting of Philadelphia monthly meeting. I felt comforted in sitting down with this little company.

Third-day morning, 16th of 10th mo., 1827, with my kind companion James Brown, of Peck's-kiln, who had now taken charge of me, I rode to Springfield to attend a meeting appointed at my request. I had understood the body of Friends was not large here, and that it was expected several would be absent attending the new Yearly Meeting, in Philadelphia: on our reaching the meeting-house, although we were there in proper time, the meeting was fully gathered; the attendance was much larger than I had looked for: on inquiring into the cause, I was informed, notice had been given of our intentions of being here to-day, at the close of their First-day meeting: it had become widely circulated, and brought many of their members to meeting, who, at other times, are very seldom seen here; and that some of those who had been at Philadelphia to attend what is called the new Yearly Meeting, had returned to be at this meeting. We took up our abode for the night at our kind friend Joseph Evans's.

Fourth-day morning, we pursued our course to Concord meeting, which we were favoured, after travelling over a rough and

hilly road, to accomplish in due time ; the gathering on the men's side of the house was very small. I found it hard to obtain relief to my exercised mind, but by endeavouring to keep my eye single, and have my dependence simply placed on Him, who only can help in every needful time, I was enabled to leave the meeting with a peaceful mind ; Friends expressing the comfort our unexpected visit had afforded them. We rode to West Town school, where we were kindly received.

Fifth-day morning, this being the day on which the mid-week meeting is held in this establishment, a meeting being also held at the same time at Birmingham, a few miles apart from the school, and believing that Truth pointed to Birmingham meeting this morning, and afterwards to have a meeting with the family of this establishment, with such as usually attended, I left the family to conclude on the time ; and accompanied by our kind friend Rachel Price, we rode to Birmingham meeting-house. This meeting proved an exercising time to me ; yet I felt thankful in believing it had proved a solid, satisfactory opportunity to most ; expressions of thankfulness were made by many Friends for this unexpected visit. In the course of what I had to communicate, I expressed the regret I felt to see no children on the men's side of the house, and only three on the women's side ; this led me after meeting to inquire into the cause, to which I received the following reply :—that much pains had been taken to prevent children and young people being brought to the mid-week meeting ; that there was a preparative meeting-school held on the meeting-house premises, within a few yards of the meeting-house, and the teacher of this school was a member of our religious Society, yet the children were kept at school whilst the mid-week meeting was sitting. From this account given me, I felt thankful I had spread my exercise on this subject as I had done before the meeting.

Sixth-day, attended the meeting appointed at West Town school ; the solid, orderly behaviour of the children during the sitting of the meeting, and on parting from it, did great credit to the superintendent and their numerous other care-takers. This afternoon we left the establishment, and rode to Wilmington, and reached our kind friend Samuel Camby's, before it was dark. The watch-word being renewedly proclaimed in the ear of my soul on entering Wilmington, of, "Go not from house to house," I found it must, as much as possible, be diligently attended to, as great importunity continued to be used with me to go here and here.

First-day morning, attended Wilmington meeting under feelings of great depression ; when the time came for me to open my mouth amongst them, I felt a dread of standing 'upon my feet, and yet I dreaded keeping silence ; but laying hold of the little



strength that was afforded, I stood up with these words, "I will divide them in Jacob, I will scatter them in Israel;" calling upon those assembled to be willing to put the query home individually, is not this language of, "I will divide them in Jacob, and scatter them in Israel," sorrowfully applicable to the state of things in this meeting,—and that every one would examine into the cause why things were thus amongst them; and I warned Friends against being carried away by the tide of ungodly principles, and those notions and speculations on religious subjects, which many before them have been carried away with to their great injury, calling the attention of the meeting to a view of the fruits brought forth by the promoters of these desertions in principles. When the meeting broke up, I was given to understand my communication had pinched some harder than they were willing to bear without exposing themselves: an elder, who soon afterwards made a part of the new monthly meeting of Wilmington (set-up by the disaffected party) told me, as I was leaving the house, when the meeting broke up, I had given great dissatisfaction; another, who took a very active part in setting up this new monthly meeting, and depriving Friends of the use of their meeting-house, beset me, saying, the meeting had been more like a theatre than a place of worship; saying, they were quiet among themselves, and that it was the English Friends coming amongst them, that had occasioned all the unpleasantness that had taken place. I found it would not be safe for me to go into any further explanation than to say, they were all strangers to me; as such, I could have no individual in view in what I had to offer in the meeting, I therefore must leave matters. I began to feel my situation as I journeyed along more and more awful, and advancing, as I was, towards Baltimore, hastening into the way of greater danger, I was sensible that an increase of watchfulness would be necessary as to the company I associated with, and where I took up my abode. The afternoon meeting was, I understood, larger than usual; I hope I can truly say, I did not try either to please or displease, this afternoon, but simply do my duty if any thing was given me for communication. When this meeting closed, the individual who in the morning said, the meeting was more like a theatre than a place of worship, and charged English Friends who had come over on religious visits, with being the cause of the disturbance now prevailing amongst Friends, was waiting at the door of the meeting-house, to express his satisfaction with the meeting this afternoon: another person said, he was well satisfied that my lot had been cast amongst them that day: under all, whether approbation or disapprobation, I found aiming at quietness in myself was the only safe spot for me to know an abiding in. We had a large company in the evening at our quarters, amongst whom were

some who had manifested dissatisfaction in the morning: we had a short, solid religious opportunity together, and we separated under feelings of more nearness towards each other, than was manifest by some towards me at the close of the morning meeting, for which I felt truly thankful.

Second-day morning, accompanied by our friend John Tatum, we left Wilmington, and rode to New Garden to attend an appointed meeting there; the day being very stormy, I looked for a small company at meeting, but we had a large gathering; it proved, as at many other places, a time of close labour and travail to come at the spring of Divine life; feeling, as I apprehended, much of the spirit of disaffection prevailing in the minds of many in the meeting, I found it hard work to be brought to a willingness to stand upon my feet, and make the offering that I believed was given me for communication amongst them; the meeting closed in much quiet, and I was led to hope it would not prove lost time to some who had given up to attend the meeting. We went home with our kind aged friend William Jackson, who made a religious visit to my native land many years ago, and we took up our abode with him for the night.

Third-day, attended an appointed meeting at West Grove, which was large: I found it hard work to come at that true settlement of mind, which brings the creature into a willingness to become anything or nothing in his own eyes and the eyes of the people, even just what his Divine Master wills he should be amongst this deluded company, for such I thought I evidently felt was the case.

The next day we rode to West Nottingham, and attended their mid-week meeting, which was very small; when the meeting closed, Friends expressed their satisfaction at our unexpected visit to them. It being their select meeting, I sat with the little company that composed it; the queries were read, and answers brought into the meeting ready prepared; the meeting appeared to enter into a due consideration of what was brought in for the quarterly select meeting; after meeting we rode to Deer-creek.

Fifth-day, attended meeting there; the painful sense I was brought under in this meeting, that unsoundness of principle, if my feelings did not deceive me, had overspread nearly the whole of this meeting, I am not able fully to set forth; I soon was made sensible, that what I had to communicate was not well received, and that I was surrounded by watchers, such as were watching for the halting of English Friends, as the spirit of prejudice against them was evidently increasing.

Sixth-day, we were now turning our faces towards Baltimore, in order to attend that Yearly Meeting; the prospect of which made me sad,—feeling, as I apprehended, that bonds and afflictions

awaited me there. We stopped to bait our horses at a tavern, where we met with a large company of members of our Society, on their way to this Yearly Meeting, like ourselves; who, notwithstanding they pretty generally carried themselves respectfully towards us, it was sorrowfully to be felt there was an obstruction to that familiar intercourse with each other, which has from the commencement of our Society been our characteristic badge. We were favoured to reach Baltimore, and the house of our kind friend James and Martha Carey in the evening.

Seventh-day morning, 27th of 10th mo., 1827, attended the first sitting of the select Yearly Meeting; the business of this meeting, it was sorrowfully evident, had now become a mere formal matter; the answers to the queries, peculiar to this part of the body, brought down from the quarterly meetings, instead of their being read in the meeting and time being allowed for considering their contents, were given to the clerk to prepare a summary of them, to be brought to the adjournment of the meeting. Although my mind was painfully affected at this mode of doing the business, yet I did not feel liberty to make remarks thereon, being fully satisfied it would become the concern of Friends, who remain firmly attached to our ancient principles and practices, when separated from those who are trampling upon them, to reorganize the manner of doing the business of this Yearly Meeting, and restore order again: the meeting adjourned to the afternoon. At the adjournment this afternoon, the queries, the answers, and the summary were hurried through. Towards the close of the meeting, after a severe struggle, I gave up to express what I had on my mind; for which, in this perilous time, I hope I may say, I was made truly thankful.

First-day morning, attended the meeting for the western district of this city, which was very large; feeling my mind brought under exercise for service in the meeting, and being aware there were those present who had publicly opposed the gospel truths which some of my countryfolks had to declare, I felt almost overwhelmed with discouragement; but endeavouring, after entire submission to whatever should be the will of my Divine Master, when the time was fully come for me to stand on my feet, and declare my gospel message, strength was in adorable condescension and mercy given me, in proportion to the work; and that opposing spirit, I had so much dreaded, vanished out of sight, and a free course felt for what I had to offer to the meeting. Before the meeting closed, a few remarks were made that evidently manifested dissatisfaction with a part of what I had delivered; but from the evidence in my own mind, that I had offered nothing but what Truth would bear me out in, it appeared safest for me to keep quiet. At Old Town meeting in the afternoon, my difficulties were not lessened; but as patience was sought after and abode in, and a willingness ex-

perienced to become anything or nothing in the Master's hands, ability was received to rise above all my discouragements; I trust I may say, I felt truly thankful that another day of danger and suffering was got through.

Second-day, at ten o'clock, the meeting for the general affairs of the Society assembled; after calling over the representatives, the answers to the queries from the several quarterly meetings corresponding with this Yearly Meeting, were delivered in but not read, being given to the clerk to prepare a summary to be laid before a future sitting of this Yearly Meeting: the meeting adjourned to the afternoon. At the adjournment, epistles were read from most of the Yearly Meetings on this continent, and one from the Yearly Meeting of Friends in Great Britain; the clerk informed the meeting he had in his possession two epistles from Philadelphia; one from that Yearly Meeting in correspondence with this Yearly Meeting, in the Fourth month last; and one from a body, styling themselves, the New Yearly Meeting of Friends, held in Philadelphia, in the Tenth month last. The disaffected party opposed the reading of the epistle from the Yearly Meeting of Philadelphia which had been in correspondence with this Yearly Meeting, manifesting a determination that that only should be read which came from the New Yearly Meeting, held in the Tenth month last; this brought the sound members into great difficulty, who bore their testimony faithfully against their proposed disorderly proceedings: the disaffected party showing a determination to carry their point, the clerks being of their party, and it evidently appearing the sound members no longer had either influence or authority over the meeting, they were obliged to sit quietly and submit. An epistle from the meeting for sufferings in Philadelphia to the meeting for sufferings belonging to this Yearly Meeting, setting forth the proceedings of the Separatists in their Yearly Meeting, was requested to be read in this meeting, but this by the Separatists would not be allowed; the meeting adjourned in great commotion until next morning. In the evening, attended the meeting for sufferings, in which the circumstance of withholding from the Yearly Meeting the reading of the epistle from the Yearly Meeting of Philadelphia in the Fourth month last, was brought forward and fully spoken to, and the reading of it in the Yearly Meeting urged by Friends as far as truth bore them; but being so much opposed by those who were of the disaffected party, there appeared no way for Friends but to submit.

Fourth-day, the meetings for worship were both open; feeling drawings in my mind to attend Old Town meeting, my companion James Brown and myself proceeded accordingly; the quiet of the meeting was greatly interrupted for some time by members of Society and others, coming in companies from the other meet-



ing. The most conspicuous of the Hicksite preachers of this Yearly Meeting, and some of the same class from Pennsylvania, were here, my being placed in the gallery with them for a time was trying; I would gladly, if I durst, have left the meeting, such was the unsettlement; but by endeavouring to come at that help, which alone is able to still the commotion of the mind of man, and stay the swelling of this Jordan, I was favoured to rise above the painful and discouraging feelings I had been thus tried with. Those who had left the other meeting-house, running after the Hicksite preachers, being more anxious for outward declarations and eloquence of speech, than willing to bow to the more sure word of prophecy in themselves, might be gratified by what they heard, but not truly satisfied.

Fifth-day, the meeting assembled according to adjournment; the committee on epistles, which consisted of the Hicksite part of the meeting, brought in an epistle, addressed to that body who held a Yearly Meeting in Philadelphia in the Tenth month last, which was read and ordered to be signed by the clerk on behalf of the meeting, and forwarded to that body. After Friends had protested against these disorderly proceedings, they were obliged to submit. The business of the Yearly Meeting being gone through, orders were given to inquire if the women had any thing to lay before the men's meeting. I felt myself brought under the necessity before we separated, to request the shutters might be raised between the men's and women's meetings; a short pause being made on this proposal, the women's meeting being consulted, the closing minute of the men's meeting was read, and the shutters were raised; after an opportunity had been afforded me, in which I endeavoured to be as concise as possible, so as to be able fully to relieve my own mind, the meeting separated. From remarks made by different individuals, it appeared that this last opportunity which men and woman had of sitting together, had a cementing effect on many minds; a time in which it might truly be said, the gathering arm of Omnipotence was afresh extended to this part of His heritage. I had looked towards attending this Yearly Meeting with a secret dread, but I could not now feel cause for regret I had attended it, notwithstanding I had some rough and rather insulting usage to endure in some of the meetings. My kind companion, James Brown and myself spent this afternoon with our kind friend Gerrard T. Hopkins.

Having felt drawings in my mind to visit the prisoners in the gaol, I acquainted him with what I had in prospect, requesting him to consult Friends, and if way opened for such a visit, to conclude upon its taking place at the time that best suited the views of those who had the charge of the prisoners. Sixth-day, 2d of 11th mo., 1827, this morning we proceeded

to the gaol : a court having been lately held to hear causes, when we arrived we found considerable bustle in the hall, where we were to take our seats, and the prisoners to be assembled ; some prisoners discharging and fresh ones coming into the gaol ; much conversation going forward which threatened to have a dissipating effect on the minds of both visited and visitors. I very much doubted our being able to come at any right settlement, so that my views in making this visit would be likely in any good degree to be answered ; but after awhile the bustle subsided, and we became quiet. When the religious opportunity closed, and we were about to take our leave, the prisoners generally appeared solid, and in a manner we could not doubt of their sincerity, expressed their thankfulness for the opportunity ; and one of the prisoners, rather an elderly man of the Jewish persuasion, appeared to manifest in a striking manner a sense of gratitude and susceptibility of feeling, and as if he wanted words to convey to the full what he had felt, he closed what he could say with, “ You have been sent from Bethel.” I felt fresh cause for setting up the Ebenezer, and saying, “ Surely hitherto it is the Lord that hath helped me.” I retired to bed, but my portions of sleep during the night were few in number, and those very short.

My mind had been occupied with an apprehension of religious duty to make a visit to a great slave-merchant, who resided in the city, where the needy slave-holders, and such as had slaves who were refractory and difficult to manage, were encouraged, by his weekly advertisements, to come, and find a ready market for them. A large building is erected on his premises like a prison, to secure them until he had, in his profession, a suitable complement to send to different places, where there was a demand for them. I found from his character, as a man, independent of his employment, he was of a very ferocious disposition, so much so, that many, we were told, stood in dread of him ; notwithstanding which, this subject had now taken such hold of my mind, I saw no way for my relief but to be willing to attempt an interview with him. Seventh-day morning, we called upon a Friend, to whom I opened my trying situation relative to my making a visit to this slave-merchant ; we found if we did make such a visit, it would be best for us to go alone ; we accordingly proceeded towards his residence : on our way I felt much for my companion, from what I had heard of the unsubdued will and wicked disposition of mind of the slave-merchant, and the danger we might be exposed to from the large dogs, I was told, he kept loose about his premises, to the terror of those who passed by his dwelling ; but there was no way for me but to cast my care on Him, who had so many times preserved me as from the paw of the bear and the jaws of the devourer. As we advanced towards the house, one

of these great, fierce-looking animals came out at us, followed by another of the like kind, as if they would have seized us: their noise soon brought out one of the house-slaves, and, as we supposed, the slave-merchant himself, whose countenance looked as fierce as his animals, querying with us in a stern, commanding manner, 'What is your business?' I offered him my hand, feeling nothing in my heart but love towards him as a man; saying, I would be obliged to him to suffer me to have a little conversation with him. He asked us into his house; on my requesting him to have the dogs taken care of, saying, I was a nervous man, he attended to it; on our ascending the steps of his house, we observed more of these large dogs chained about the yards. He showed us into a very elegantly-furnished parlour; on the shelf of the chimney-piece was a pistol, which to me appeared to be ready cocked for use, should he at any time be put to the test of defending himself; he ordered us to take a seat on a sofa, and placed himself near us. I gave him my certificates to read, which he appeared to do attentively; this afforded us an opportunity of having our minds brought into quiet after our besetment by the dogs, and their master's angry countenance. When he returned my certificates, the reading of which appeared to have somewhat softened his mind, he said, 'I suppose you are going about preaching the gospel;' to which I replied, 'I profess to be so circumstanced.' I then endeavoured, in a tender, feeling, but decided manner, to open the subject that brought me to his house, telling him, I came on behalf of the poor coloured-people; that I lived in a country where the inhabitants were all free people, but I found I was now in a slave-holding part of the United States of America; and by an advertisement I had of his in my possession, it appeared he was a dealer in these coloured people, who were kept in slavery. I requested him to pause for a moment, and endeavour, as much as possible, to place his own parents and nearest relatives in the very situation of those poor creatures he had at times purchased and sold again, thereby separating the nearest connexions far from each other,—husbands from wives, and children from parents; and try how far such acts as these he was in the practice of, accorded with such feeling of humanity as he would wish should have been exercised towards his own parents and relatives; with more to the same effect than my memory serves me to relate.

He appeared to hear me patiently, and tried to justify his conduct, but with coolness and deliberation; saying, he was educated in a slave-holding state,—that his father was a slaveholder, but that his mother was a pious woman, in connexion with the Methodists;—that she was in the practice of reading the Bible to her children, and that her pious care for him he yet remembered, and some of the good counsel that she gave him; that through her influence his father manumitted

about seventy slaves: she died when he was young. On his father marrying again, he found he must leave home, or render it unpleasant to his parents, which he did not desire to do, and therefore he entered into the army, and was at the battle of New Orleans: after the war was over, the army was broken up: on quitting the army he found himself in debt, and not knowing what employment to take to, and extricate himself from his difficulties, a relation encouraged him to become a slave-merchant, offering him funds to commence this trade, which he accepted; yet saying (we thought feelingly so) it is a bad business, and that he had concluded to give it up, and had been making arrangements for that purpose. But some of his employers, in the first rank of slave-holders, and even some who were making much profession of religion, would not allow of his giving up his business, but urged him to go on with it. He laid great stress on the encouragement he received from this latter description of his barterers, from which I was led to fear, when he felt any qualms of conscience on account of the manner he was getting his wealth (as he was deemed wealthy), the entreaties of this latter class would be resorted to by him to salve over the wounds of conscience he at times might experience, which I could not doubt had been the case at times with him: he also pleaded having the laws of the state to sanction him in his traffic, which opened the way for me to go further into the subject: but in time it evidently was manifest, that the Divine witness was so reached in him, as to compel him to cast away all his weapons of defence. He gave it as his opinion, that before twenty years were passed over, slavery would be brought to a final close, if the work was rightly gone about. By this time we thought we never witnessed the declaration—that the lion should lie down with the lamb, more fully exemplified. He assured us again of his determination to quit his business, and acknowledged the gratitude he felt for the visit, took his leave of us in an affectionate manner, conducting us himself quite off his premises. As we quitted him, his countenance, which on our first approach appeared terrific, was so changed, that he was pleasant to look upon. Every thing about his elegant house and his yards, told, in plain terms, that he considered himself living in continual danger of losing his life. I believe he was often remembered by us during the day afterwards. I felt truly thankful to the great Preserver of men, when we reached our place of destination again; and more especially so when we were informed of this slave-holder's treatment recently to a Friend, who had been active in promoting abolition, by throwing the Friend down in the street, and trampling upon him to that degree, that it was thought his life was in danger therefrom.

First-day morning, attended the south meeting-house: in the



afternoon our kind friend Gerard T. Hopkins, and other Friends, called upon us to proceed to the Penitentiary, to make a visit to the prisoners, for which, arrangements had been previously made: on arriving at the institution we were kindly received by the principal keeper and other officers, who conducted us to the men's apartments, where two hundred and seventy prisoners were assembled; their behaviour was generally very becoming, and the meeting was conducted in a solid manner: when it was over I found I must request to be permitted to give each of the prisoners my hand, as they passed away; the generality of them appeared very grateful for the religious opportunity, and manifested tenderness. We next proceeded to make a visit to the women, only thirty in number, and twenty-six of these were people of colour, with whom we had a religious opportunity; at parting I gave them my hand: one woman of colour held me so fast, I had a difficulty to get loose from her again, and when that took place, she burst out aloud weeping sorely. After these opportunities were over, we walked about the different apartments in the prison; being in the yard, one of the prisoners, with the consent of the principal keeper, came up to me, saying he was an Englishman, from Woolwich, sentenced to a few years' imprisonment: he importuned me to intercede with the English consul to have the remainder of his time remitted; and on inquiry of the governor relative to his conduct, he informed me he had not a better-conducted man in the prison. I could not put from me the request of my countryman the next day; I accordingly applied to the British consul on his behalf: on my being afterwards at Baltimore, and inquiring after my countryman, I found he had been liberated, and was gone home to his native land. Accompanied by our kind friend Hugh Balderson, we rode to Elkridge.

Third-day, attended a meeting held here at my request; the house was pretty generally filled by Friends and others. I believe it was considered a satisfactory meeting; after meeting, accompanied by George Elliot, we rode to Sand Springs.

The next day, we attended meeting here; the morning being very stormy, the meeting was very small: but this was not the case in the first commencement of our religious Society, when Friends could not hold their meetings because of the opposition they at times met with from those in power and the rude rabble: but now these matters are made easy to us, and we are protected in holding our meetings in quiet, greater indifference in the attendance of them prevails. At the close of the meeting for worship, the monthly meeting was held; there being but little business before the meeting, it was soon quietly got through. A Friend of the meeting, who came to our lodging, took leave of us to go home, but after he had reached the door to leave, came back again to

say his mind had been prejudiced against the English Friends, but that the prejudice had been done away by that which had been communicated to the meeting in the line of the ministry: these remarks felt like a cordial to my mind, as my companion had, in a feeling manner, to allude in the meeting, as well as myself, to the sorrowful divisions that had and were taking place amongst Friends, and to point out that which appeared to us to have been the cause hereof, and the only remedy that would effect a more close union again; things were greatly out of order in this meeting in that respect.

Sixth-day morning, attended meeting at Indian Springs, which we understood was larger than it usually is; the meeting soon settled down into quiet, and the people appeared solid and attentive. We then rode to the city of Washington, which we did not reach until it was nearly dark: we took up our abode with our friend James Hosier.

Seventh-day morning, (10th of 11th mo. 1827,) my mind being drawn to make a visit to the President of the United States, I mentioned the subject to my countryman Samuel Brook, who had for many years held a situation in the treasury department here; on which he kindly offered to go to the president's house and inquire if he was at home; this prospect afresh bowed my spirit before the Lord in secret cries to him, if way should open for me to have an interview with the president, to be preserved faithful to that which appeared to be the Divine will. Samuel Brook soon returned with a message from the president, saying he was at liberty to receive me at such time as best suited myself. My companion James Brown and myself soon waited upon him, by whom we were received in a kind, respectful manner: I presented him with my certificates, which he appeared to read with attention: this practice of offering my certificates when making such visits to those not of our own religious Society, I have found to be attended with a two-fold benefit, as being the most agreeable mode of introducing myself,—my certificates explaining my views in leaving my own home fully, dispensing with the asking of many questions which otherwise would in all probability be put, and affording time, if any perturbation of mind may have taken place, to endeavour after composure again. On the president returning me my certificates, I informed him, that during my travels in the United States of America, various matters had attracted my attention; some of which had been brought before the view of my mind since I had arrived at the capital, which I must lay before him for his serious consideration; one of which was the very distressed situation of two very aged and infirm women, one of them having quite lost her sight, the daughters of

the old chief of the Orida tribe, Scannadore; who, when living, was highly esteemed by those who were of influence in congress, for his piety, uprightness of conduct, and great powers of mind: these two aged and infirm women, have now no other means of supporting themselves, but by begging their food from day to day, of their tribe, who are poor themselves: I therefore requested him to take their deplorable case into consideration, and if there were any of the funds of the state that could be appropriated to their support to be so kind as to attend to them. He assured me it should obtain his attention. I further informed him, I had been painfully affected in observing, that spirituous liquors were generally retailed in the grocers' shops in this city as well as New York and other places in the United States; which practice, according to the view I had of it, opened a wide door for intemperance, because persons who, in the commencement of their intemperance, would be ashamed to be seen going into a common dram-shop, (and especially so a respectable-looking female,) could enter a grocer's shop to get their dram, and not be suspected of indulging themselves in such evil practices; it also opened a door for servants who were that way disposed, when sent by their employers to these places of temptation to fall into these evil practices, until they became confirmed drunkards. I recommended the president to lay the subject before the members of congress, and by so doing, if he could do no more than this towards endeavouring to remove this great evil, I believed he would find peace in so doing;—counselling him not to fear man, but to fear the Lord, that so he might be found filling the important situation He had permitted him to be placed in, consistently with the Divine mind and will: I added, it has long been my firm belief, that according to the power invested in us, so if we did not exert that power and influence, as far as in us lies, in preventing evil practices, we ourselves become implicated therein in the sight of Almighty God, with those who are actually in the practice of them; and that I feared the people of the United States had forgot again that Almighty hand which had brought about their deliverance from that warfare they had been involved in; and that it was my belief, if wickedness continued to increase in the United States as it had done, a scourge in some way or another would again be permitted to come upon the people of the United States of America;—with more than I can call to remembrance. At our parting, the president expressed the satisfaction our visit had afforded him; in which we felt cause to unite, in that he had given us such a full opportunity to relieve our minds.

First-day, attended meeting here; most of the members of this meeting had given proof of unsoundness in religious principles; the meeting was nearly one hour in gathering; this is one amongst many other disorders which these unsound princi-

ples, now so widely spread amongst us in this land, has introduced into our religious Society. I believe both my companion and myself were favoured to quit the meeting with our minds relieved, yet not without our having public opposition to bear with. We were obliged to exert ourselves to reach the afternoon meeting at Alexandria in due time.

Second-day morning, we proceeded on our way to attend the monthly meeting of Fairfax, to be held at Waterford; we had a very trying day's journey of thirty-six miles, at the close of which, for about one hour, we were brought into a great strait; night came fast on, and we were travelling on a road we were strangers to, where neither inhabitant nor house was to be met with: it became so dark, that we concluded it would be unsafe for us to proceed much further, and therefore if we did not in a few minutes more get sight of some building to shelter ourselves in for the night, we must be content to take up our lodging in our waggon. I felt more for our poor horses than myself, the herbage being entirely burnt up; but on a sudden we observed, and that was all we could say, something like the top of a barn, which we ventured to make towards, and soon discovered a glimmering light, which led us to the house of the family we were intending to take up our abode at for the night. I hope I may say, I felt truly thankful to our great Almighty Care-taker for this favour in this very needful time: we met with a kind reception from the family, and were glad to retire to bed after such a day of fatigue to both body and mind.

Fourth-day, we attended the monthly meeting: the meeting for worship was large; the business of the monthly meeting appeared to be conducted in a summary way, for want of Friends feeling a more lively interest in the concerns of the Society. After the monthly meeting we rode to Goose Creek. The next morning attended monthly meeting there; the business appeared to be conducted with a good degree of care, that the right order of the discipline should be maintained; the subject came before us of petitioning the legislature on behalf of the people of colour in this state, whose humane masters had granted them freedom, but not having the means to emigrate with their families to a free state, by the time limited by the law of the state, were in danger of being by law again sold into bondage; forty of them, the meeting was informed, had been, by the attorney of the state, presented to the grand jury, who, it was said, were generally chosen of men who were the most likely to see this law rigidly put in force. It was concluded by the meeting that the representatives should report this case to the quarterly meeting.

Sixth-day morning, we left the comfortable house of our kind friend Jonas Jamney, and rode towards Hopewell. We forded the Schannadere river, the approach of which to me appeared awful;



but by endeavouring to keep near to the great Carc-taker, I was preserved in the quiet, until we were favoured to land safely on the other side.

Seventh-day, (17th of 11th mo.) attended the quarterly select meeting for Fairfax held at Hopewell: this, to me, was a very exercising time; it felt hard work to the creaturely part to deliver that which came before the view of my mind for communication; but by endeavouring to keep near to Him, our great Helper, strength was mercifully given to deliver what I had in charge, whereby I was favoured to leave the meeting peacefully. I had reason to believe, that comfort was afforded to the honest-hearted members of this meeting, who were suffering under the weight of the prevalency of unsound principles, which were so sorrowfully spreading amongst the members of this quarterly meeting.

First-day, attended meeting at Hopewell, which was large; it was nearly an hour after the time it should have been gathered, before we were favoured to settle down into quiet. We had a large party at my lodgings in the evening, who were very full of conversation; but I could not give much, if any attention to it, my mind being introduced into exercise for religious service. I suffered one short interval of silence after another to pass over unimproved, until a fear came over my mind as to the consequences, should the company separate, and I be not faithful to that which I believed was committed to me. I requested Friends to be silent, fearing such opportunities as I had missed would not be found again before a separation took place. My request was yielded to, which afforded me an opportunity for relief; yet I had no other expectation but that it would have produced opposition; the chief of our company were professedly in connexion with those who deny the fundamental doctrines, which we, as a Society, have ever held, as regards the Divinity of our Redeemer; one of them was a leading man, and Goliath in their cause; but all passed off quietly.

The next morning the quarterly meeting for discipline commenced; the subject of petitioning the legislature on behalf of the people of colour obtained much consideration; and the monthly meetings in which these cases existed, were encouraged to proceed therein as truth might open the way. The meeting closed upon the whole comfortably.

Third-day, we proceeded towards Newmarket: on our arrival at Harper's-ferry, which we had to cross, we found three waggon, with six horses each, had reached the ferry before us, and were waiting to go over; there was only one boat to convey passengers and carriages, and we had no time to spare to get to our quarters before night: we offered to purchase the first turn when the boat returned from the other side, but the waggoners were so imposing we did not feel easy to fall in with their demand, not aware of the difficulties they were able to expose us to on the

other side by going over before us. After an exercise of patience, we were favoured to land on the other side. But here our greatest trials with the waggoners began; the pass, by the river-side, for a great distance, was so narrow, as not to allow of one carriage to pass another, except in a very few places, where the rock had been cut through for this purpose: we were much tried with their slow travelling, which appeared to be more on purpose to annoy us, because we would not yield to their imposition, than from necessity; and if we attempted to turn into one of these places, to get before them, they would either turn their horses across the road, or gallop on to prevent us. In making a further attempt to turn into one of these nooks, to pass by them, our wheel touched one of their waggons; upon this, the driver came out of his waggon in great fury, and threatened he would stone our waggon to pieces; we had no other expectation but he would have done us and our waggon an injury. I felt not a little tried at our being at the mercy of such a lawless set of unprincipled men; but one more considerate than the rest assisted us when an opportunity offered, and with some difficulty we got quite clear of them, but did not reach our tavern until it was quite dark.

We proceeded to Newmarket, and next day attended meeting at Bush Creek, an old cold meeting-house; it proved a solid, quiet meeting. I felt well satisfied I had given up to attend it, from a hope in my own mind, that those desolating principles, which have so spread in other meetings in this land, had not made much way amongst Friends here. We reached the house of Edward Hatton, the only surviving son of Susannah Hatton, (afterwards Lightfoot;) and on seventh-day attended Warrington select quarterly meeting, held at Pipe Creek, a time of close exercise, both of faith and patience; yet feelings of gratitude to my heavenly Master prevailed with me, in that he had been pleased to favour me with strength, whereby the retrospect of this day's labour afforded a consoling evidence I had acquitted myself faithfully in his cause.

First-day morning, (25th of 11th mo. 1827,) attended meeting at Pipe Creek, which was large, many being obliged to remain on the outside of the house. Second-day morning, the quarterly meeting for discipline commenced; the meeting for worship which preceded it was, I believe, by most present, considered a memorable one; it called forth from an experienced, aged Friend, the acknowledgment of belief, that what had gone forth in the line of the ministry, would, as the wise man expresses it, be like bread cast upon the waters, that would be found after many days. There being but little business for the quarterly meeting, it soon closed. I left the meeting under a painful sense of the great loss sustained by Friends of this quarterly meeting, for want of greater promptness in attending to the

concerns of the Society in their monthly and quarterly meetings, through giving way to fears that have not their foundation in the truth; and yet no way opened for me to relieve my mind more fully on the subject than I had done; having, as I hope was the case, endeavoured to do my best, I found I must there leave it. After meeting, we rode to New Windsor, and took up our abode for the night at the widow Hibbert's. Third-day, we rode to Baltimore, and were favoured to reach our friend James Carey's in the afternoon. The next day, attended the mid-week meeting, which was very small; the meeting was considered to be a solid, favoured time; at the close of which was held the preparative meeting. We went home to dine with our kind friend Gerard T. Hopkins.

During our travel through a part of Maryland, our road lay through the estate of a great slave-holder: the feelings I was impressed with at that time frequently came up in my view. To-day, dinner being over, and sitting quietly with my mind turned towards the Lord, with desires that I might be able to see my way rightly out of Baltimore, I was brought under an apprehension of duty to make a visit to the owner of the estate I had recently passed through in Maryland, who was a great slave-holder, and who I understood was in the city. It being considered best we should go alone, my companion and myself proceeded to his residence. Whilst on our way, I became very thoughtful how I should open my prospects to him. Labouring thus under these discouraging impressions, the saying of the great Master revived in my mind, "Take no thought before-hand, what ye shall speak,"—accompanied with such power, that all my fears were dissipated; I therefore endeavoured to keep in the quiet, and near the Divine power. On our reaching his house and inquiring for him, we were shown to his apartment, and met with a very handsome reception. After we had taken our seats, and answered a few questions he put to us, I opened to him the business that had brought me there, by telling him I understood he was a great slave-holder: to which he replied, I was correct, he was a slave-holder, having upwards of three hundred slaves in his possession. I endeavoured to lay before him the injustice of holding his fellow-creatures in bondage, and to work upon his feelings, by urging him to be willing to place his own parents, his children, his relatives, in a similar situation with his slaves, and liable, at pleasure, to be separated,—near relatives far from each other, during their natural lives; and thus to be willing to bring the matter home to his own mind, how he would feel if he himself were placed under similar circumstances with his slaves: I pressed upon him the necessity of doing his duty by them, and to liberate them in his lifetime, or if he did not choose to liberate them in his lifetime, I found I must query with him, had he liberated them by his will?

to which he replied, he had willed his slaves to his children and grandchildren, who would do as well by them as he had done. I replied, that was more than he could assure himself of, inasmuch as, though he might bequeath to his children and grandchildren great property, (he being reputed to be very rich,) he could not insure their being able to keep this great property together: various were the ways Providence had power to make use of, to strip them of all he might bequeath them, and without any power on their part to prevent this being the case;—the slaves he left his children and grandchildren, then, in all probability, must have new masters; and it was my firm belief, should this be the case, whatever were the sufferings his slaves were brought into in consequence of his not doing his duty in liberating them whilst he had it in his power, by will or otherwise, he would stand accountable to his Maker for the sufferings his slaves might be involved in; I further urged upon him, as he valued his immortal soul, the importance of his being willing to make this sacrifice. He replied, “Our views differ.” I again urged him, as he valued his own soul, to be willing to consider well the subject I had believed myself called upon by the Almighty now to cast before him; and to manumit his poor slaves whilst it was in his power, and put them in a way to provide for themselves, as he was able to do it. To which he replied, that manumitting his slaves would be doing them a great injury,—that they were lazy and improvident, and not capable of caring for themselves, and would not be alive, if set free, three or four years after they were liberated; now, he said, they were well fed, well clothed, received religious instruction, he himself being a Catholic, and the spot they lived upon was so healthy, they increased so fast, that they were obliged at times to sell them off to other masters to reduce their stock; and such as were what he called ugly, not very manageable, were sent off to the slave-holders in South Carolina. My companion told him, if their lot should be cast in the indigo-works there, they seldom survived three or four years; this seemed to make an impression on his mind; he only replied they would be well cared for. He spoke of his practices of separating parents from children, children from parents, and near relatives from each other, (when his slaves became too numerous for him, or were difficult to manage,) with quite as much seeming indifference as a farmer could speak of selling his calves from his cows, or his pigs from their mother; he again attempted to justify his conduct in not being willing to grant his slaves their liberty, by saying they were lazy, and that keeping his slaves was to him a losing concern; but afterwards he sadly committed himself, by adding, he was afraid, in harvest-time, to employ white men, lest they should spoil his negroes, saying the white men were drunkards and lazy; he preferred negroes in harvest-time, they being



industrious and sober, were more to be depended upon than white men. On his making these remarks, I told him, that from the last confession he had made, he could not justify himself, on the ground he had attempted, in the sight of his Maker, in leaving his slaves in bondage, as he intended to do; and I urged him again well to consider the subject I had proposed to him, and whilst he had it in his power, to liberate his slaves;—wishing him to consider what a precious testimony against this practice of holding our fellow-creatures in bondage, he would leave behind him, when the separation took place between soul and body, and his death became announced in the public newspapers, if it could be said he had liberated all those he had held in bondage; for he was not aware how much his example in this respect might have an influence on the minds of others, and promote the like conduct in them. From the remarks he had, it was evident, unintentionally made, relative to the white men and negroes, it appeared he was sensible he had sadly committed himself, in a way he did not intend, which prevented his making further efforts to justify his conduct. I entreated him to consult his pillow on what had been communicated. We left him, well satisfied in giving up to this humiliating service, and I was thankful in believing I had done all that was required of me in the discharge of apprehended duty, and had in this respect fulfilled the injunction of the apostle, “Be not partakers of other men’s sins, but reprove them;” which cannot be the case in my view, if, when our minds are brought under exercise on account of the conduct of others, which our judgment is sensibly affected with a belief is not in accordance with the will of God, and we feel ourselves called upon to labour with them to bring them to a proper sense of it,—we neglect so to do, from whatsoever cause our omission may arise, we become implicated in degree with them in the Divine sight. At our parting, he treated us as he received us, with great politeness and civility, offering himself to conduct us to the door. My companion thought he had got hold of that he would not be able easily to get quit of.

Fifth-day morning, we left our kind friend James Carey’s, intending to go to Darby meeting on First-day; the rain falling very heavy, we could not reach Havre-de-Grace that night, as we had proposed. The next day, the prospect of pursuing our journey was discouraging, from the great quantity of rain that had fallen during the night, and its continuing to fall; we started as early as we were able: when we reached Havre-de-Grace, we had to pass the Susquehannah river, about one mile over, the fog was so great we could not see many yards before us, which made our crossing appear dangerous; but greater trials began soon after to manifest themselves after we landed; in consequence of the great quantity of rain that had fallen since our leaving Baltimore, the rivers we had to ford had risen to that height as to make it dangerous

attempting to cross some of them. On our approach to the first of these, we observed a stage-coach standing on the opposite side, afraid to venture through; seeing us come up, the driver hailed us, bidding us to come along, but I told my companion, as he was the first at the river we must not let him profit by our experience; and therefore we made a full stand, on which the driver ventured, and by going through a field, avoided the deepest part of the water; we kept a sharp look-out at the route he took, and by care in taking the same, we safely reached the other side. A passenger in the coach kindly warned us not to attempt to cross the next river without the assistance of a coloured man, who had piloted them safely through, whom we must hale from the other side of this river. On our approaching the next river, it made a yet more formidable appearance in width and strength of current; we haled the coloured-man, who came over a high foot-bridge through the water to our assistance, and by his driving our waggon some way round, brought us safe to the other side, where we left travellers apparently afraid to venture over anywhere; we found the best ford very deep and dangerous, and were thankful when we reached land again. This was called the Little Elk; we had yet the Big Elk still to ford, which was considered the most dangerous; a carriage and horses, we were informed, some years ago had been carried away by the current: there was a way round, we were told, whereby we might escape fording this Big Elk; but if we took this road, we should have to travel in the night to reach Wilmington, if we reached it at all to-night, which might endanger our reaching Darby timely for meeting on First-day. My kind companion gave me my choice; I considered this subject in the best way I was capable, feeling not a little of the responsibility attaching to my concluding to ford the river instead of going round, where we were told there was a bridge to cross over this Big Elk, but a long way round. As however I felt quite easy in my own mind to ford the river, we proceeded; on our way towards it we met a respectable man, and inquired of him, if we could ford the river with safety; he informed us, he believed the river was yet safe to ford; we therefore ventured; the current was running very strong, and before we reached the other side, for a short distance, the water was so deep our horses and carriage swam; thankful I was when our horses found foot-hold again, and more so when we came to shore: we were favoured to reach Wilmington safely about dark, where we were kindly received by our friend Samuel Lanby.

Seventh-day morning, 1st of 12th mo., 1827, we proceeded towards Darby; this meeting had now become as disaffected a meeting as any in Concord quarter: the prospect of sitting the meeting for worship to-morrow appeared trying. Our kind landlord, Nathaniel Newland, entertained us in the evening with the following rela-

tion. During the war between Great Britain and America, in the year 1812; Darby meeting-house of Friends was occupied by some of the American army, but on Friends applying to the commanding-officer for liberty to meet in it on meeting-days, it was granted, and the house was as well cleared at such times as the nature of the situation of the army would allow of: many of the army sat down with Friends in their meetings, the officers and soldiers sitting at the back part of the house to make room for Friends at the front of the meeting-house; they conducted themselves in a solid manner: at the first of Friends' sitting down to hold their meetings in this way, the swords and other accoutrements of war that hung about the walls of the meeting-house, appeared awful and terrific; but in time these feelings became much lessened, and their meetings were times of Divine favour, —some Friends now acknowledging they never sat more favoured opportunities, either before or since, as these were.

First-day morning, we walked to the meeting, which was large; I had such close things to deliver, I was ready to fear it would have stirred up (from some in the ministry who were of the disaffected party) opposition to what I had offered; but, as my dear companion observed after meeting, the opposing disposition was chained down. The behaviour of some young people was so reproachful, that I was brought under the necessity of noticing it; such disorderly behaviour in meeting among the young men more particularly prevails, where this disaffection has taken place. We had various invitations to dinner when meeting broke up; one individual, who afterwards in public-print endeavoured to vilify my character, importuned me much; but it appearing safest to keep out of harm's way, we returned to our quarters. In the afternoon we rode to Philadelphia, where we were kindly received by Thomas Stewardson and his attentive family.

Second-day, visited the Friends' Asylum for persons disordered in their minds; the house is commodious, the grounds for the patients are rather extensive, and laid out agreeably, and the situation is healthy; there appeared no lack of any thing likely, in the various circumstances of malady the patients were labouring under, to add to their comfort. The next morning, attended the north meeting; after the meeting for worship, an adjournment of the monthly meeting was held, many cases were before this meeting of individuals, who had united themselves to the new Yearly Meeting held in this city, which issued in orders for testimonies of denial. Friends appeared to act with great caution, and with unanimity in these sorrowful cases, manifesting a right concern for these their erring brethren.

Fourth-day, attended Pine-street meeting, at which there was a marriage; it proved to me a quiet, favoured meeting: in the afternoon we crossed the river Delaware into New Jersey, and

were kindly cared for by our friend Benjamin Cooper and his family.

Attended Chester monthly meeting, held at Moor's Town: a separation had taken place in this monthly meeting, but Friends and the Hicksites still meet together in a meeting for worship capacity; when the meeting for worship closed, Friends continued to keep their seats; the clerk of the monthly meeting, having united himself to the Hicksites, kept possession of the books, and taking his seat at the table, had the advantage of Friends, and opened their meeting first. Friends sat quietly,—there appearing no other way under the trying circumstances in which they were placed. After the clerk of the Hicksite monthly meeting had read the opening minute, one of the Hicksites called for my certificates; pausing on the request that had been thus made, I stood up, saying, as I did not consider those who were now about to transact monthly meeting business the legitimate monthly meeting of Chester, I could not offer my certificates to them, and here the matter closed; except that one of their party replied, my services in the meeting for worship had been acceptable, but expressing myself as I had done, by not allowing them to be the legitimate monthly meeting, I must be acting under the influence of the evil power; silence to these observations appeared to be my duty. When the Hicksites had done their business they quitted the house, and Friends proceeded quietly with theirs, and the meeting closed comfortably. After meeting we proceeded to Evesham, and took up our abode at my kind friend Job Hain's, who had offered to release my companion James Brown, he believing the time to be come when it would be right for him to return to his family; we, having travelled together in much harmony and gospel fellowship, now took an affectionate leave of each other: this separation at first felt like a stripping time to me.

Sixth-day, attended the monthly meeting held at Upper Evesham, where I met with my countryfolks, George and Ann Jones; the quarterly meeting's committee gave their attendance at this meeting; no separation had taken place in this monthly meeting, the clerk being with Friends, the business went on in its regular course; several cases were on the monthly meeting books of those members who had united themselves to the Hicksite yearly, quarterly, and monthly meetings; the business of the meeting appeared to be conducted under much concern for the welfare of the cause of Truth, and we separated under feelings of gratitude, and a favoured sense that best Help had been near in transacting the several matters that came before the meeting.

Seventh-day, (8th of 12th mo.) attended the monthly meeting of Lower Evesham; no division having taken place in this monthly meeting, in appointing representatives to the quarterly meeting,



the names of some were brought forward who had attended the Hicksite Yearly Meeting, which names were objected to by Friends: all quietly passed on, and a nomination made of Friends for that purpose: the meeting closed under feelings of thankfulness for that Divine help that had been extended. After meeting we rode towards Cropwell, and had a very full opportunity with a Friend and his wife, whom we could not doubt were well-meaning individuals, but were in danger of being drawn aside by the Hicksite party, by having attended some of their meetings; the woman, at times with tears flowing from her eyes, expressed the earnestness of her desire that her soul might be preserved doing what was right, either remaining with the monthly meeting she now was a member of, or to join the new monthly meeting that was set up, adding, she was wearied with the contention which of late had prevailed amongst Friends. The man appeared more decided at first, and, as if he had fully made up his mind to become a member of the new monthly meeting, and yet open to hear what we had to offer to him on the subject: at our retiring to bed, he manifested a willingness to enter again into the consideration of consequences, if he pursued his determination of joining the new monthly meeting: my companion meeting with the man next morning, who told him he had passed a sleepless night; this afforded me some hopes he yet might, in mercy, escape the snare.

First-day, we attended meeting at Cropwell, it was large; a considerable portion of which consisted of young people: if any right religious labour fell to my lot in this meeting, it was to guard Friends against the danger of associating with that spirit that is at work, to cause rents and divisions amongst us, and to call their attention to an observance of the fruits which this spirit has already brought forth, fruits as opposite to the doctrines and precepts of Christ as light is to darkness: the meeting was held in great quiet, the young people keeping their seats until the meeting closed. After taking our dinner, we rode to Hannah Hopkin's, where we were kindly cared for.

Second-day morning, attended the monthly meeting, which was large, occasioned by the quarterly meeting's committee being there, also some who called themselves members of the new Yearly Meeting in Philadelphia, and from other meetings in connexion with that new Yearly Meeting. I arose on my feet with these words; "Fret not thyself because of evil doers;" having the language of encouragement given me to hold out to the willing in Israel, who might be ready to let go their dependence on that arm of Divine Power which hitherto hath sustained them, not to yield to the enemy's insinuations, and conclude their way is hid from the Lord, and their judgment passed over from their God; but to be willing to ponder the fruits brought forth by this divid-

ing spirit which had so sorrowfully entered into our borders: for by bringing their fruits to that Light which gives a clear discernment in things Divine, it will be fully manifest, that they are not wrought in God, and therefore will in due time come to nought. When the meeting for business opened, great confusion took place; some members of the monthly meeting, who had been active with others in setting up new meetings, and locking Friends out of their meeting-houses, offered a paper to be read in the monthly meeting, but which the meeting stood firm against: when they could not prevail in this way, one of the advocates for its being read, informed the meeting, the paper contained a proposal to the monthly meeting, that those who had become members of these newly set-up meetings should have liberty to withdraw from the monthly meeting without the odium being attached to their character of being disowned by the Society; this compromise (could they have prevailed on Friends to have yielded to) it was apprehended, would have entitled them to a part of the property of the monthly meeting. Before the meeting closed, one of the disaffected party invited all who were willing, after the monthly meeting was over, to remain to hear the paper read, and went into the women's house, giving the same invitation.

Fourth-day morning, the select quarterly meeting for Haddonfield was held, which at the commencement of it was trying, occasioned by some men and women, part of a committee appointed by the Hicksite Yearly Meeting, to visit the quarterly, monthly, and other meetings of Friends, being in attendance at this select meeting, and refusing to go out of the meeting-house; but as it became evident that the general voice of the meeting was opposed to their remaining, they withdrew; after which the business of the meeting was quietly proceeded in.

Fifth-day morning, (13th of 12th mo.) the quarterly meeting for discipline commenced. Friends having been so interrupted in their proceedings with their business at their quarterly meeting in the 9th mo. last, by those who had united themselves to the Hicksite Yearly Meeting, had concluded it best for the present to suspend the meeting for worship, heretofore held previously to entering upon the business, in order to prevent such difficulties in future as had then occurred; and they appointed a suitable number of doorkeepers to attend the door of the men's and women's house, to keep these meetings select: the doorkeepers made fast the back-doors of the meeting-house, expecting to have opposition to contend with at the front-doors as much as they might be equal to; but some members of this quarterly meeting, who had united themselves to the Hicksite Yearly Meeting, and been active in setting up new quarterly and monthly meetings, whose cases had not yet been brought before the monthly meeting, were early in their attend-

ance at the meeting-house, and unfastened the back-doors, and thus let into the meeting-house, those whom the doorkeepers had refused, as having forfeited their membership in the Society. The meeting being gathered, the clerk opened the quarterly meeting, after which divers Friends requested that those who had no claim to sit in that quarterly meeting, would leave the meeting-house; but with these requests they manifested a determination not to comply, the Hicksite party ordering the clerk to quit the table, saying they had nominated a clerk of their own, whom they ordered to take possession of the quarterly meeting books. From the contentions and determined spirit which the Hicksite party manifested, I was led to fear they would have used force to have gained their point in obtaining the books; Friends however manifested calmness and composure through the whole of this trying scene, and after considerable exercise of patience, as no persuasions were of any avail, they concluded it would be best to adjourn to Sixth-day morning: this proposal met with violent opposition from the Hicksite party, and when two men Friends went into the women's meeting to inform them of the adjournment, two of the Hicksite party followed them into the women's meeting, declaring the larger number of the meeting was opposed to this adjournment, and intended to go on with the business of the quarterly meeting; but not being received by the women's meeting, as the official messengers from the men's meeting, the women's meeting adjourned to the same time: before the adjournment could be read, one of the Hicksite party stood up, and requested such as chose to stop, to remain in the meeting-house and transact the business of the quarterly meeting. After the adjournment was read, Friends quietly retired.

Matters now ran high against the English Friends, who were engaged in religious service on this side of the Atlantic; in one quarterly meeting, the enmity against them was such, that proposals were made by the Hicksite party, that such minutes as were on the books of that meeting, acknowledging our certificates being presented to their meeting, should be cancelled; or a minute made expressive of the meeting's dissatisfaction with our movements amongst them. I found it very needful, not only to aim at patiently bearing all, and enduring all things, but also to be especially careful, that no root of bitterness was suffered to spring up in my mind, against the authors of such evil and unfounded reports as they were circulating respecting me.

Sixth-day morning, Friends again met, free from interruption from the Hicksite party; the time of silence previous to their entering upon the business was a solemn season, the business that came before the meeting being conducted in much harmony; and Friends separated under a thankful sense, that Divine aid had been mercifully extended towards us at this time.

Seventh-day, we proceeded towards Great Egg Harbour, and on First-day attended meeting there. This is a very small meeting of Friends, yet the house was nearly full by the coming in of those not of our Society, who conducted themselves in a solid manner.

Second-day, 17th of 12th mo., had a meeting at Galloway, appointed for members and attenders of meetings: when the meeting was gathered, it was evident the invitation had been extended beyond my request, which plunged me into fresh exercise, that I might be preserved keeping my proper place in this mixed assembly; when the meeting closed, I was led to hope, the labour of this day's work would not all prove like the seed that fell by the way-side;—not doubting but that the hearts of some of our company were prepared by the good Husbandman, to receive with gladness what had been given by Him for communication. In the afternoon we made a visit to a Friend upwards of ninety years of age, whose faculties appeared bright, but who exhibited as striking a picture of suffering humanity, as most I have ever met with; a cancer had entirely destroyed one of his eyes, and was proceeding rapidly towards the other, and he was reduced in body to little more than skin covering his bones: but amidst all his sufferings, not a murmur, not a complaint was uttered; such was the quiet, peaceful state of his mind, it was instructive to sit with him; a striking confirmation of the language of the Psalmist: "Thou wilt make all his bed in sickness." Psalm xli. 3.

Third-day, we proceeded to the township of Washington, near the Mullicus river, and took up our abode with David Mapps and his kind wife, both coloured people, and members of our religious Society: we attended an indulged meeting in a new meeting-house, about three miles from our quarters, at a place called Bridge Port.

Fourth-day morning, we left the comfortable residence of our kind friend David Mapps, who accompanied me to Little Egg Harbour.

Fifth-day, we attended meeting at Tucker's Town; there are but few members of our religious Society belonging to this meeting, yet the house was much crowded by the coming in of those not in profession with us, many of whom we understood were at the meeting at Bridge Port yesterday, and had come the distance of nine miles to attend this meeting: the people sat the meeting through in much quiet: after meeting, accompanied by our kind friend David Mapps, we rode to Barnagat, where there is a small settlement of Friends. As the way did not clearly open in my mind to have a meeting with the Friends of Barnagat, I felt it necessary to say so much to our kind companion.

Sixth-day morning, before our departure, I was given to understand, our not having a meeting with Friends here was a disap-



pointment to them ; but it appeared right for us to proceed on our journey ; we accordingly did, accompanied by D. Mapps, whose services this day we found to be of great use to us, our road being through much of a wilderness country, and so very intricate, it was with great difficulty we made out our port before it was dark.

Seventh-day, we left our kind friend John Moreton's, and proceeded to Squancombe, where a meeting was appointed to be held at the eleventh hour this morning: I was led to hope a degree of religious sensibility had been afresh awakened in some minds that were present ; the meeting separated much in the quiet ; afterwards we rode to Shrewsbury.

First-day morning, attended meeting at Shrewsbury, which I was informed was more largely attended than has been the case of later times ; many who were not in membership, who had been in the constant practice of attending this meeting, had withdrawn their attendance in consequence of the unsound doctrines which at times the Hicksite preachers held forth, when attending this meeting ; the time of silence, I could not doubt, was, to many that were present, a time in which the silence of all flesh was truly known ; the meeting separated with feelings of that holy solemnity, that is the crown of our religious gatherings. We passed by Monmouth and Croswicks to Bordentown, where we met with part of a committee of the quarterly meeting, to visit this meeting ; it being the day their preparative meeting was to be held, several of the disaffected party from other meetings were present, evidently by appointment, to assist the members of this meeting (who had all but one young man joined the new Yearly Meeting) in opposing the proceedings of the quarterly meeting's committee ; before the meeting for worship had sat nearly its usual time, the members of the meeting (except this young man), and the Hicksites from other meetings, rose up in a body, left the meeting, and went up into the chamber where the men transact their business, stamping with their feet as they proceeded ; this young man, the committee, and myself, following them, but before we could reach our seats, the clerk was reading his opening minute. I could not avoid remarking on their disorderly proceedings in breaking up the meeting for worship as they had done, but a determination was manifested not to regard any thing that could be offered. One of the quarterly meeting's committee, on behalf of the whole, queried with the clerk, whether he was acting as clerk to the preparative meeting of Bordentown, established by the monthly meeting of Croswicks, and in subordination to the quarterly meeting of Burlington ; but these remarks, although again repeated, were treated with evident contempt, replying they knew of no quarterly meeting's committee. After hurrying through the business of their meeting, they

arose in as disorderly a manner, as was the case in the meeting for worship, went away, and left the committee, the solitary young man, and myself, on our seats. We understood the women's meeting was not in a much better state; after meeting, we rode to our kind Friend Samuel Lundy's, at Crosricks.

Fifth-day, attended meeting at Crosricks; it being preparative meeting here also, the clerk of the said meeting took his seat at the table: but as the clerk, with many more of the members of this meeting, had been assisting in setting up separate meetings, the committee of the quarterly meeting put the same questions to the clerk of this preparative meeting as were put to the clerk at Bordentown. Some of the Hicksite party replied, they had nothing to do with any quarterly or monthly meeting's committee, ordering the clerk to go on with his business. Friends consulted together, and being satisfied it was the business of their new preparative meeting they were transacting, concluded to adjourn to a Friend's house near, and choose a fresh clerk and transact the business in its regular way, leaving their old clerk in possession of the books and papers of the meeting; the women being informed of the proceedings of the men's meeting, adjourned also; the day being stormy, and the cold as severe as had been known this season, made it very trying to both men and women to have to turn out of their warm meeting-house, and seek a place to do the business of the meeting in. By procuring some planks, with the help of the chairs in the family, who so kindly accommodated us, we soon became settled down again, and Friends were favoured to get through their business with satisfaction. Six of the cases of those who had been the most active in endeavouring to bring about their disorderly proceedings, were ordered to be carried forward to the monthly meeting, and the meeting concluded, if a more suitable place could not be found, to meet again at the same place to hold the next preparative meeting. After this meeting we rode to Evesham.

The following interesting narrative was given me by a Friend, respecting Edward Andrews, the father of Peter Andrews, mentioned in John Woolman's journal, who was the first member of our Society that settled in Little Egg Harbour, and the instrument in settling a meeting there. Before E. Andrews became convinced of the principles of Friends, he kept a boat, and played the violin on board his boat, to collect people for the purpose of dancing and frolicking. One day when on shore in his walks, a human bone lay in his path, which he took up, the viewing of which produced such serious impressions on his mind, that he never was able to get from under them again; he buried the bone: these serious impressions so increased upon him, and led him to take such a clear view of the danger of pursuing his mode of conduct and manner of obtaining a livelihood, that he burnt his violin, forsook his

old course of life, and became convinced of the principles of Friends. He did not hastily make a change in his outward garb, and before any material alteration took place in this respect, his mouth was opened in the ministry. Apprehending himself called upon to have a meeting appointed at Croswicks for those of other religious societies, he informed Friends hereof, but his friends could not then allow of his having such a meeting: on his way home, after his friends had thus put his concern by, he stopped at a brook to water his horse, and whilst his beast was drinking, the following considerations passed his mind: If this stream (at which his horse was then drinking) was a living stream, was it possible that man could wholly stop its progress? when it was presented to his mind that it might be dammed up for a while, but even was this to be the case, in time it would find its way over the dam, or make its progress through some other channel. These considerations, under his then trying situation, proved instructive to his mind, and he was led to conclude, that if his concern, which he had cast before his friends, proceeded from the living fountain and spring of Divine Life and Light, and if he was careful to keep in the faith and patience, in due time way would open for him in the minds of his friends to have a meeting at Croswicks; which accordingly proved to be the case, and it was supposed it was at this meeting, which E. Andrews afterwards had at Croswicks, that Robert Farrington alluded to when he said, that E. A. was the first instrument, in the Divine hand, of proclaiming in the ear of his soul the awakening call, which, by his attending to, brought him into a nearer acquaintance with the truths professed by Friends. These circumstances are well worthy the notice of such, who may be placed in a similarly trying situation.

Seventh-day, we rode to Pleasantview, to the house of Benjamin Cooper.

First-day morning, attended Newtown meeting, which I understood was larger than usual; this it was supposed was occasioned by two of the Hicksite preachers being at this meeting on that day, steps having been previously taken to publish the same. Although the prospect of sitting a meeting with these two individuals felt trying to my mind, yet by endeavouring to do what my hands found to do in the meeting, I left well satisfied I had been there: in the evening we rode to Joseph Whittle's, at Woodbury.

Second-day, we attended monthly meeting at Woodbury; after the meeting for worship was over, and previous to the business of the meeting for discipline being proceeded in, it being known to Friends there were persons present who had been disowned, and others of this meeting who were under dealing, in consequence of their having united themselves to the Hicksite party, a request was made to such to withdraw; but this they in a very determined manner refused to do, treating the committee of

the quarterly meeting and some of the members of the monthly meeting, in a very abusive manner. After much exercise of patience, and they continuing to persist in refusing to withdraw, Friends were brought to the necessity of adjourning their business to a future day, and of leaving the disaffected party in the meeting-house, going on with the business of their new monthly meeting. After meeting we rode to Scull Town, and were kindly received by our aged friend Sarah Scull.

Third-day morning, 1st of 1st mo., 1828, we rode to Pilesgrove to attend the monthly meeting there; the meeting for worship was large. I found it hard work to obtain relief to my mind amidst so many evil spies as this meeting was composed of; there being a close eye kept by the disaffected party upon English Friends who are travelling in the work of the ministry, if possible to detect any thing about them in word or deed to make a handle of to their disadvantage. In the meeting for worship, a young man towards the middle of the house stood up whilst I was on my feet, and opposed what I had advanced in the meeting; silence to me appeared the safest reply I was to make to him. The meeting for worship being over, the clerk of the monthly meeting, who had joined the disaffected party, taking possession of the table to go on with their business, the same individuals being present who were at Woodbury, and some of Pilesgrove meeting, who were under dealing by their monthly meeting, Friends of the monthly meeting requested they would withdraw; but the same determined spirit was manifested by them, as was manifested yesterday; and after much exercise of patience on the part of Friends, and having to endure many insults, Friends sat quietly until the disaffected part of the meeting had finished their business; when they left the house, Friends nominated a clerk to go on with the business of the monthly meeting, but their numbers, both men and women, were now so much reduced, it became a subject of consideration whether it would not be most advisable for the present that men and women should meet together: the men accordingly adjourned to the women's meeting-house. The young man who had publicly opposed me in the meeting for worship, came into the women's house and sat down amongst us, but with a seeming air of contempt, as if in his own mind he was disposed to say, "What can these feeble Jews do?" Our thus sitting together was a truly humbling, heart-tendering season to most, if not all, of our little company; before the meeting closed, this young man's countenance was evidently changed; when the meeting closed I followed him out of the house, telling him, I wanted to give him my hand of love, at which he immediately advanced towards me and gave me his hand. I then informed him in this last meeting we had sat together, the secret prayer of my soul to the Lord on his account had been, that He



would be pleased to lay His hand upon him, that he might be constrained to remain with the little company he had last sat with in a monthly meeting capacity: this he appeared to receive with marks of respect, assuring me it would afford him great pleasure if I would give him my company at his own house; but as I did not feel it would be safe for me to give any such expectation, I told him I was obliged to him, and we parted. After meeting, we rode to Salem.

Fourth-day morning, attended meeting here; the meeting for worship being over, the clerk took his seat at the table and opened the monthly meeting, the company we met with at Pilesgrove, and other meetings of disowned persons and under dealing, being present, were requested to leave the meeting-house; to which request a violent resistance was manifested, some of these declaring their determination to maintain their right of a seat in that house to the last, making use of as insulting and provoking language, as words could well furnish, in which I was not excused from a share; for they manifested as bitter and ranting a spirit as the Keithites in early times, and a determination to worry Friends out of their property in their meeting-houses, declaring their intention, if possible, to secure possession. After Friends had borne with them near three hours, hearing their scurri ous language, they adjourned the monthly meeting to Sixth-day. After the adjournment we rode to Greenwich; the waters in places were very much out, which made it dangerous for us to pursue our journey, but we reached our friend William Shepherd's in safety; this I esteemed amongst the many favours a kind Providence has showered down upon me during my travels in this land.

The next day we attended Greenwich meeting; this monthly meeting consists of two preparative meetings, Upper Greenwich and Alloway's Creek: when the meeting for worship closed, Friends entered upon the business of the monthly meeting. It was known to the Friends of the monthly meeting, that in Alloway's Creek there was a large proportion of its members that favoured the separatists, but it was not at this time supposed that they were in such a state as to be determined on a separation; it afterwards appeared, however, that a couple from Alloway's Creek meeting had passed the monthly meeting in order for marriage, and some of the members of Alloway's Creek were appointed to inquire into the clearness of the parties, and report to this meeting. One of the members of that meeting being present, he was called upon to report, to which he replied a report would be made at another place, handing a paper to the clerk, saying, the preparative meeting of Alloway's Creek had ordered him to be the bearer of it; the purport of which was a request to the monthly meeting to agree, that the preparative meeting of Alloway's Creek should be-

come a monthly meeting separate from Greenwich monthly meeting. It afterwards appeared, that such of the members of Alloway's Creek meeting as favoured the separatist party, had already taken this step, and were sitting as the monthly meeting of Alloway's Creek, and transacting business as such, at the very time this paper was presented to the monthly meeting, and which newly set-up meeting received the report relative to the couple that had passed the previous monthly meeting. After the paper had been read, as the meeting could not unite with the proposal of Alloway's Creek meeting, a committee was appointed to visit that preparative meeting, on which the bearer of this paper left the meeting, uttering aloud a sort of petition, in which he made use of the Lord's name in a disposition of mind that brought a sort of chill over my whole frame. Although this was an exercising meeting, yet I felt well satisfied in having to enter a little into the sufferings, which this small part of the body had this day, and may have more fully, to pass through. I had been looking towards the monthly meeting of Maurice river, but on my being informed that, except two families, the whole monthly meeting of Maurice river had joined the separatists, it appeared best to relinquish my prospect of attending that monthly meeting. After meeting we rode to Salem, but did not reach our kind friend William Miller's until late.

Sixth-day, attended the adjournment of Salem monthly meeting; in the evening, accompanied by our kind friend Joseph Whittall, we rode to Joseph Ogden's, and took up our abode for the night.

First-day, attended the meeting which was large, at Evesham Friends not having yet separated from the Hicksites in a meeting for worship capacity; but there is no other prospect but that Friends must quit the meeting-house themselves. It felt trying to sit down in a meeting capacity with those, who are not only unsound in the fundamental doctrines of Christianity altogether, but in spirit bitter enemies to our religious Society; yet when I at times compare my situation with that of my friends on this side of the Atlantic, myself only a sojourner for a short time, they residents here, to endure, it may be, a long continuance of these trials, and tho varied scenes of suffering that may grow out of these schisms, which have been made in our religious Society, I thought my present trials would hardly bear to be brought into comparison with theirs; but I see no other way for me but to labour to stand resigned to the Great Master's will, either to keep silence or to be found in the faithful exercise of my gift, in doing which I do not know I ever was more fully made sensible of the truth of the language of one of the apostles, "When I am weak, then am I strong." In the afternoon we rode to our kind friend John Cox's near Burlington.

Second-day, (7th of 1st mo.) attended monthly meeting at Burlington; when the meeting for worship closed, the clerks took their seat at the table, and as it was not known to the meeting that there were any present, who had not a claim to a seat in that meeting, the clerks proceeded with the business of the monthly meeting, which was quietly gone through; but before the meeting separated, one of the members of the meeting stood up, and requested that those who were favourable to the newly organized Yearly Meeting, held in Philadelphia in the Tenth month last, would stop in the meeting-house when the meeting closed, in order to organize a monthly meeting in connexion with that Yearly Meeting. When the monthly meeting closed, Friends quietly withdrew, leaving such of their members as favoured this new Yearly Meeting in possession of the meeting-house.

Third-day morning, we rode to Crosswicks to attend the monthly meeting to be held there this day; the meeting for worship being over, the clerks took their seats at the table and opened the monthly meeting, when a Friend arose and requested, as there were so many strangers present, if there were any who had not a right to sit in that meeting in consequence of having been disowned by the Society, or being under dealing by their monthly meeting, they would leave the house; but as no individual arose to leave the meeting, and Friends had waited awhile, the meeting went on with its business for about half an hour, when a member of the meeting stood up, saying, he was a member of a monthly and quarterly meeting that was not known to the Yearly Meeting of Friends of Philadelphia; on which the meeting found itself under the necessity of requesting him to withdraw, but this he refused to do. The meeting continuing to press the matter, he persisted in his determination to keep his seat, in doing which he was encouraged by the strangers, and by some of the members of the monthly meeting. Aware that no entreaty would be of any avail, it was concluded to adjourn to a Friend's house about two miles from the meeting-house, where some provision had been made for holding the monthly meeting, should Friends be obliged to leave the house, this I found was not an unexpected circumstance to some of the members of the meeting. The weather being very stormy, the rain freezing as it fell to the ground, made it trying to walk, and dangerous to ride, the horses being hardly able to keep upon their feet. The men occupied a large kitchen, and the women an adjoining room, and soon settled down into quiet again; it was supposed about three-fourths of this monthly meeting remained behind in the meeting-house. The cases of some of their members who had been active in assisting to establish the new Yearly Meeting, in the 10th mo. last at Phila-

delphia, were brought from the preparative meetings to this monthly meeting, and appointments made to visit such; and after the business of the meeting had been conducted in much harmony and firmness, that the discipline might be put in force against offenders without partiality, the meeting concluded to meet again at this same place next month. We took up our abode for the night at our kind friend Amos Hendrickson's.

Fourth-day, attended monthly meeting at Upper Springfield; here we also had the same company of intruders as obliged Friends yesterday to quit their meeting-house: the meeting for worship being over, the clerks took their seats at the table, and opened the monthly meeting; those who had not a claim to sit in the monthly meeting were requested to leave the meeting-house, but they manifested a determination to remain, in which determination they were encouraged by some of the members of the meeting. Friends finding their entreaties were in vain, concluded to adjourn to the school-house, on the meeting-house lot, informing the women's meeting thereof; on which one of the separatists' party went into the women's house, ordering the women to keep their seats, saying the business of the men's meeting was about to be proceeded in. As the school-house furnished only one apartment, the men and women held a consultation there about a place to meet in to do the business of the monthly meeting; the extremity Friends of this meeting found themselves placed in, had a humbling effect on many minds, especially so on the female side of the house, some of whom were contrited unto tears, doubtless in part from the painful circumstances some were placed in, having left near connections remaining with the sorrowfully deluded multitude. After Friends had quitted the warm meeting-house, and stood as long quietly together as they were well able to do in this comfortless place, the weather being very severe and no fire, it was concluded to hold the monthly meeting next Sixth-day at Mansfield: we went home with our kind friend William Newbold.

Fifth-day, we proceeded to Mount Holly; in this monthly meeting a separation had already taken place, and Friends were driven out of their meeting-house, and were obliged to meet in a school-house, to hold their meetings for worship, the men's monthly meeting being held in the academy: about fifty males and females remain with Friends. John Woolman, who was a member of this monthly meeting, a Friend informed me, had a sight of this dwindling that has now taken place, as the consequence of the conduct of the then members of the meeting, in the case of a man of colour of good character, who had long attended Friends' meetings, and who applied to the monthly meeting of Mount Holly to be received into membership with



Friends. When his case was before the meeting, it appeared from the report of those appointed to visit him, he was fully convinced of the principles which our religious Society hold, and his walking among men was in full unison therewith, yet his being a man of colour was urged against his being received. When a minute was made objecting, on these grounds, to his request being granted, John Woolman stood up, saying, it appeared to be his duty to declare, that because of this partiality now manifested by this monthly meeting, in the case last concluded upon, a sense was given him that this monthly meeting would dwindle and become reduced again. The clerks and registers of this monthly meeting were gone off with the separatists, who have kept possession of all the books and papers of the monthly meeting. The newly-chosen clerks, with the assistance of the quarterly meeting's committee, managed to get through the business with more dispatch than might have been expected: several cases of delinquency, in consequence of the separation that had taken place, were brought forward by the preparative meeting of Mount Holly; the state of the preparative meetings of Vincent-town and the Mount came under consideration; in one of these meetings it appeared, that all the members of it except one, had joined the separatists, and in the other only three remained with Friends. After mature deliberation, the meeting concluded, it would be most to the reputation of the Society to dissolve these two preparative meetings, and join them to Mount Holly: the meetings for worship at Vincent-town and the Mount came next under consideration, and it appearing to the meeting best that these two meetings should be discontinued, minutes were made accordingly; and as the monthly meeting had not the controul of these meeting-houses of Vincent-town and the Mount, those Friends in the neighbourhood were advised, as opportunity was afforded, to make it publicly known, that the monthly meeting had directed these meeting-houses should be shut up, in order that the Society should not be made accountable for any doctrines that in future might be advanced in either of them. The little company left to contend with a host of strong, self-willed members, had a warm claim on the sympathy of their friends: I thought it was fully manifest they were falling into the ranks of the willing in our Israel, and my soul could salute them as such, and bid them God speed.

Sixth-day, attended Evesham monthly meeting, a separation having taken place in this monthly meeting, Friends were favoured to hold their meeting in quiet; yet not without an increase of suffering of mind from the numerous cases of delinquency that were necessarily brought to the monthly meeting, and the prospect of the hostile treatment they had to expect in performing the duty which the meeting committed to their charge.

The next day I attended monthly meeting at Upper Evesham. The meeting for worship being over, the clerks took their seats at the table, and opened the monthly meeting. This monthly meeting had not separated, and it appearing to the meeting there were none of those present who had so disturbed the other monthly meetings, the meeting went quietly on with its business. When it was finished, one of the members of the monthly meeting laid a paper on the table, and requested that it should be read; on which it was proposed their usual practice should be resorted to, of nominating some Friends to go out of the house, read the paper, and inform the meeting if it was proper to read it in the meeting. Four Friends were accordingly nominated, who returned with the paper, giving it as their judgment, that it was not proper to be read in the monthly meeting. After a pause, one of their members replied, as the paper was not allowed to be read, he requested those who were in favour of the newly-organised Yearly Meeting in Philadelphia would keep their seats at the close of the meeting, in order to choose a clerk and to establish a monthly meeting of their own. Friends quietly withdrew, leaving, it was afterwards ascertained, a few men and boys behind in the meeting-house. After meeting, we rode to our kind friend Joseph Evans's, at Cropwell.

First-day, (13th of 1st mo.) attended Haddonfield meeting: the meeting was large, and settled down in quiet; it proved a time in which the promise of the Great Master might with reverent gratitude be said to be fulfilled.

Second-day morning, attended monthly meeting there; the meeting was large, a considerable number, both men and women of the separatists, said to be part of a committee of their new yearly and quarterly meeting, attended; the clerk took his seat at the table, and opened the monthly meeting. After this was done, the meeting was informed that there were present divers individuals, who, according to the discipline of the Society, were not entitled to sit in that monthly meeting whilst the business of it was proceeded in, some of them having been disowned by other meetings, and others were under dealing by this monthly meeting. Friends, in as tender and persuasive a manner as possible, requested them to withdraw; but they refused, although entreated to do so by divers of the members of the monthly meeting and quarterly meeting's committee, declaring their determination to keep their seats; they were headed by an individual who once stood well with his friends as a minister, but who has united himself to the body of separatists,—a man of goodly appearance and manners, and thereby calculated to do more towards the furtherance of this schism, than those who are attempting to effect their purposes by outrage; respecting him it might truly be said, his words were smoother than butter, yet it was evident war was in his heart, and

softer than oil, yet were they like drawn swords. After the meeting had spent more than two hours in trying to prevail on them to leave the meeting, amidst great abuse, and after that exercise of faith and patience so necessary to be experienced under such trying circumstances, if preserved from mingling with that wicked spirit in which they were evidently acting, Friends proposed an adjournment of the meeting. The women's meeting sent a deputation into the men's meeting, for advice how to proceed under the trying circumstances their meeting was placed in, by a number of women who had intruded themselves into their meeting, who had no claim to a seat there, some of them having been disowned, and others of them being under dealing by the monthly meeting, and who would not leave the house; they were informed of the men's meeting being in the same situation, and when the men's meeting had concluded on what steps it was best to take to extricate them from their present difficulties, the women's meeting would be informed thereof. As no way appeared for the relief of the meeting, but an adjournment, it was concluded to adjourn to next Second-day, and a Friend ordered to inform the women's meeting thereof; on which the intruders ordered one of their party to go into the women's meeting and request the women to keep their seats, as the business of the monthly meeting was about to be proceeded with. Before the adjournment was read, a young man, apparently not much more than twenty years of age, stood up, calling upon the overseers to take notice of all who left the meeting when the adjournment was read: before which, one of the separatists informed Friends, if they would assure them they should have one of the meeting-houses belonging to the monthly meeting to hold their meetings in, they would quietly leave the house, and that they were willing Friends should have the liberty of choosing which they were desirous of retaining for themselves: but they were informed no such compromise could be made: the door-keepers being sound with Friends, they knew they had no means of keeping Friends out of their meeting-houses, as is the case when, by their varied artifices, they can bring the door-keepers over to their party.

Third-day morning, we rode to Moors-town, to attend Chester monthly meeting, to be held there that day: a separation having already taken place in this monthly meeting, our prospect of a quiet meeting was cheering to the mind: the meeting for worship was a solemn time, and the concerns of the monthly meeting were conducted with becoming deliberation and solemnity; the clerk of the monthly meeting, and those appointed as registrars having joined the separatists, were in possession of the books and papers of the monthly meetings, they persisted in refusing to give them up to Friends, which is generally the case. After meeting, my

friend Job Haines returned home, whose kind services I desire ever to keep in remembrance. I rode again to Pleasant View, the comfortable abode of my kind friend Benjamin Cooper.

The next day, proceeded to Philadelphia, where I was cared for by my esteemed friend Thomas Stewardson, and his wife and family.

Fifth-day, attended Arch-street (Mulberry-street) meeting and preparative meeting, comforted in being able to sit down with Friends again in quiet, after so much warfare.



## CHAPTER XXXVI.

SIXTH-DAY, (18th of 1st mo. 1828,) attended the meeting for sufferings: various trying circumstances, in consequence of the outrages, which the separatists were watching their opportunities to annoy Friends by committing, came before the meeting, and which were deliberated upon and spoken to, I could not doubt, in a truly Christian spirit.

First-day morning, attended Twelfth-street meeting, which was large; in the afternoon the North-street meeting—a full attendance for an afternoon meeting, and a quiet, favoured time.

Second-day, crossed the Delaware, and was met on the other side by my kind friend Benjamin Cooper, whom I accompanied to Haddonfield, to attend the adjournment of the monthly meeting: we were favoured with a quiet, comfortable meeting together; such a one, the Friends of that meeting acknowledged they had not for a very long time witnessed. After meeting, I returned again to Philadelphia.

The next day, attended North-street monthly meeting. Notwithstanding door-keepers were appointed to keep the meetings for discipline select, a person under dealing escaped their vigilance, and managed to take his seat in the monthly meeting: after the clerk had opened the meeting, a request was made, in as kind a manner as words could well be found to do it, that if there were any present who had not a right to sit in that meeting, they would withdraw; on this request being repeated without effect, the request was made in more plain and pointed terms, which aroused the individual from his seat, who positively asserted his right to sit there, and his determination not to quit the meeting: Friends, not willing to resort to force, adjourned the meeting until the afternoon.

Fourth-day, attended Pine-street monthly meeting. I felt comforted in sitting with Friends of this meeting, there yet being left amongst them many well-concerned members of our Society, who appeared rightly concerned for the proper support of our wholesome discipline.

Fifth-day, attended Arch-street monthly meeting: various cases of delinquency came before it, on account of separation

from the Society, in principle and practice. I was comforted in sitting in this meeting, as well as others in this city, in observing the quietness and deliberation that was manifested in transacting the various matters that came before them.

Seventh-day, accompanied by my kind friend, Bartholomew Wistar, I rode to German-town, and took up my abode with my friend Ruben Hains. First-day, attended meeting there; the day being stormy, the women's side of the house was thinly attended: if my feelings were correct, there appeared great openness to receive what was communicated, and I felt well satisfied I had given up to attend this meeting. In the evening, I proceeded to my kind friend and new companion, Joel Woolman's, a nephew of John Woolman, whose valuable journal is in print.

Second-day, my kind companion accompanied me to Abington, to attend a monthly meeting there, composed of the members left in the monthly meetings of Abington and Horsham: these two meetings united in one, formed an agreeable body of Friends to conduct the business of a monthly meeting. Both monthly meetings, it appeared, were deprived of their meeting-houses, their books, their funds, their registers, their clerks and overseers, who were gone off with the other disaffected members of these monthly meetings. Friends in this their collective capacity, were remarkably supported under their varied trials, manifesting nothing but a spirit of love towards those who had been, and were the cause of them. The meeting adjourned to the afternoon, to receive the report of a committee to propose to the meeting suitable Friends for overseers, in order that cases of delinquency might no longer remain unattended to; in the afternoon, it was comfortable to observe how much like brethren of one monthly meeting, Friends met; evidently manifesting an united desire harmoniously to draw together in the support of the discipline: the meeting closed under a grateful sense of the favours bestowed by the Divine Master this day. Fourth-day, attended Gwynned select preparative meeting.

Fifth-day, (31st of 1st mo. 1828.) This being the day of Gwynned monthly meeting, we rode to the house of Thomas Chalkley Jamel, who had kindly offered Friends two rooms to hold the monthly meeting in; report was made that the separatists had in their possession the funds for the support of the poor and schools: cases of delinquency were brought forward, and committees were appointed to visit the defaulters; some of those who were advanced in life, and had taken an active part in the discipline, having joined the separatists, the concerns of Society rested very much on the shoulders of the middle-aged and young men, whose countenances appeared to manifest a sense of the weight and importance of the concerns, they were now called upon to take an active part in, and gave hopes of a succession of faithful standard-bearers

for the Lord's cause: a young couple passed this meeting unattended by parents on either side, they having gone off with the separatists, but had been so far prevailed upon as to send their consent in writing to the monthly meeting: their case excited the sympathy of their friends.

Sixth-day, attended the select meeting for Abington and Hors-ham, reduced to three men; the queries were answered, and a good degree of care manifested to send forward to the quarterly select meeting a correct statement of their situation.

The next day, rode to Philadelphia, and attended the select quarterly meeting there: here I met with my kind countrywoman Elizabeth Robson, which was cheering to my mind; the time proved comforting and strengthening to me.

First-day morning, (3rd of 2nd mo.) attended Pine-street meeting; a considerable number of young people of both sexes were present, some of whose countenances manifested, I thought, that they were under the preparing hand for usefulness in the church. In the afternoon, attended Mulberry-street meeting; a still, quiet, favoured time. The quarterly meeting for discipline commenced the next day; the body of Friends from the different meetings, placed as door-keepers to prevent intruders entering the meeting-house, made rather a formidable appearance. The trying situation into which this quarterly meeting was brought, in various ways, through those who have gone off from the Society, obtained much solid deliberation, accompanied, I could not doubt, with earnest desires on the part of such as were taking an active part in the concerns of Society, that Divine wisdom should regulate all their movements. I felt well satisfied in having to share with Friends this day in the sufferings which they have to endure from such painful circumstances. There seemed ground to believe that Divine regard is still extended towards this part of His heritage; for which favour may the members of this quarterly meeting be found walking worthy of the continuance thereof.

Fourth-day, rode to German-town, and attended the select quarterly meeting for Abington: this meeting was small; the business that came before it appeared to be conducted in much harmony.

Fifth-day, the quarterly meeting for discipline commenced, and after sitting six hours, we separated under feelings of gratitude, that Divine help had been in mercy extended, whilst transacting its concerns. After meeting, I rode to the abode of my kind companion Joel Woolman.

First-day, attended meeting at Frankfort: the separatists keeping possession of Friends' meeting-house, the meeting is held in a private house. Friends are greatly incommoded thereby, the rooms being so crowded, that the air became very oppressive before the meeting closed.

Fourth day, rode to Calne; attended the select quarterly meeting. From the answers to the queries, it evidently appeared there was a want of a lively zeal in this part of the family; yet there appeared to me cause for rejoicing, in that there is still left in this meeting an honest few, who are desirous they may be found giving proof of their fidelity to the Lord and his cause.

Fifth-day, the quarterly meeting commenced; the previous meeting for worship was held in quiet. When the clerk had opened the meeting, a pause ensued, after which an elderly Friend stood up, and requested, if there were any present who had not a right to sit in that meeting, they would withdraw; but this request not being complied with, a Friend stood up, saying there were such in the meeting, and therefore Friends could not go on with the business until they withdrew: much entreaty was used to induce them to do so, on which the disaffected party declared their right to sit, although the meeting was informed they had been disowned by their monthly meeting. As they persisted in refusing to leave the meeting, and made use of very abusive and bitter language, a proposal was made by Friends to adjourn the meeting; but this the disaffected party in the meeting opposed with great violence. After we had sat nearly three hours, subject to these interruptions, the meeting concluded to adjourn to Friends' meeting-house in Downing-town, till the next morning. When this conclusion was come to, one of the violent separatists from Philadelphia, who had come to aid those of his party in this meeting, came forward on their behalf, in a very dictatorial manner, and urged the disaffected part of the meeting not to suffer an adjournment to take place. When he found he could not effect his purposes, as far as language was capable to effect it, he endeavoured to persuade the disaffected party not to suffer the clerk to take the books and papers away with him, making use of as strong language as he well could, to rouse them to prevent him; and I expected, when the clerk left the meeting, he would have had an attack made upon him; but he took such care to secure the books and papers, as would have rendered it very difficult for them to have effected their purpose. Two elderly Friends went into the women's meeting to inform them of the conclusion which the meeting had come to, on which the disaffected party nominated two young men to go into the women's meeting to contradict this message, who followed the two elderly Friends into the women's apartment; one of these young men was a son of one of these elderly Friends; such are the sorrowful effects of this spirit of unsoundness of principle, that it neither regards age nor sex, nor is it subject to parental restraint or affection. The next morning, attended the adjournment: the meeting for worship was short, but I believe it was a time of favour which many will long



remember. When the meeting for discipline was opened, Friends' minds appeared to be much contrited, under a sense of the trying situation they were in; a desire after that oneness of spirit, in the conducting of the discipline which constitutes religious harmony, I thought was evidently manifested: a great field of labour must necessarily open for the faithful members of this quarterly meeting, who are much to be sympathized with. After the meeting had held nearly seven hours, and been closely engaged, it concluded under feelings of gratitude to that Almighty Power who had given strength to conduct the business of the meeting, for any thing that appeared, to the satisfaction and comfort of all present.

Seventh-day, we rode to Concord, and were kindly received by our friend Nathaniel Sharpless. Attended the quarterly meeting of Concord, in which a separation has taken place, in consequence of which a great load of business has fallen upon those who remain faithful; but few of the elderly active members are left, so that the meeting now very much consists of middle-aged and young persons; yet I did not doubt, but that, if the Friends of this meeting moved along in faith and faithfulness, and put the discipline in force against the host of offenders, without fear, favour, or affection, notwithstanding their accumulated difficulties, they would, in due time, be helped to rise above them.

First-day, attended Kennet-square meeting; a large meeting, chiefly composed of young people; the young men have scarcely a mark left about them, whereby they would be known to be of our religious Society; it was considered to be a solid, satisfactory meeting; after which we rode to our kind friend John Phillips's, and took up our abode for the night.

Second-day morning, the 18th of 2nd mo., we rode to New Garden, to attend the western quarterly meeting, to be held there, in consequence of the separatists having possession of Friends' meeting-house at London Grove, where the quarterly meeting is usually held: here I met with my kind countrywoman, Elizabeth Robson. This day we attended the select quarterly meeting, which is greatly stripped of its members in consequence of the schism that has taken place; the few that remain appeared as if they were nearly sinking under their discouragements; and instead of looking to that Power for help, who remains all-sufficient to quicken, prepare, and qualify for every work and service in his church, they seem to be querying, Who amongst us is sufficient for these things? We could not see much prospect of their hands becoming strong for the work they have to do, whilst they manifested such a reluctance to leave their meeting-houses, continuing to meet with the seceders in a meeting for worship capacity: the necessity of their finding a place to meet in separately was laid before them, in order to their becoming helped properly to take

up the many prominent cases of delinquency amongst them. Although we had to suffer in this meeting, there was cause for thankfulness in believing the solitary few were yet under the care of the great and good Shepherd; who would help them, if on their parts they were but willing, with full purpose of heart, to move along in the discharge of their religious duties, under his Divine counsel, and co-operate with the help afforded, knowing no man after the flesh in judgment.

Third-day morning, the quarterly meeting for discipline commenced with a meeting for worship; the weather was cold and wet, which made it trying to Friends not to have their horses properly cared for, deprived as they were of their usual accommodation, at the meeting-house fitted up for holding the quarterly meeting, by those who have gone off from the Society. At our first sitting down in the meeting for worship, a very precious silence was felt over the meeting; in reading the answers to the queries, great weakness was manifested, from an evident want of willingness in the minds of those, who should stand forward in conducting the concerns of the different meetings, to accept of that Hand of help that was still stretched forth, which would be found all-sufficient to enable them to rise above those discouragements under the weight of which they were now mourning: encouragement was held out to the willing, by various instruments, to use the little strength afforded, as the way for them to receive more strength. Before the meeting closed, divers testimonies were borne, encouraging the members of this meeting to consider this as a day of renewed visitation, and be willing to accept of it as such.

We next proceeded to East-land, and to Little Britain, to attend Nottingham quarterly meeting. Whilst on my feet in this meeting, I was made sensible from my feelings, that what I was offering was not well received by some; one aged man, who sat directly under me, whilst I was speaking frequently turned round, I supposed to see if I had not taken my seat; which, when I had so done, he immediately arose, saying, he never had heard such an unbecoming sermon preached before; charging me with having come there to try to breed discord among them, who were a meeting in full unity and harmony one with another, adding, they did not want any foreigners to dictate to them how they were to conduct themselves; they were capable of conducting their business without any foreign aid, and more to that effect. I found it was safest for me to keep quiet, and if any thing was required of me during the transacting the business of the meeting, to be faithful in communicating it. The answers to the queries were read; it appeared safest for me to suffer the deficiencies acknowledged therein to pass unnoticed; but when the meeting was about separating, I was brought under the necessity of standing up and

saying, from the answers to the queries which had been read, it must appear to every impartial and unprejudiced mind present, that the individual who sat under me had not been correct in the statement which he had given, of the situation of the members of this select meeting relative to love and unity ;—that we were in a dangerous condition when we supposed things were better with us than they really were, and I added, that the answers to the queries from three out of four of the select preparative meetings, declared in plain terms that there was a want of love and unity in their meetings; if such were the case in their smaller meetings, how could it be expected, in this their collective capacity, that things would be with them as was stated by the individual under me, that they were a meeting in full unity and harmony one with another? Some attempts were made by one of their company, who afterwards manifested himself amongst the foremost in the separation that took place in the Yearly Meeting, to palliate what the individual under me had said, but here I felt most easy to leave the matter. When the meeting separated, this individual, who attempted to smooth over what the elderly man who sat under me had said, followed me to my waggon, and in a fawning way said to me, “ Good father, do not meddle with these divisions amongst Friends; ”—but I gave him no other reply, than saying, what I had communicated amongst them was, I believed, in the line of apprehended duty, and that I had not a desire to recall any thing I had offered in the meeting, and there I left him.

Sixth-day, attended the quarterly meeting for discipline: such was my depressed state of mind, that I despaired of being equal to stand up and declare to the meeting the opening I believed given me; but breathing for help, strength was afforded me to stand up, although the meeting had become unsettled in consequence of a request by the disaffected party to close the partition shutters; from the quiet observed, I was led to hope what I had to offer was not wholly rejected. When the meeting for discipline opened, a minute was read, said to be from London-grove monthly meeting of Friends, but it was well known to the active members of this quarterly meeting that it came from a newly set-up meeting, in connexion with the Yearly Meeting of the separatists in Philadelphia; it gave liberty to a female travelling as a minister to visit families in part of this quarterly meeting: the separatists having the controul of this quarterly meeting, dismay had obtained such hold of the minds of the sound members of it, that they suffered a minute to be made, expressive of the meeting’s unity with her services and her proceeding with her visit, without opposing the measure. Believing in this case, and at that time, that opposition would be unavailing, silence appeared to be my proper place through the meeting; but when the meeting was about separating, I felt it required of me to say, a great less had been sus-

tained by many of our members lightly esteeming their privilege in having the Scriptures in their possession, and neglecting to have them read in a collective as well as individual capacity in their families; that this, I believed, had been one of the causes whereby the disorders now prevailing had crept into our religious Society. I expected no other but opposition to what I had offered, but all passed quietly over. After meeting I found some of the sound members of this quarterly meeting, were placed in a very trying situation, relative to the liberty granted to the individual to visit families, and they asked for my advice how to proceed. I told them, although the quarterly meeting had sanctioned her proceeding, I did not see how they could receive a visit under a minute received from a Hicksite monthly meeting.

First-day, we rode this morning to Old Chester: this meeting is principally composed of young people, and some not in membership with us; we were rather behind the time (by the clocks here) at which the meeting should be gathered; this caused me some little uneasiness, and which I found I could not well get from under, until I had made such an apology for this apparent disorder, as I believe I was justified in doing, from the bad state in which we found the roads; it proved a quiet, satisfactory meeting, I believe, to most; after which we rode to Philadelphia, where I was again well cared for, after as fatiguing an afternoon's travel as most I have passed through, by my very kind friends Thomas Stewardson, wife, and family.

Second-day, (25th of 2d mo. 1828,) went on board the steamboat for Burlington; attended the select quarterly meeting there, where I met my kind countrywoman Elizabeth Robson: far separated as we were from our own homes, and near and dear connexions, it was no little consolation to meet in this way, although it was but for a day or two at a time. Here I received intelligence that a separation had now taken place in all the quarterly meetings within the compass of Philadelphia Yearly Meeting, at which I could not but rejoice, as it respected the welfare and comfort of the sound members of these quarterly meetings. Friends in their select capacity, were favoured to sit down quietly together, the wing of Divine regard being, in adorable mercy, spread, as a canopy, over us, to the humbling of many of our minds for this renewed favour.

Third-day, the quarterly meeting for discipline was held, and was attended by part of the Yearly Meeting's committee; various matters of importance occasioned by the separation that had taken place, came under the consideration of the meeting, and were considered in much harmony: after the meeting had sat nearly seven hours, Friends separated under feelings of gratitude to the Author of all good for the help vouchsafed this day, in proceeding with and arranging the difficult matters that came before the



meeting. This afternoon we crossed the Delaware, and rode to our kind friend Moses Comfort's, in the neighbourhood of Pennsylvania, formerly the residence of W. Penn; but nothing is now remaining of his residence, the brew-house excepted, which is, by additions, made into a farm-house.

Fourth-day, rode to Falls, and attended the select quarterly meeting of Bucks; the few members left in this quarterly meeting, appeared to be closely united in the bonds of gospel-fellowship: one individual excepted, who, from remarks he made on matters that came before the meeting, appeared in eminent danger of swerving with those already gone off from this meeting: the business of the meeting was conducted with a becoming solemnity; and Friends were comforted together under a grateful sense of the mercy extended towards them, in being delivered from the spirits of those, who long had brought upon them burdens at times almost insupportable.

Fifth-day morning, attended the meeting for discipline, which proved a time of close exercise and travail, from the many trying circumstances that had arisen in consequence of the separation in its monthly and preparative meetings; Friends had been deprived of their meeting-houses, and, in some instances, of their books, papers, and registers; the funds belonging to some of those meetings and the schools, being nearly all under the controul of those who had seceded from the Society. It was consoling to find Friends were not disposed to sink under these varied trials, but manifested a disposition to make use of the little strength that was left amongst them, to get through their difficulties: after the meeting had sat seven hours closely occupied, Friends separated under a thankful sense of the favours received this day from the Great Head of the church; some acknowledging it felt to them like the return of old times.

On Seventh-day we rode to Buckingham, and next morning we sat with Friends there; the meeting was held in a commodious kitchen, the separatists being in possession of Friends' meeting-house: fresh cause was felt by many of us to acknowledge of a truth, that the mercies of the Lord fail not, in that he condescended afresh to own us with his life-giving presence in this our meeting.

Second-day morning, (3rd of 3rd mo.) I received a visit from an individual whose appearance was very orthodox, professing to have long had a desire to have some of my company, and that nothing but love on his part had been his inducement to make me this visit; he pressed me much to come to his house and take up my abode for the next night. As I ever wish to put the most favourable construction on the conduct of others which circumstances will allow, and not rashly to judge their motives to action, I made the usual reply I have found it best for me to make, where persons are stran-

gers to me,—I was obliged to him ; this, I think, I may, with safety say, when an invitation is given to the house of another, until I am fully satisfied their motives for so doing are not pure ; but he continued to press my acceptance of his invitation. I then informed him, my lodging-places whilst attending the monthly meeting had been laid out by my friends at the quarterly meeting, a step I wished them to undertake for me, I therefore must decline his invitation, and he went away : after he had left me, I was informed he was one of the most bitter and foremost amongst the separatists of Buckingham meeting. Buckingham meeting-house being in possession of the separatists, Friends have been obliged to hold their monthly meeting at Plumpstead, a distance of eight miles : the door-keeper, of that house, although gone off with the separatists, assured Friends, so long as he continued in his office, he would open the meeting-house for them to hold their monthly meeting in ; but the separatists being dissatisfied with this man's conduct in this respect, displaced him, and appointed another door keeper, in hopes he would not give Friends this privilege ; but this man, although one of the separatists' party, when he obtained possession of the keys of the meeting-house, followed the example of the man they had displaced, and opened the house for Friends. The separatists finding this to be the case, and having hired him for a given time, could not displace him ; they then appointed a committee to try to bring about a compromise with Friends of Buckingham and Plumstead, and a party of this committee called upon some of the active members of this monthly meeting, in order to ascertain how far their committee, who had this in charge, would be likely to be received by the monthly meeting ; but not finding encouragement from the Friends they called upon, they took such measures with their new door-keeper as to have the meeting-house doors at Plumpstead closed against Friends. On the morning of the monthly meeting, accompanied by our kind friend Daniel Gillingham, we proceeded to Plumpstead ; when about a mile from Plumpstead meeting-house, a Friend stopped us, informing us the meeting-house was altogether shut against Friends ; this having come to the knowledge of the Friends in time, a member of that meeting, kindly offered to accommodate Friends at his house, whither we proceeded, and found the best done that could be, by planks and chairs for the purpose of holding the monthly meeting. The meeting for worship was crowded, after which, when the men and women separated, each party was comfortably accommodated, and the business of the monthly meeting was entered upon in a quiet solid manner : the disappointment and trials of this day I was led to hope would have a tendency to bring Friends yet nearer together, and unite them more closely in the bonds of true religious fellowship.

Nineteen testimonies of denial against women, and upwards of thirty-six against men, who had been members of this monthly meeting, were issued this day, and the parties ordered to be properly informed thereof; various other matters which had grown out of that lamentable schism which had taken place, occupied the meeting until nearly five o'clock in the afternoon; after which, we rode to our friend Robert Comfort's, where we took up our abode for the night.

Third-day, we attended Wright's-town monthly meeting, held in a private house; various testimonies were signed and others ordered, against such as were gone off from the Society.

The next day, we attended Solebury monthly meeting, which was held in a waggon-house; there being a good loft over it, Friends had fitted it up for the men's meeting in as convenient a manner as the nature of the building would allow of: the business chiefly consisted in reading, signing, and concluding upon fresh testimonies against their members who had gone off from the Society, which did not appear to be lightly entered into by the Friends of this meeting.

Fifth-day morning, (6th of 3d mo.) rode to Falls to attend the monthly meeting there held; the door-keeper continued to open the meeting-house for Friends on quarterly and monthly meeting-days, although united with the separatists; Falls and Newtown now compose one monthly meeting. Six testimonies of denial, nineteen other cases for the issue of testimonies, and fifty-eight new cases of delinquency on account of uniting with separatists, were brought from the women's meeting to the men's monthly meeting; a long string of disownments was read over, which had been issued at their last monthly meeting, and many more testimonies were signed for men, besides numerous fresh cases brought forward. Notwithstanding the difficult task which the active members of this meeting had to perform, in bringing forward to the monthly meeting the names of their near relatives, and such as at one time were their most intimate and bosom friends, together with the reports given to the meeting of the insulting behaviour and abusive language experienced, without regard to age or sex, it was to me truly admirable to observe with what Christian firmness Friends accepted of the appointments of the meeting, and the proof they gave of having faithfully fulfilled those they had previously accepted: and I think I am safe in saying, from observations I have made in the different monthly meetings I have attended, that the cases of delinquency were determined upon in a truly Christian spirit; and manifested that Friends were more desirous of restoring the delinquents than of depriving them of membership. After the meeting had been closely engaged for nearly six hours, Friends separated under feelings of gratitude

to the great Head of the militant church for the help mercifully vouchsafed to this meeting.

Sixth-day morning, accompanied by my friends James and Jane Moon, attended Middle-town monthly meeting, which was held at the house of Josiah Comfort, who kindly gave us the best accommodation in his power; but we were obliged to pack so closely together, that it made it trying, yet Friends appeared much preserved in patience. Various testimonies of denial were signed on behalf of both the men's and women's meetings, numerous testimonies were ordered to be brought to the next monthly meeting, and a long string of fresh cases were brought before the meeting: the meeting-houses, except one, also the books, papers, records, and schools were in the possession of the separatists. As Friends had not the controul of the schools, they were brought into a great strait to know how to dispose of their children in order for education. The few Friends left in this meeting were strengthened to get through the varied trying tasks they had to perform in support of the discipline, with much unanimity and firmness; and the meeting separated under a feeling of precious love and harmony which prevailed in the transacting the various matters that came before the meeting; we returned to our kind friend Benjamin Comfort's, where we took up our abode for the night.

First-day morning, the separatists having possession of Friends' meeting-house at Derby, the meeting is now held about one mile and a half from the town, a wheelwright's shop being hired and fitted up for the purpose. Friends at first, when the separation took place, were discouraged, apprehending their number would be so small; but this has not proved to be the case, for before the separation took place, some not in membership, but who had been in the constant attendance of Friends' meeting, and in consequence of the unsound doctrines they at times heard therein, had left the meeting-house of Derby, again gave Friends their company at this meeting-place. It was supposed near one hundred Friends and others were packed together this morning: a degree of solemnity was felt, which is not at our command, being mercifully vouchsafed from the great Author of all our blessings, I believe, many felt it to be cause of humble gratitude.

Second-day morning, we rode to Wilmington. The monthly meeting not falling in due course before Fifth-day, an opportunity was afforded me of a little rest, both of body and mind, which I began to feel I stood in need of; my general health had continued good, yet the bad roads tried me so much, that I was led to fear I should have been under the necessity of lying by, if not of ceasing to travel altogether.

Fifth-day, (13th of 3d mo.) attended monthly meeting. Friends



were much united in transacting the business that came before the meeting: as yet no cases of delinquency had been taken up. Feeling drawings in my mind to have an opportunity with the men and women together, it was proposed that the men should go into the women's house, when the business of the women's meeting was ended, which they did; this afforded me an opportunity of casting before Friends my views of the loss they were sustaining, in consequence of their continuing to hold their meeting for worship with those who had gone from the Society in principle, as it had a tendency to produce weakness, and a disqualification to come forward in the proper exercise of the discipline, which this monthly meeting was called upon to do. I felt thankful strength had been afforded me to relieve my mind on this subject, it having for some time dwelt with me, and the more so as I understood other Friends' minds had been relieved thereby. I had for a considerable time felt a concern to visit a member of this meeting, who has united with the separatists, and was the printer and in part reputed editor of a work which set forth principles the most destructive to vital religion, and which held up our religious Society in as contemptible a point of view as words well could pourtray. I could not see it would be best for me to go to him alone, nor look towards any one to accompany me but my kind companion Joel Woolman; but the subject had not so far ripened on my mind as to allow of my opening my prospects to him, and his own monthly meeting needing his help he had taken the first place in the coach to leave me to-morrow morning, whereby I felt myself placed in a very trying situation, hemmed in indeed on either side. As I did not feel it would do for me to request a Friend of the meeting to accompany me in the visit, should it be likely to take place, the prospect of losing my kind companion J. W. was an exercise of faith and patience, although at times a glimmering prospect would pass before my mind, if my concern was a right one, and I endeavoured to keep quietly under it, way would open for its accomplishment. I retired to bed with my mind exercised with this subject, unable to see any way how it was to be brought about, and yet comforted under a hope, if it was a right concern, way would be made for it which I could have no idea of.

Sixth-day morning, J. Woolman went to the coach he was to go by, and finding every seat was occupied, he returned to my quarters again: the feelings which this unexpected circumstance produced, I cannot better describe (being at the time weighed down with the subject of the visit still in prospect,) than by saying, my heart felt as if it leaped within me for joy; although as it respected myself, suffering was likely to be the result of his disappointment. I then saw there was no time to be lost, but I must inform J. W. how it was with me, and proposed if he felt easy so

to do, our walking together to the house of the individual, rather than send a messenger to inquire if he were at home; this we accordingly did, and soon obtained an interview. After exchanging a few remarks on the state of the weather, a pause ensued; this afforded me a further opportunity to crave the aid of that wisdom, which alone is profitable to direct in all things; a portion of which I thought I never felt more the need of, to preserve me from hastily endeavouring to unburthen my mind towards him, on the subject of his separating himself from the Society: this I endeavoured to do in as few words and as tender language as I knew how. He heard me with apparent patience, until I had finished what was on my mind on this subject; he then replied, I had twice uttered hard things against those who had separated from the old Yearly Meeting, and joined themselves to the newly set-up one, yet he believed my visit to him was from apprehensions of duty, and that I was sincere in what I had expressed to him, and he accepted it as such, and always had entertained and still did entertain a regard for me. I found it would not do for me to quit, until I had cast before him my views respecting his being the printer, and in part the reputed editor, of the newspaper before alluded to; from which charges he did not attempt to clear himself, nor did it appear to be any part of my business to interrogate him on these subjects, feeling the need of being careful I did not overact my part, which might have produced controversy to my own hurt. I told him, from the little knowledge I had of the work, it was my belief, nothing that ever had been printed and circulated, had tended more to promote deistical principles amongst mankind, and strike at the root of vital Christianity, independent of the attempts it held out to vilify the Society of Friends, and render them odious in the eyes of the world;—that it was my firm belief, that unless those who were active in editing, printing, and promoting the circulation of this work, did soon desist therefrom, they would (if permitted to retain their natural faculties till the winding up of time,) have a bitter portion administered to their minds at that awful period. As far as the power of expression was given me, I entreated him from this time forward to cleanse his hands from it, and endeavour to get into quiet, and seek for Divine help to retrace the steps he had taken in that path, which had caused him to separate from our religious Society. A pause took place, during which a degree of solemnity was to be felt near us; after awhile he made his observations on the former part of what I had to communicate, relative to his separating from Friends in a very cool and deliberate manner. I did not feel that it was required of me to recall any thing I had then offered, nor to make any additions; except as he had been silent on the subject of the newspaper, I felt it required of me again to cast before the view

of his mind what I had before declared, which I believed would be the sorrowful closing result of the neglect of a timely desisting from promoting in any way the circulation of the newspaper alluded to; I exhorted him in the most affectionate manner to consult his pillow on what I had offered to him, and no longer dare to touch, taste, or handle this unclean thing: and here we closed the subject, and parted, I believe, under feelings of kindness towards each other,—he expressing (and I could not doubt but sincerely) his satisfaction with the visit. He appearing to be a man of naturally amiable manners; I could not but mourn over him for some time after we separated, and I humbly hope I did not lose sight of the merciful dealings of the Almighty with me in this time of conflict, in that he was pleased in such an unexpected manner to open the way for the visit, and give me strength fully to relieve my mind on this trying occasion.

Seventh-day morning, my kind companion J. W. left me; in the afternoon, accompanied by my friend John Satum, we rode to Hockesson; and attended meeting there the next morning. A separation as to meetings for discipline had taken place in this monthly meeting, but not in their meetings for worship: the meeting was large, a great proportion of young people being at it; it proved a still, quiet meeting, more so, I was informed, than had of late been the case, and Friends appeared to separate under some feelings of solemnity.

Fourth-day, attended the meeting at London-grove, which is held in a stone house. I felt well satisfied we had given up to sit with this solitary, reduced company, not doubting but our visit had been seasonably made; as far as my capacity was equal to it, I was made willing to go down into suffering with the suffering seed that was left in this meeting; under the consideration of the bitter plungings and hidden baptisms they must have to endure, in the right exercise of the discipline over their delinquent brethren, who are so numerous, and their own number so small, to put the discipline in force. This afternoon we rode to Centre, attended meeting there: this meeting, as a meeting for worship, has not separated. It is very trying to stand up in these mixed meetings, when we have reason to believe the bulk of those whom we are about to address are opposed to sound Christian principles; yet I durst not do otherwise than stand up and declare,—great was the mystery of iniquity, and great also the mystery of godliness, and not to be fathomed by man in this natural unregenerate state, by the strength of his reasoning powers and great natural acquirements;—urging also the necessity of our being so reduced, as to know a becoming babes in Christ, and a receiving from him the sincere milk of the word, that so we might come to experience a growing thereby from grace to grace, and one degree of strength

to another; until we become strong men for the Lord, and for the promotion of his glorious cause. However these observations might be received as idle tales by some that were present, I felt thankful I had not taken these matters away with me; after meeting, I received a very pressing invitation from an individual, but I found my safety depended on my refusing, which I accordingly did, and afterwards understood this invitation was from one of the foremost amongst the disaffected members in this monthly meeting.

First-day, (23d of 3d mo.) attended meeting at Kennet-square; Friends meet with the separatists. This to me proved a very suffering meeting, the rude behaviour of some of the young people was such, that I felt called upon publicly to notice it; some of them at first appeared disposed to stout it out, but a sense of shame became at last manifest. After meeting we rode to Kennet, and took up our abode for the night at our kind friend Edward Semple's.

Fourth-day, we attended Marlborough meeting; here we also met with a mixed company; the meeting was long in gathering, but it separated under that precious quiet, which as a canopy had in mercy spread over us.

Fifth-day, attended meeting at Fallowfield; this meeting was held in a school-house, Friends being shut out of their meeting-house by the separatists: our meeting consisted of about twenty individuals; it was held in an orderly, becoming manner, and I humbly hope it might be said, it was a time of edification to some of us, if not generally so.

First-day morning, I had for some time apprehended when I reached this place, West Chester, I should be called upon to make a visit to an individual in the neighbourhood, who once was engaged in religious service in my native land; fearing any longer to put it off, we made a call upon him on our way to meeting; although he had united himself to the new Yearly Meeting of separatists in Philadelphia, we were kindly received. After some few observations were made relative to matters in my native land, a quiet ensued; when I was helped to break silence, and communicate that which to me appeared to be the counsel of my Divine Master. I was heard quietly through, but from replies made, it was evident he felt disposed to justify his conduct, and to consider himself whole; but it was lamentably manifest, that that eye, which once had been anointed clearly to see those things which appertain to the kingdom of Christ, was again become blinded. A separation in the meeting for worship at West Chester had not taken place; it was a quiet, solid meeting, except that an attempt was made by the individual above alluded to, to impress the minds of such as were willing to receive it, that all order and discipline in Society should be levelled to man's inclination; feeling myself called upon to



enter my protest against such doctrine, I endeavoured to do it faithfully, which I afterwards understood had been to the relief of many Friends' minds. We rode to West Town school, and attended the afternoon meeting: here we met part of a committee appointed by the Yearly Meeting to attend to this institution's concerns; in the evening we met in the boys' school-room, the children being collected for reading previous to their retiring to bed; and I was led to hope that what was offered amongst them, would be remembered by, at least, most of the elder boys: thus, a trying day in prospect, was, through adorable help, brought to a peaceful close.

Second-day morning, accompanied by our kind friend Peter Price, we rode to Middletown, and attended Chester monthly meeting: numerous testimonies of denial were signed, and testimonies ordered for the next monthly meeting; many fresh cases were brought into the men's meeting, and numerous cases reported from the women's meeting, all the result of unsoundness of religious principles. Although I felt considerable fatigue of body, yet I was thankful in being made willing to share with Friends in their sufferings in these meetings.

1st of 4th mo. 1828. Third-day morning, my kind companion John Satum, jun. having calls home, we parted in near affection, uniting in expression that our short time of travelling together had been to mutual satisfaction; Joshua Sharpless, a member of Birmingham meeting, kindly engaged to take charge of me for a short time. The separation that had taken place in the Society, renders travelling to such as come from Great Britain more difficult than formerly, and the difficulty is increased of taking such from home for any length of time, on account of Society's concerns in their own meeting, the number of suitable Friends for companions is therefore much reduced. We rode to where Friends of Derby hold their meetings to attend monthly meeting; the principal business that came before it was issuing testimonies of denial, ordering others for next meeting, and receiving fresh cases of delinquency, and also cases of the like kind from the women's meeting. The school-mistress of the monthly meeting school continuing with Friends, had been ordered by those who had separated from Friends, to bring the children to the separatists' meeting for worship, which she refusing to do, they had warned her out of the school; this circumstance occasioned the meeting some exercise how to proceed, there however appeared no other way but for Friends to let the matter take its course. In the afternoon we rode to Willett's Town.

Fourth-day, my kind companion Joshua Sharpless, accompanied me to Goshen, to attend monthly meeting there; the business of this meeting principally consisted in issuing testimonies, ordering testimonies, and receiving fresh cases of the like kind from the

women's meeting; it was consoling to observe, notwithstanding the very few active members left in this monthly meeting, the lively zeal they manifested for the rightly-conducting of the discipline, whilst, as was reported, they were defied by those they visited to have power to put the discipline in force against them.

Sixth-day, attended the monthly meeting of Concord; the chief business of this meeting consisted in issuing testimonies of denial, ordering others, and receiving fresh cases of delinquency. The affairs of the meeting appeared to be proceeded with in a good degree of concern, that they should be conducted under right authority.

First-day, attended meeting at Chichester; the prospect of attending this meeting had been trying to me, for I do not know when I have felt more of the spirit of opposition than in this meeting. Whilst I was on my feet engaged in religious service, a man who sat in the gallery near me (one of the separatists) stood up and opposed what I was delivering. I felt it safest not to take notice of him, and he sat down; the meeting kept quiet, and continued so to the close of it: after which we rode to Wilmingtion.

The next day we attended monthly meeting at Hockesson, where I met with my dear aged friend William Jackson. Our little company was favoured to experience the fulfilment of the promise to the two or three rightly gathered; these sifting times have been the means of bringing Friends nearer together in the bond of true religious fellowship. Friends of this monthly meeting had not as yet felt strong enough to deal with their delinquent members. I was truly glad that my lot had been cast amongst this little handful, hoping that their hands would yet become strong for the work whereunto, as faithful members of this monthly meeting, they are called; in order that the reproach brought upon the cause of Truth, by those who are acting so in opposition to its principles, may be thus far wiped away.

Third-day, (8th of 4th mo.) we proceeded to Kennett to attend the monthly meeting there. Friends not having felt strength to take up the cases of those of their members, who have united themselves to the newly set-up Yearly Meeting in Philadelphia, the business of the meeting was very soon finished.

Fourth-day, my kind friend Benjamin Sharpless, took the charge of driving me to Bradford, to attend that monthly meeting, which continues to be large; the separation in Calne quarterly meeting, of which this monthly meeting is a branch, having so recently occurred, no cases of delinquency have as yet been brought to the monthly meeting.

We rode to our kind friend William Jackson's at New-Garden, and attended monthly meeting there; the meeting for worship was a favoured time, after which the meeting for discipline commenced: the clerk of the monthly meeting being

gone off with the disaffected part of the meeting, the present clerk being new at his work, the business proceeded slowly; yet it was cheering to find, stripped as this meeting was, Friends had strength to proceed to put the discipline in force against their delinquent members.

Sixth-day, attended monthly meeting at Doe Run; this meeting appears to have been more stripped of its active members than any meeting I have yet attended; only four elderly men remained to take an active part in the monthly meeting, which appears so dispirited that no efforts have yet been made to take up the cases of delinquency; some of the overseers, the clerk of the monthly meeting, and the books, are with the separatists.

Seventh-day, (12th of 4th mo.) we attended London-grove monthly meeting: from accounts given me by two members of this monthly meeting, it appears that the desolation through unsoundness of principle occasioned amongst them is distressing. Friends here, whilst they heard of wars and rumours of wars, appeared to partake of so much peace and harmony within their borders, that it was hoped they would have escaped that which came upon them like a thunder-storm, the dreadful consequences of which they were unprepared to meet: so secretly and artfully had the plans been laid which produced the separation, that nearly the whole of this once large monthly meeting was swept away like a mighty deluge; the overseers on both sides of the house went off with the separatists, who also had possession of the books and papers. It was encouraging to find this little remnant so nearly united in love towards each other, and in desires to strengthen each other's hands in a faithful discharge of their religious duty, by standing firm in the support of our wholesome discipline against offenders. When looking at this diminutive company, and the host of opposers they would have to encounter, my very soul craved for them, that the outstretched arm of Omnipotence might be made bare for their help, in all their encounters. After meeting we rode to Birmingham.

First-day morning, attended Whitelands meeting, which was small; a great number of the usual attenders of this meeting, it was supposed, were gone to Philadelphia to attend the Yearly Meeting of those who had seceded from Friends: in the evening we returned to Birmingham.

Third-day morning, I left Wilmington by steam-boat for Philadelphia: a number of the seceders were on board the boat, from whom I kept aloof, aware of the life they have in controversy, which I never yet found ended in much satisfaction.

## CHAPTER XXXVII.

FOURTH-DAY, (16th of 4th mo., 1828,) attended Twelfth-street meeting for worship, in Philadelphia, after which was held their monthly meeting: the next day, attended Mulberry-street meeting, which was a favoured time.

Sixth-day, attended the meeting for sufferings; the several matters that came before the meeting were treated with much deliberation and weight; the meeting adjourned to the afternoon: on our first sitting down again, a solemn covering came over the meeting, under which Friends were favoured to transact the business that came before them, and adjourned to the close of the Yearly Meeting.

First-day morning, attended North-street meeting; in the afternoon, feeling drawings in my mind towards Pine-street, I sat with Friends there: the meeting soon settled down into that holy quiet which is not at our command, and when in mercy vouchsafed to us, calls for gratitude on our part: I doubt not many minds were comforted in this meeting. Took tea with J. W. Morris; a large company were present; after tea we had a religious opportunity together, not sought for, I humbly hope I may say, in the will of the creature, but yielded to, under feelings with which we were favoured, amidst social conversation, that the command was proclaimed without the sound of words to effect it, "Keep silence before me:" this opportunity I was led to believe proved a season of renewal of strength to some of our company.

Second-day, (21st of 4th mo.) attended the first sitting of this Yearly Meeting, the attendance was large; it was considered by some Friends that the attendance was not much smaller than in ordinary times. The meeting was opened under a very solemn covering, great quietness prevailed; the becoming deportment of the young men, and the attention they manifested to the various matters that came before the meeting, (I hoped it might be said,) evinced the interest they felt in the concerns of the Society, and produced the cheering prospect of a succession of helpers in the church.

Second-day, 28th of 4th mo., this day the Yearly Meeting closed its sittings; the meeting continued throughout to be large in attendance, and Friends parted under a grateful sense of the help



which had in mercy been dispensed, in transacting the various important matters which came before the meeting.

Fourth-day, crossed the Delaware river to New Jersey, and the next day, attended meeting at Old Springfield; the meeting gathered at the same time that of the separatists did; this to me was to be regretted, from a fear that it would tend to keep up that familiar intercourse between the youth amongst us and them.

Seventh-day, 3rd of 5th mo., attended the select preparative meeting for Upper Springfield, held at Mansfield; it was small by deaths, and by desertion from Friends: I thought it was evidently to be felt, that the Great Head of the Church was mercifully near to this little tried company, waiting to show himself willing to comfort the mourners amongst them, and in his own time to give beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, and the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness.

First-day, attended meeting at East Branch; the number of Friends is small, but those of other societies came crowding into the meeting-house, whereby we had a large gathering, which settled down very much in quiet, and continued so to the close. I felt well satisfied that I had given up to sit with this company: may the praise be given where only it is due, is the frequent, fervent prayer of my soul.

Second-day, rode to Crosswicks to attend the select meeting for Chesterfield, which met in the school-house. Friends appeared much cast down at the desolation occasioned amongst them, through a departing from the principles of the Society; the few members left appeared to be banded together by that love which is stronger than death, and which, if abode in, will carry them through all their future exercises. We took up our abode for the night with a Friend, whom we found in a very trying situation,—his mother and others of his nearest relations having gone off with the separatists.

Attended Chesterfield monthly meeting, held in a private house; the weather being warm, and Friends being packed close together, occasioned it to be an oppressive sitting: the meeting continued until past five in the afternoon; the testimonies of denial issued, the consideration of other cases where visits had been made, and fresh cases brought forward in both meetings, were so numerous as to occasion Friends being detained to this late hour.

Fourth-day morning, we rode to Mansfield, to attend Upper Springfield monthly meeting: numerous cases of delinquency came before us, in consequence of the separation; it was pleasant to observe such a willingness manifested to submit to appointments to visit their disorderly members: after meeting we rode to our kind friend Joseph Ellis's.

Fifth-day, we rode to Mount Holly, to attend the monthly meeting there. It was encouraging in sitting with Friends of this meeting to observe, that under all the insults and abuse which the reports showed they met with, in visiting those who had gone off from Friends, there was no relaxation in putting the discipline in force; the help of the quarterly meeting's committee appeared to be of singular service to this little company, in holding up their hands and counselling them when under difficulty.

Seventh-day, (10th of 5th mo.) rode to Trenton; the separatists have the controul of the meeting-house here, the doorkeeper being with them; they have set up an afternoon meeting, which had long been discontinued by direction of the quarterly meeting; they had also altered the First-day morning meeting from eleven to half-past twelve o'clock.

First-day, the alteration in the hour of meeting is to take place for the first-time to-day, which has placed Friends in a trying situation; but as there appeared no other way for Friends to act, but to keep to the hour heretofore agreed to by the quarterly meeting, they accordingly did so; the disaffected persons meeting at an earlier time, it was feared the meeting would be disturbed by the separatists leaving the meeting again before the usual time of its breaking up; but they sat until it appeared time to break up the meeting, and Friends considered it to have been the most quiet meeting that had been known at Trenton for a long time. As it respected the Friends of this meeting, and the reputation of the Society, I could not regret the separatists had adopted such a measure, observing it had a tendency to rouse Friends to a willingness to seek out for a place to meet separately from those who were trampling on the principles of the Society.

Feeling drawings in my mind to make a visit to the state-prison, this afternoon was concluded upon by the managers as the most suitable time for it; the weather being warm, the prisoners (upwards of seventy in number) were seated in the yard; their behaviour was becoming, and from the solidity manifested by many of them, I was led to hope I had not been out of my place in requesting this opportunity; we were very handsomely treated by the managers at our parting. Although the giving up to this service had cost me very painful feelings; yet now it was accomplished, I could go on my way rejoicing.

Second-day morning, 12th of 5th mo., we rode to Shrewsbury, and were kindly cared for by the widow of my friend S. Williams. Although a separation had taken place in the meetings for discipline in this quarterly meeting, yet Friends having adjourned to this place to hold the quarterly meeting next Fifth-day, I found I was likely again to be introduced into warfare, the

separatists having concluded to hold their quarterly meeting at the same time and place.

The next day, attended an adjournment of this monthly meeting; it was encouraging to observe the few members left in this meeting were so alive to the welfare of the Society, and no disposition manifested in any of its members to flinch from the calls of the meeting.

Attended the quarterly select meeting: as the separatists occupied that part of the house heretofore used by this meeting, it was held by Friends in the women's side, keeping as far as they were well able to do from the partition, so as not to be annoyed by what passed in the other meeting. I believe it might be said to be a time in which Friends were comforted together, and afresh encouraged to be willing to hold on in whatever way it might be required of them to take up the daily cross.

Fifth-day, Friends met as usual to hold their quarterly meeting, the separatists met with them; when it was considered a suitable time, a Friend proposed that the shutters should be closed, to separate the men and women; on which one of the separatists seized the clerk's table, brought it to the front of the meeting, took a paper out of his pocket with minutes all ready prepared, and read over an opening minute of their meeting, and the names of their representatives; one of the Friends of the quarterly meeting remonstrated with him on account of these proceedings, but all was of no avail; Friends were obliged to leave the meeting and go to the house of a Friend, and proceed with the business of the quarterly meeting in the best way circumstances would allow: the like was the case with the women Friends.

First-day, attended meeting at Stoney Brook; this is a small meeting; it is apprehended nearly one half of its members are unsound, but are afraid to manifest their principles; the generality of the neighbourhood, who do not profess with Friends, are reputed to be serious, religiously disposed Episcopalians, Baptists, Methodists, and Presbyterians, and warmly opposed to those who hold the doctrine of Elias Hicks. In the afternoon we made a visit to an aged Friend confined to the house, and her sister; our visit appeared grateful to them both.

Fourth-day, attended Plainfield monthly meeting; the meeting for worship was a time which called for thankfulness: the business of the monthly meeting appeared to be conducted in much harmony; this meeting had been much stripped of its members, and some of its overseers. Friends had not as yet found their way open to do much in dealing with their delinquent members, who had set up new meetings. I concluded, from the number of individuals that were present, there must be those who had joined in the separation; but their cases not having yet been brought forward, they still had a claim to sit in the monthly meeting of

Friends. Although I feared it would rouse such, if there were of this description present, and prevent the meeting breaking up in that quiet in which it had been conducted, I found if I were faithful to apprehended duty, that I must call the attention of Friends to consider, if there were not a danger of their suffering the right time to pass by for effecting a separation in a meeting for worship capacity,—giving such reasons for this step being taken, as I found accorded with the views of most, if not all, who took an active part in the concerns of the meeting; on which a committee was nominated to take the subject into consideration, and propose the most convenient place for such a purpose.

Fifth-day, my kind companion T. Curtis and myself proceeded to New York, where after all the perils by land, and through false brethren, to which I had been exposed, we were favoured to arrive in safety, and I hope under a thankful sense of the many merciful preservations I had been a witness of. We were kindly received by Elizabeth Bowns.

24th of 5th mo. Seventh-day morning, attended the first sitting of the Select Yearly Meeting of New York, which was large. After the meeting was opened and the representatives called over, Friends were informed, there were a number of persons present who had separated themselves from the religious Society of Friends, and who had been regularly disowned by the respective monthly meetings to which they had belonged; these persons were several times requested to withdraw, that the meeting might proceed with its business, agreeably to our established rules, which require that the meeting should be select; but this they declined doing, giving sufficient proof, by their disorderly conduct, of their determination to disregard the entreaties of the meeting. During this scene of clamour and confusion, Friends were preserved in a remarkable manner in Christian meekness and firmness,—not a word, that I could observe, escaped from any Friend denoting impatience or hostility; for which favour many of our minds were bowed as into the very dust before Him, who had, in this time of danger, thus far preserved us in the hollow of his Divine hand. After enduring for several hours much abuse from these intruders, who were countenanced in their conduct by several members of the meeting, who had identified themselves with the separatists, the meeting adjourned to the afternoon, directing the representatives to consider of, and propose to the next meeting, a suitable Friend to serve as clerk. Agreeably to adjournment, Friends met; one of the representatives, who had, in various ways, identified himself with the separatists, informed the meeting, he was requested by a part of their number to state, they had agreed to propose ——— for clerk, the person thus proposed being one of those who had also united himself with the separatists: a Friend, one of the representatives, also informed the meeting, that he had been



authorized by the representatives whilst altogether, to state as their prevailing sense, that Joseph Brown should be nominated for clerk;—many of the representatives confirmed this last report. The meeting was again thrown into a state of confusion by the conduct of some of the separatists, aided and encouraged by disaffected members of the Yearly Meeting: but amidst all these trying circumstances, Friends continued to be mercifully preserved calm. After they had sat until near night amidst these complicated trials, and there appearing no prospect that the separatists would withdraw from the meeting, Friends adjourned to Fourth-day morning.

First-day morning, attended Hester-street meeting, which was large; the meeting was early interrupted by a communication from one of the ministers of the separatists, but the solemnity was resumed with which at its first sitting down the meeting was favoured. In the afternoon I attended Rose-street meeting, where I escaped the company of the numerous preachers of the separatists: the meeting was held in quiet, although much crowded.

Second-day morning, 26th of 5th mo. 1828, the Yearly Meeting for the general concerns of the Society assembled; the house was crowded to an unusual degree before the time appointed: the clerk (Samuel Parsons) opened the Yearly Meeting, which done, I found I must stand upon my feet, and endeavour to lay before the meeting that which I believed my mind had become charged with, although I dreaded making the attempt, being aware, from the conduct some of the leading part of the separatists manifested towards me, that I was become increasingly obnoxious to them, but I durst not keep silence; I therefore rose with nearly these words: "I obtained a certificate from my own monthly and quarterly meeting, also one from the select Yearly Meeting of Friends held in London, expressive of their concurrence with my travelling in the work of the ministry on this continent, which certificates were read in the last Yearly Meeting of New York, and entered on the records of that Yearly Meeting; such being the case, it constitutes me as much a member of this Yearly Meeting as any other member of it; as such I therefore dare do no other than enter my protest against the meeting's proceeding with its business, whilst so many persons are in the meeting who have no claim or right to sit in this Yearly Meeting."\* I was suffered to pro-

[\* The rules of discipline of New York Yearly Meeting direct, that "after the case of an offender is brought to a meeting, he is not to attend any of our meetings for discipline." There were present in this meeting very many individuals, whose cases had not only been brought to a meeting, but who had been regularly disowned, according to the discipline and good order of our Society; and consequently the Yearly Meeting could not, consistently, with its own regulations, proceed to the transaction of any business. From "The Friend." Philadelphia, 6 mo. 28, 1828.]

ceed without interruption, and was humbled under a thankful sense of support, that I had not flinched from the step I had taken. This called forth other Friends in support of the meeting's becoming select before the business of it was gone into; but the disaffected part of the meeting manifested a determination that those who were disqualified to sit in the Yearly Meeting should remain, using many unsound arguments to support them in their determination. Elias Hicks also declared they had a right to sit this Yearly Meeting, saying, he should have no objection to the meeting going on with the business, if there were a number of Presbyterians in the house at the same time; he further added, those who had set up the new Yearly Meeting in Philadelphia, of which these individuals were members, were not the seceders, but that the few left of the old Yearly Meeting were the seceders; that with the consent of his own monthly meeting he had attended the new Yearly Meeting in Philadelphia in the second week of the fourth month last; that it was attended by a large proportion of the members of Pennsylvania, New Jersey, and the eastern shore of Maryland, and from all the quarterly meetings but one representatives had come, which meeting consisted of the cream of these quarterly meetings. Friends maintaining their ground against the business of the meeting being proceeded in, whilst those who had no right to sit in the meeting were present; the separatists then ordered the clerk in a very commanding manner to go on with the business of the meeting, until at last many of them manifested a disposition to become riotous in order to compel his proceeding. A Friend stood up and proposed, such Friends as were desirous of preserving the order of this Yearly Meeting, should adjourn to some suitable place to transact the business, which proposal was fully united with by other Friends, but opposed with violence by the separatists. Whilst matters were thus going on, the clerk, aware that it must terminate in a separation, prepared a minute to that effect—to adjourn to the basement-story of the meeting-house, which he stood up to read; on which an outcry took place, 'Don't let him read it,'—'pull him down;'—others calling out, 'He is no clerk of the Yearly Meeting,—we have a clerk of our own;—the representatives have met, and we have chosen a clerk:' but this being the opening of the Yearly Meeting, the representatives had not yet received their orders from the meeting to meet for that purpose. E. Hicks then called upon their new-chosen clerk to come forward, which he did over the backs of the forms, and heads and shoulders of Friends, some of whom were incommoded by it: on his reaching the front of the clerk's table, E. Hicks put out his hand to assist him in gaining admittance to the table, but by some means he failed, on which some of the Hicksite party turned their newly-

chosen clerk heels first into the clerk's seat. Attempts were now made to wrest the minute the clerk had made out of his hands, which they were not able to effect, nor prevent his reading of it; but to preclude what he thus read being heard over the meeting, they struck their sticks against the wall of the house, they stamped on the floor with their feet and umbrellas, they hooted and hissed, and some were heard to swear: the windows being down, the tumult was so great, people outside of the house compared it to thunder at a distance. The minute of the adjournment being read, Friends left the house and went towards the basement-story, but care had been previously taken by the Hicksite party to keep Friends out of this part of the house by locking the doors against them; one of their party threatened Friends with consequences if they attempted an entrance, on which a Friend present proposed our adjourning to the medical college in Duane-street, which accordingly took place. From the solemn manner in which Friends moved slowly along the streets, many strewing their tears on the way, from having left behind them some near relatives and some intimate friends, together with the painful feelings occasioned by the scene of uproar and violence they had so recently escaped, inquiry was made by people, "Was a burial coming?" On reaching the college, and after taking our seats, a time of silence ensued; praises were vocally offered up, to the great Shepherd of Israel for this signal deliverance of his people, when the waters of the Red Sea were made to stand on heaps. Daniel Heaviland, a very aged blind Friend, broke forth in a melodious manner, and acknowledged his spirit was now set at liberty, and his lips unsealed to speak of things he had seen for nearly forty years, and who it should be that would introduce such disorder and confusion in the Society; adding, thirty-five years ago, when the Yearly Meeting was held at Westbury, on Long Island, two women Friends from across the great water,\* sitting in a room by themselves in the Friend's house where he lodged, seeing him pass the room-door, called him in, and pointing to E. Hicks, who was in another room, said, "That man will, some day or other, be a troubler in Israel."—He said that the scene we had passed through in this Yearly Meeting was clearly unfolded to his view before he came to the city, and he expressed his thankfulness to his heavenly Father for this great deliverance. "But," said he, "dear friends, there will yet something come to pass, if my feelings have not deceived me, that will more fully try our foundation;" and he exhorted Friends to get so deep as that they might be able to stand. This was a heart-tendering time, not only to the aged and middle-aged, but some of the youth

[\* Believed to be Mary Ridgeway and Jane Watson.]

were also observed with their heads resting on their hands, weeping.\*

The meeting being opened, the women became the subject of consideration, and some men Friends were deputed to attend at Rose-street house, where their Yearly Meeting was then sitting. The comfortable change of feeling produced in the mind, between entering the meeting-house of Hester-street this morning and the college, is not to be conceived to the full: the meeting adjourned to the afternoon. At the time adjourned to, Friends met; the committee from this meeting to attend to the women Friends reported, that the gates of Rose-street meeting-house, (where the women's Yearly Meeting is held,) were found locked, and that they were denied an entrance to the women's house; also that a deputation had been sent to the women from the body they left in Hester-street meeting-house. From the prospect of the trying situation the women Friends were likely to be placed in, some men Friends were requested to lend them such assistance as they were able. The meeting being informed that the women were alike circumstanced as the men had been, it was expected they must leave their meeting-house, and as the African Methodist meeting-house had been offered for their accommodation, it was concluded to accept it.

Third-day morning, the women went into the lobby of their house, and adjourned to the African Methodist meeting-house, accompanied by some men Friends. These trying circumstances under which Friends were now placed, had become noised abroad in the city, and much sympathy appeared to be manifested, and great quiet was observed by the people, as we passed through the streets. The meeting for sufferings stood adjourned to Hester-street house this evening; the clerk and others of us proceeded there accordingly. On our arrival, we were informed by one of E. Hicks's party, there was no longer a meeting for sufferings, it

[\* It will doubtless be, to many readers in this country, very affecting, and to those previously uninformed quite astonishing, to find what excesses of disorder and of unchristian conduct the followers of Elias Hicks committed, in their attempt to overthrow the good order and Christian principles of the Society in America. Although it is almost painful to see them again thus exposed in this Journal, yet these occurrences (now become matters of history) ought to awaken in our minds reflections of profitable and solemn interest, as well as feelings of humble and reverent gratitude. It is believed, that throughout the narrative of these distressing scenes, "the marks" of the patient, peaceable disciple of Jesus, are to be discovered in the conduct of our suffering brethren in that land; and for whom our sympathy will not fail to be afresh excited on the perusal of these accounts. While we may be led to reflect upon our state of comparative quiet and exemption from such distressing trials in this country, may we ever remember that the enemy of all righteousness has various other modes of assailing us, if we keep not the watch in the light of the Lord, and cleave with earnest faith unto the Captain of our salvation:—a building is not more effectually overthrown by direct open force, than by a secret undermining and removing of it from its true foundation.]



having been dissolved; and that Friends would not be admitted into that house or any part of it, to hold such meeting.

Fourth-day, the select meeting, standing adjourned to the 8th, have this morning assembled; most of those who at the former meeting had improperly intruded themselves, again took their seats in this meeting; and E. Hicks and his party manifesting a determination that the clerk nominated by their party should stand, Friends could not proceed to business, and therefore were obliged to move to the other end of the house, and endeavour after as much quiet as the nature of their situation would allow: Joseph Bowne was appointed clerk to the select meeting; after which Friends adjourned to the college.\*

This being the day appointed for both the meeting-houses in the city to be open for religious worship, and time not allowing for any arrangement for Friends holding their meetings elsewhere, the separatists having both meeting-houses now in their possession, after considering the subject, Friends were left at liberty to attend either of the two meeting-houses or not. Accompanied by my kind friends, Rowland Green and Daniel Wood, we proceeded to Rose-street house; although we were early in our attendance, yet, on our entering the house, we observed the ministers' gallery was crowded from end to end; some Friends under the gallery leaving their seats for us, we occupied them. As it evidently appeared to be a planned thing to crowd the gallery thus early by the separatist party, to keep us from our seats, I found great care would be necessary on my part to watch against any thing like a spirit of enmity or resentment taking place in my mind towards any on this account. A very short time after we had taken our seats, a leader of the separatist party stood up: on his taking his seat he was quickly followed by another, both of them held forth doctrines tending to strike at the very root of vital religion, and in as direct opposition to the acknowledged principles of our ancient Friends as words could well convey: these were quickly followed by a female of their party, who used very strong expressions in what she called setting her seal to the gospel truths declared in the two foregoing communications. My mind was brought under exercise, and yet I felt a dread at the idea of standing up to discharge my duty, expecting no other but it would produce opposition; but when I believed the right time was come, I ventured to rise, and after having, in as concise a manner as I was capable of, borne my testimony to the necessity of our experiencing the aid and assistance of the Spirit and power of Jesus Christ, who suffered without the gates of Jerusalem, if the great work of our soul's salvation becomes that com-

[\* It is stated in "The Friend," that at least two-thirds of all the ministers and elders of New York, who were in attendance, continued with Friends.]

plete work, which it most assuredly must become, to entitle us to a seat in the kingdom of heaven. I further exhorted, for the sake of those not in profession with our religious Society, that the feet of their minds might not be turned from the sure foundation, by any thing that had been before communicated ; and I recommended to their perusal a pamphlet published by the meeting for sufferings in Philadelphia, entitled, "A Declaration of our religious Principles," containing Extracts from our ancient Friends' writings on the doctrines owned by our religious Society, which I informed them could be easily obtained by applying to some sound member of our religious community in the city ; and I advised them to compare the principles there laid down, (which continued to be the principles of the sound members amongst us to this day as a religious body,) with the unsound doctrines that had been advanced this morning ; and not to charge the Society with holding principles which it does not, that we may not be blamed for that which we cannot own or allow to be the truths of the gospel. The opposing spirit was so chained down, it was remarked by Friends afterwards, that none of the usual marks of disapprobation were manifested, such as coughing, shuffling of the feet, and blowing the nose, which, by the separatists, are at times very prevalent in our meetings, when any thing is offered which they do not approve. After I took my seat, two Friends had very acceptable service in the meeting, which closed under a good degree of quiet. On my leaving my seat, I was beset by three or four of the supporters of E. Hicks, one grasping my hand so tight I found it difficult to extricate myself, evidently wishing to draw me into controversy, but which I found it safest to avoid, and proceeded to leave the house ; but I had not advanced much further, before I was attacked by another of this party coming from between the forms towards me, exclaiming in a loud tone of voice, "By square and by rule works every fool ;" he thus followed me down the meeting-house to the door, his gestures and countenance being such, a Friend who was near came between us, as he said, fearing he would have proceeded to personal violence. Some females not professing with Friends coming towards us, called out shame at his behaviour, saying, my age, if nothing else, should have restrained him from attacking me as he had done. Thus ended this trying day, as it had been in prospect to me.

Seventh-day morning, before I left my chamber, I was informed there were two of the separatists waiting for me below stairs, having been previously told that the Select Yearly Meeting of the separatists had appointed a committee of that meeting to visit me, and that some of this committee had been in diligent search of me the preceding day. Understanding one of these individuals was a person at whose house I had been twice kindly

entertained, as such, until I had an official proof from himself of his business with me, I did not feel comfortable at the idea of refusing to see him; I therefore provided myself with two suitable Friends to bear me company, who were at hand. On taking our seats, one of the separatists' committee informed me, they were deputed by their Select Yearly Meeting to say, the unsoundness of my ministry had occasioned great uneasiness to the members of their meeting; that they were commissioned by their Select Yearly Meeting to order me not to proceed further on my visit, but return home. To which I made nearly the following reply: "I deny the authority of your Select Yearly Meeting, or your having any thing to do with me; you have already committed yourselves on this subject, for on Fourth-day last, when assembled with you, before a separation had taken place in the select department of the Society, E. Hicks stood up in that meeting and expressed his surprise at seeing me and my country-folks, with other Friends, come into the meeting-house; saying, we had no business there, we had separated from you and had no more to do with you; and that any remarks we might have to make in that meeting, no notice should be taken of them. If we at that time had nothing to do with you, on the same ground you can now have nothing to do with us, and therefore I shall be obliged by your meeting giving me no more trouble." We parted apparently with kindness, for which I felt thankful. Shortly after which I received the following addressed to me:—

"At a Yearly Meeting of ministers and elders, held in New York, and opened the 24th of 5th mo. 1828, and met again by adjournments the 28th, 29th, 30th, and 31st of the same inclusive.

"This meeting has been brought under exercise and concern, on account of the movements of our friends from England, now on a religious visit to this country, and apprehending their services in the line of the ministry ought to cease, as it is evident we have not united therewith, believing their labours have had a tendency to produce discord and division in Society; and it appearing that labour has been frequently extended in the course of their visits in different parts of the Yearly Meeting, without producing the desired effect, a committee was therefore appointed to inform them thereof, and as a personal interview has been in some instances refused, they are authorized to communicate the above minute in writing, and that the clerk be directed to sign it on behalf thereof, and that a copy be directed to our subordinate meetings of ministers and elders, and to the Yearly and Second-day morning Meeting of ministers and elders to be held in London."

"[Extracted from the minutes.]

"JOHN BARROW, Clerk."

First-day, attended Rose-street house in the morning ; we had a very trying meeting from the antichristian doctrines we were obliged to hear advanced before a crowded audience, many of whom were not in profession with Friends ; in the afternoon attended a solid, quiet meeting, held in a large school-house at one of the extremities of the city.

Second-day, (2nd of 6th mo. 1828,) after the meeting had sat until near eleven o'clock at night, the Yearly Meeting closed.

Fourth-day, this being the day when the monthly meeting for New York is held, as no separation had taken place in that meeting, Friends proceeded to their meeting house, where the monthly meeting is usually held ; after the meeting had sat about an hour, one of the separatists proposed the meeting should go to business, and Friends with the separatists, retired to the basement-story as heretofore. Great excitement having taken place in the minds of the young people who had gone off from the Society, on the occurrence of this monthly meeting, they gave a very general attendance. The meeting for discipline being opened, the clerk of the Yearly Meeting of Friends of New York laid on the table extracts from their Yearly Meeting ; the clerk of the monthly meeting, who is in connexion with the separatists, laid on the table also extracts from the Yearly Meeting of the separatists, and contended for the reading the extracts from their Yearly Meeting, in which he was warmly supported by their body, but Friends maintained their testimony against the propriety of such a step. After Friends had passed through a time of sore exercise, and the determination being manifested on the part of the separatists to have the extracts from their Yearly Meeting read, it was proposed to adjourn the monthly meeting ; and such Friends as could not favour the disorderly proceedings, which the meeting had manifested a determination to pursue, were requested to retire to the back part of the meeting-house, and appoint a clerk for the day, and then conclude upon a place to adjourn to ; this measure was warmly opposed by the separatists, but Friends retired to the back part of the meeting-house, where, being partly accommodated with seats, and getting into as much quiet as the nature of their situation would allow, they appointed a clerk, and concluded upon adjourning to Rose-street meeting-house at ten on Sixth-day morning. This step being taken, it evidently wrought such a change in the countenances of the suffering members of this monthly meeting as cannot well be set forth in words ; thus another day of trial, in anticipation dreaded by not a few, was, in adorable mercy, passed over.

I had been looking towards Flushing monthly meeting to-morrow, but my bodily strength appeared so much exhausted by long sittings and continual exercise of mind, that I had concluded I must give up the thoughts of such an



attempt; but as I found I could not get comfortably from under the weight of it, I requested my companion to be in readiness, and we proceeded accordingly. My mind by this time had become a little seasoned to bear these tumults, which I again looked for at Flushing. It was expected there would be a part of a committee of the separatists' Yearly Meeting, both men and women, in attendance; at this monthly meeting, the clerk of the Yearly Meeting of Friends of New York laid on the clerk's table the extracts from that Yearly Meeting. Extracts from the Yearly Meeting of the separatists were also laid on the clerk's table, with an epistle from that Yearly Meeting. This produced the like disorder which took place in the monthly meeting of New York, but Friends were preserved in quiet, amidst all the abusive language and provocation they received from some of the members of the monthly meeting and the committee of the separatists. Endeavours were used by the separatists to prevent those who were strangers speaking in support of the order and discipline of the Society; after the minds of Friends had been thus exercised for about two hours, in support of their right to have the extracts from the Yearly Meeting of Friends read in their monthly meeting, and the determined opposition manifest to it by the separatists and their committee, calling the Yearly Meeting of Friends a spurious Yearly Meeting, and one they could not own, it appeared the best way to suffer those who denied their allegiance to the Yearly Meeting of Friends in New York to go on with their business, and for Friends to sit quiet and not take any active part therein, the clerk of the monthly meeting being with the separatists. The separatists proceeded to business; a deputation came in from the women's meeting, informing men Friends of the trying situation they were placed in, by divers females being present who had no right to sit that meeting, and who would not withdraw. On which the women Friends were informed, the men Friends had concluded to remain in the meeting-house and transact the business of the monthly meeting. Some of the separatists objected to leave Friends in possession of the meeting-house, for this purpose, but this not being generally persisted in, they accordingly left Friends in the house alone, the clerk taking away with him the books and papers belonging to the monthly meeting. The women Friends then came into the men's meeting to say, the women separatists had finished their business, but were determined not to quit the meeting-house whilst the women Friends were there. The men's business being nearly finished, they were informed to that effect, and that the men would then give up their house to them to transact their business in; the women therefore took possession of it. Thus closed this trying day; trying, not only as it respected the difficulties Friends had to meet with, but as it respected such well-disposed

individuals whose minds had been wrought upon, either from the affectionate part overpowering their better judgment, or by being argued out of it, and had united themselves to this body.

Sixth-day morning, we returned to New York, and at the time of the adjournment of the monthly meeting went to Rose-street. Although some Friends had waited on the property committee, requesting the use of the house to accommodate the adjournment of the monthly meeting, the doors were locked against them; men and women continued to collect in the street until we formed a considerable company. Friends were preserved, under their trying circumstances, in the quiet, and from much conversation; some aged and infirm females taking their seats on the steps of the houses opposite to the meeting-house, appeared to excite attention: after waiting a considerable time beyond the hour when Friends were to have sat down to business, as no entrance into the house was allowed, the gates continuing to be kept locked, we quietly moved on in a body to the Medical College in Duane-street, to hold the adjournment of the monthly meeting.

Seventh-day, (7th of 6th mo. 1828,) in a very feeble state of body, I left New York and rode to Rahway, where I was again kindly received by Robert Bowns and his family. I could gladly have yielded to more indulgence than has been common with me since I left my own comfortable home, but there was no way for me but to proceed on my journey.

First-day morning, I found it hard work to prepare for meeting, and had I given way, I should have concluded I could not sit meeting this day; but this I found would not bring peace to my own mind, nor would it be likely to secure for me a fresh supply of that help I should stand in need of, in order to my getting comfortably through the journey I had before me; I therefore resolved to do my best. Whilst I was on my feet in communication, one plain-looking man left the meeting-house, and I expected no other but his example would have been followed by others; but this was not the case: it proved a day of sore conflict to my mind, yet in that the unruly spirits were thus made subject, and were induced to remain in the meeting-house and hear what I had to offer to them in the line of the ministry, I was made thankful; as well as in believing my friends were not dissatisfied with this day's work thus far. Rode this night to our friend David Clark's, at Stoneybrook, a distance of nearly thirty miles. I felt greatly exhausted when we reached the end of our journey; but was comforted in my mind, I had not done as my inclination would have prompted me to have done, and passed by Rahway meeting.

Second-day, we reached my comfortable home at Philadelphia; here I received the welcome intelligence, that my kind friend James Emlen had given up to be my companion in the journey before me, which was not a little cheering to my tried

mind, under the present difficulties that exist in finding suitable companions who are able to leave home for any length of time.

Fourth-day I reached Evesham, and attended the select quarterly meeting of Haddonfield : I felt well satisfied in sitting down once more with the few Friends of this meeting, who remain attached to the ancient order of our religious Society.

Fifth-day, attended the quarterly meeting for the general concerns of the Society : Friends were obliged to meet men and women apart, with the shutters closed, to avoid the interruptions they had experienced from those who had no right to sit these meetings. In this quarterly meeting a desire appears to prevail that the discipline may be supported, and gospel order maintained in all their meetings : after the meeting closed I returned to Philadelphia, to prepare for my journey in prospect. On my way across the Delaware in the steam-boat, a large company of separatists were on board, who had been to attend their quarterly meeting at Haddonfield. Friends having refused to open the meeting-house to them, they had obtained forcible entrance : some of them in a loud tone of voice, evidently for me to hear, boasted what a comfortable quarterly meeting they had, which led me to query in my own mind, how could that be, under the circumstances in which they had gained admittance into the house to hold that quarterly meeting ; but silence appearing best for me, I observed it.

Sixth-day ; my bodily debility so increased, it was found necessary I should get into the country ; I went out accordingly to the house of my kind friend Israel Morris.

First-day, attended Merion meeting, which was held in a school-house, the meeting-house being occupied by the separatists : our company was not very small ; it proved a quiet, and I believe, a comfortable meeting.

Third-day, 17th of 6th mo., accompanied by my kind friend Israel Morris, I rode to Haverford, and attended their week-day meeting ; the separatists having the controul of the meeting-house, had changed the day of holding the week-day meeting, and locked the meeting-house against Friends on the usual day of meeting ; in consequence of which, I was informed by a Friend of the meeting, they met for about two months at the gates of the meeting-house yard, on the day for holding their mid-week meeting, and sitting in their carriages, [waggons, &c.] they held their meetings in that way. A private house being empty in the neighbourhood, Friends have since held all their meetings there. I felt well satisfied in sitting down with the little company I found here.

Fifth-day morning, I left my friend I. Morris's, much improved in my strength, and proceeded to Middle-town, to attend the preparative meeting. Friends here have separated as re-

spects meetings for discipline, but still meet with the Hicksites in meetings for worship: when the preparative meeting was opened, a young man, one of the separatists' party, remaining in the meeting, was requested to withdraw, before Friends proceeded with the business; but this he positively refused to do, and after a considerable exercise of patience on the part of Friends, the meeting was adjourned to a private house. Men and women united in considering the subject of a separation in meetings for worship: on going into the subject, a fear prevailed in some minds, lest Friends should become weary of suffering, and by this means get from under these trials before the right time; some acknowledging, that, trying as their situation in these meetings for worship had been, yet they would rather endure these sufferings longer, than that the meeting should take any premature steps for relief: it proved, I believe, a humbling time to most. A committee was proposed of men and women Friends, to take the subject under consideration, and report to the preparative meeting; and Friends separated under an evidence that the step they had taken thus far, was owned by Divine goodness; and they believed the time was not very distant, when way would clearly open for their release. Friends were not much longer tried by being obliged to meet with this unchristian-like company; for shortly after the subject of a separation had been considered by Friends, the separatists themselves prepared the way for Friends' release. At one of their week-day meetings, before the meeting had sat its usual time, the disaffected part of the meeting rose up in a body, and left the house with a view of breaking up the meeting, but Friends quietly kept their seats; and when they broke up the meeting, an elder reported, that a visit had been made him by one of the separatists on behalf of the whole, telling him they should no longer submit to his breaking up the meeting.

First-day morning, attended meeting at New Town: the opposing spirit was so chained down, although what I had to offer amongst them was such, that I looked for no other than many would leave the meeting, yet all kept their seats; after meeting, two women Friends, who had been drawn away by the separatists, came to a member of the meeting, melted into tears, saying, "We could acknowledge to the whole truth of what the aged Friend had to offer in the meeting, and wish our love to be remembered to the dear old man." I mention not these things as taking any thing to myself, but from a sense of Divine mercy, in these times of treading down, in permitting these little earnest to be in this way dispensed of that better inheritance, if a holding out unto the end in the way of well doing and the daily cross, is but in faith and faithfulness experienced.

Fifth-day, attended Middle-town week-day meeting, and the day following Chichester meeting, which was small, but still and comfortable.



First-day, attended Stanton meeting, which consisted very much of young people; it was pleasant to observe the quiet and order that prevailed; although it was evidently to be felt, that the life of religion was at a very low ebb in this meeting. I felt satisfied I had yielded to come and sit down with this company: I was told it was the most quiet meeting that had been known at Stanton for a long time, there being some very bitter spirits amongst them. We returned to Wilmington in the evening.

Second-day, Friends held their monthly meeting here; several of the quarterly meeting's committee gave their attendance: Friends believing it would be to advantage to meet separately, in a meeting for worship capacity, from those who had seceded, a committee was appointed to do the needful in effecting it. I rejoiced that this step was about to be taken, not doubting but that it would prove one means of their being better qualified to deal with their delinquent members, some of whose cases they had now taken up. After meeting I rode to Concord, and was kindly received by Nathan Sharpless.

Third-day, 1st of 7th mo. attended monthly meeting here; the business of the meeting chiefly consisted in attending to cases of delinquency, on account of the separation which had taken place in the meeting.

Fourth-day, attended the monthly meeting for West Chester. The meeting was occupied in the consideration of a separation in meetings for worship; a committee was appointed to consider the subject, and, if way opened for it, to propose measures for their relief. The cases of their delinquent members also occupied much time. Friends appeared to move along in much harmony. Fifth-day, returned to Philadelphia.

## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

SEVENTH-DAY, (5th of 7th mo. 1828,) my kind friend James Emlen and myself took our departure, for our intended visit to Ohio. First-day, attended Plymouth meeting, held at the house of Hannah Williams. Here we met with from sixty to seventy Friends, many young people, whose countenances I thought denoted they were under the preparing Hand for usefulness in the Society.

On our way towards Sadsbury, we understood Elias Hicks was before us, and had been holding a large meeting in an orchard. Falling in company with a serious Episcopalian, who had been at the meeting, I queried with him, was he satisfied with the doctrine he had heard? to which he replied, "His doctrine will not do for me; he cries down all laws, both moral and Divine; if people receive his doctrines, I should not be safe out of my house in the evening, nor in my bed at night." Having some pamphlets, and the declaration printed by the meeting for sufferings in Philadelphia, in which the doctrines of Friends are contrasted with those of E. Hicks, by extracts taken from his printed sermons, I gave him some for distribution, to wipe away any reproach that might attach to the Society, in consequence of any sentiments advanced, which he appeared gladly to accept.

Third-day, attended monthly meeting at Lampeter; it being harvest-time, I was told the meeting was thinly attended. My mind had been early in the meeting brought under exercise for service, but my faith was at such a very low ebb, it was not until the meeting had sat a very long time, that I had strength to stand up and endeavour to cast off that which I believed I was commissioned with. The meeting for discipline was to me a very trying one; fear and dismay evidently prevailed in the minds of the few well-concerned Friends who were left in the meeting, to the hinderance of their coming forward in the right exercise of the discipline: most of the overseers being gone with the separatists, I requested the meeting to be willing to turn its attention to the subject of overseers, and try to settle down into quiet; and then I believed truth would point out the necessity of a few Friends being nominated to bring into the meeting the names of the

most suitable Friends amongst them, to fill up the vacancy in the number of overseers in both meetings. Although there was a disposition manifested in some to put off taking this step a little longer, yet the meeting went into a nomination which it appeared was a relief to some minds. It was known to Friends of this meeting, that E. Hicks was at Columbia meeting-house, where those who had separated from Friends in this meeting were holding their monthly meeting, and that E. Hicks intended having a meeting in Friends' meeting-house here. This circumstance appeared to bring some of the members of this meeting under difficulty how they should proceed in the case; as it appeared all the trustees of this meeting-house were with Friends, I thought it was right for me to encourage them to be faithful and do their duty, by warning the door-keeper against opening the house on his or his party's request, whereby, should the door-keeper be prevailed upon to open the house for E. Hicks, Friends would be clear. After meeting we rode to Lancaster, and took up our abode for the night at the house of one of the judges of the supreme court, by whom we were kindly cared for.

We proceeded by Abbot's Town to Chambersburgh. When opportunity was afforded in passing through the different towns and villages, I endeavoured to obtain an interview with the preachers and serious members of the different denominations of professing Christians, with whom I left a number of the Declaration and other pamphlets printed by the meeting for sufferings in Philadelphia: it appeared as I went along, that the principles of E. Hicks were known, and great opposition to them was manifested. As it was understood he was to take this same route, I felt it required of me to inform people thereof, that they might not be taken by surprise should a request be made by his party for the use of any of their meeting-houses in the name of Friends.

At two places where we stopped, I met with some serious individuals, with whom I left some of the Declaration and pamphlets; they appeared to receive them gladly, saying they had heard of E. Hicks, and the dangerous doctrines he was endeavouring to propagate. We had hoped to reach Redstone on First-day, but this was not practicable. On inquiry, we found there was a settlement of Friends near Bedford, a distance we could comfortably reach by Seventh-day night; but on further information, it appeared that this meeting was a part of Baltimore Yearly Meeting, which involved me in some serious considerations, not knowing but it might be a part of the separatists' Yearly Meeting of Baltimore; and yet how to dispose of ourselves on First-day I could not see: I therefore found it best for the present to leave this subject, hoping some way would more clearly open for us when we reached Bedford. Our journey to-day was over a very mountainous country; the day was clear and the scenery fine; but, to me, travelling on a road unprotected on

either side above the vast precipices we had to travel near the edge of for many miles, deprived me of that enjoyment which I might have experienced.

Seventh-day, we reached Bedford in the evening. On our entering the town, my mind was again turned to the subject of how we should be disposed of to-morrow. On a sudden I espied a Friend standing at the tavern-door we were making towards, and to my agreeable surprise it proved to be our kind friend Israel Morris, of Philadelphia, here on business, who we found had been making some inquiry of the tavern-keeper, relative to the state of Dunning's Creek meeting, near this place; by which it appeared that the doctrines of E. Hicks had not made much if any way amongst the members of that meeting, so as openly to manifest they were carried away with them.

First-day, a very heavy storm of rain, thunder and lightning came on early this morning; this presented a very discouraging prospect to my mind, when looking towards attending Dunning's Creek meeting, for the distance, we were told, was ten miles, and a cross-country road; I had already experienced the difficulty of travelling these cross-country roads,—the weather also looked very uncertain; but I found I must not look at these discouragements, but be willing to do our best to reach the meeting in due time. We accordingly proceeded, accompanied by our kind friend I. Morris, allowing ourselves nearly three hours for our journey, but which we found to be time little enough for the undertaking, as the distance exceeded what had been stated to us, and the roads were so stony and dangerous, that my companion expected twice we could not escape being turned over. When we reached the meeting-house, Friends were pretty generally gathered. Our thus unseasonably coming into the meeting calling for some apology, for example's sake, I informed the meeting how we had been put to difficulties to get along as we did. When the meeting closed, it appeared our visit was cordially received by most. I distributed amongst them some of the Declaration and other pamphlets, printed by the meeting for sufferings of Philadelphia, which appeared to be well received. Our kind friend Thomas Bower, with others, inviting us to take our dinner with them, we accepted his invitation: he proposed, as we had concluded to get on our way this afternoon, to pilot us into the high-road again. His services we found of great advantage to us, the way to the high-road being very intricate, and at times bad to travel upon; and after a day of both exercise of mind and great bodily fatigue, we were favoured to reach a comfortable tavern, about twelve miles from Bedford, on our way to Ohio.

The next day, we proceeded on our journey, and ascended the Alleghany Mountains. Fourth-day, after having waters to ford, and roads to travel so washed by the rains as to make it at times



dangerous, we were favoured to reach Brown's Ville, the first settlement of Friends we met since we left Dunning's Creek; we took up our abode with my kind countryman David Binns.

Fifth-day morning, we crossed the river, and rode to West Land, where we attended meeting. The demeanour of many of those assembled more comported with the conduct of spectators met to hear a lecture, than people professedly met together with hearts devoted and turned inward to the Lord: I durst do no other than endeavour to lay before them the offensive manner in which they were thus placing themselves before the Almighty. As far as outward observation went, it did not appear that what was thus offered was wholly rejected. After the meeting for worship closed, the preparative meeting was held; the queries and the answers brought in by the overseers were read, but very little time was allowed for the consideration of them. The clerk who managed the business of the meeting, conducted it in a very off-hand way, manifesting a disposition opposed to any interference: the few solid members of this meeting claimed the sympathy of their friends, as a great part of the meeting were prepared to unite with the separatists when an opportunity offered for it. Our minds were again brought under difficulty to know where to shelter ourselves, and escape the habitations of those whom the leprosy of unsound principles had taken hold of: a member of the meeting inviting us to his house, we accepted his invitation, and were made truly thankful to feel ourselves safely cared for.

First-day, we attended meeting at Pike-run: the meeting-house having been burnt down, and such being the divided state of this meeting in consequence of unsound principles, a new meeting-house had not been erected; the meeting was held in a cooper's shop. I found it hard work faithfully to acquit myself in this meeting; but, as far as I was favoured so to do, I had reason to hope the minds of sound Friends were much relieved. After I had taken my seat, I was constrained to rise again, and press upon Friends the necessity of being careful to make a right use of our time on the First-day of the week; to endeavour as much as possible to close our worldly concerns on the seventh day of the week, that nothing but acts of necessity might occupy our attention on the First-day, and that we might not by any thing be rendered unfit for the duties of religious worship; and I exhorted Friends to restrain their children from wandering about on First-day afternoon. After meeting, I was informed there was a member of Society present, who had been holding meetings round about the neighbourhood, for the very purpose of disseminating E. Hicks's doctrines on this head, protesting against the superstitious conduct of religious professors, in setting apart the First-day of the week for religious purposes. Such was the low state of things in this meeting, it appeared, on inquiry, no notice had

been taken of the conduct of this individual. In the afternoon we made a visit to a young couple; the father of one of them is a decided Hicksite. I had no more in view when I entered their house, than a social visit; but feeling my mind brought under religious exercise, whilst others were engaged in conversation, I waited for a suitable opportunity to claim their attention. I found I was not alone in believing a door was opened in the minds of the young people to receive the word of exhortation and encouragement given me for them. We returned to Westland, and took up our abode at our kind friend, George Smith's.

Fifth-day, it was understood that notice had been very widely circulated, that E. Hicks was to be at this monthly meeting, the neighbourhood having for many years been noted as a place where Deism greatly predominated. On coming in sight of the meeting-house, although the meeting-time had not as yet quite arrived, the crowd assembled on the outside of the house awaiting his coming, was very great; when he entered the meeting-house, the crowd of members of our Society, and others that followed him in, filled every vacant seat. He very soon stood up to speak; in the course of what he delivered, he denied the miraculous conception of Christ, saying, he did not become the Son of God until the time when he was baptized of John; he protested also against the proper observance of the First-day of the week, encouraging the assembly to be satisfied with attending their place of worship on a First-day morning, and that then it would be lawful for them to devote the remainder of the day to labour and other worldly concerns; also protesting against the laws of the United States of America, for compelling its inhabitants to observe one day in seven, as a day of rest from the concerns of this world. Feeling myself called upon to clear our religious Society from holding such anti-christian principles as had been thus asserted by E. Hicks, I stood up, and as ability was afforded, endeavoured to remove from the minds of those serious individuals who might be present, any unfavourable impressions that had been made respecting the Society of Friends, in consequence of the doctrines which E. H. had been holding forth on the subject of the miraculous conception, the divinity of Christ, and the proper observance of the First-day; informing the assembly that the doctrines which had been now advanced were not the doctrines of the Society of Friends, but altogether at variance with the principles which they hold on these important subjects; inasmuch as no society of professing Christians were more tenacious in the support of a firm belief in the miraculous conception, the divinity of Christ, and a proper attention to the First-day of the week than the sound members of our religious Society; and that I conceived it to be a great blessing to mankind that one day in seven was thus set apart for religious purposes; that if the United

States were to repeal this law, requiring the observance of one day in seven for religious purposes, it would be a great injury to the people at large; that the sound members of our religious Society considered it a duty incumbent on them to avoid all unnecessary attention to worldly concerns on the First-day of the week, endeavouring after a proper observance of the day by attending our religious meetings, and devoting the remainder of the day to retirement, reading, and conversation suitable to the occasion of the day. On which E. Hicks again stood up, and declared Robert Barclay was one in sentiment with him, and that our Friends in the beginning of our religious Society, after they had attended their meetings, devoted the remainder of the First-day to labour, and some of them suffered imprisonment for their so doing. After E. Hicks sat down, I felt it safest for me to add, if any of our Friends thus suffered, it was for doing acts of necessity, which the laws of God allow, and not that they followed their callings as on another day of the week. To this he made no further reply, having nothing to support him in these his assertions, but a solitary instance in Sewel's History, of a Friend, who was a shoemaker by trade, and had promised a pair of shoes to his customer by First-day, and could not perform his promise without setting to work at them until past twelve o'clock on Seventh-day night, who by an ill-disposed neighbour was informed against for his so doing, and imprisoned. I recommended the audience to apply to the sound members of our religious Society for the Declaration printed by the meeting for sufferings in Philadelphia, where they would find the doctrines of the Society set forth, and contrasted with those held by E. Hicks: and here the meeting closed.

First-day, we proceeded to Redstone: a report had been sent abroad, that Elias Hicks was to be at this meeting to-day; and before we reached the meeting-house, the crowd standing outside of it made me sad, having no desire to sit another meeting with E. H. unless an improvement should, in adorable mercy, take place in his religious principles. When he entered the meeting-house, this train of people came in after him, until the house was filled, and many were obliged to remain on the outside. Believing I was called upon early in the meeting to say a few words, I stood up with nearly these expressions, "The law came by Moses, but the comers to it were not made perfect; yet it proved to such as received it aright, the bringing in of a better hope, by leading them to that grace and truth that came by Jesus Christ." After which E. Hicks arose, and it was evident, I believe, to Friends as well as myself, his power of expression did not rise to that height of opposition as to overturn these truths of the gospel I believed I was called upon to declare.

Third-day, attended the select meeting of elders; there being no minister belonging to this preparative meeting, it was sorrow-

ful to observe the countenance given to E. Hicks in this meeting by nearly all its members.

Fourth-day, the monthly meeting was held. A Friend from Ohio Yearly Meeting stood up in the meeting for worship, and proved, by a variety of scripture passages, the necessity of our experiencing salvation through Jesus Christ our Lord, who was crucified without the gates of Jerusalem. After which E. Hicks stood up, and endeavoured, by twisting and turning texts of scripture every way his inventive brain was capable of, to lay waste what had been thus offered. I found I durst not do otherwise than declare against the unsound principles which he had been advancing, and which he charged the Society with holding from the beginning; I likewise felt myself called upon to expose his presuming to impose himself upon the public, as he was doing, as a minister in unity in our religious Society; adding, that so far from the sound members of our religious Society having unity with his doctrines and him as a minister, they had in the different Yearly Meetings publicly protested against him as a minister, and the doctrines he professes to hold. I recommended the audience not to depend wholly on my report, but to apply to the sound members in the neighbourhood for a pamphlet, entitled "A Declaration," &c. printed by the meeting for sufferings in Philadelphia, in which they would find the doctrines of the Society contrasted with those of E. Hicks, and then to judge for themselves. Here this matter ended: the meeting for discipline commenced; E. H. produced his minutes from the monthly and quarterly meetings, informing the meeting he was a member of the oldest monthly meeting on the continent of America, established by George Fox, and which had continued a monthly meeting of Friends to this present time. Observing a disposition in most of the members of the meeting to have these minutes read in the meeting, I proposed to the meeting to consider how far with propriety they could read them; after their meeting for sufferings had given forth a testimony against the doctrines of E. H.; I informed the monthly meeting, the minutes he had produced to the meeting were not regular, not being signed by the clerk of the women's quarterly meeting, as the discipline of New York Yearly Meeting requires, the clerk of the women's quarterly meeting being sound with Friends, which was not the case with the clerks of either the men's-monthly or quarterly meeting. But a determination to read his minutes being manifested, Friends were obliged to submit: after meeting we rode to Providence.

Fifth-day, attended monthly meeting here; this meeting is small. We were comforted, in sitting with this little company, in observing by a minute on their book the care they manifested to prevent this evil seed, which had been spreading in the Society, from getting into their borders; and that they had by minute displaced



one of their overseers on account of his having attached himself to the Hicksite party : in the afternoon we rode to Redstone, and next day to Westland.

Seventh day, the quarterly meeting for the more general concerns of the Society commenced : notice had been circulated, we were informed, many miles round the country, that E. H. was to be at this quarterly meeting. At an early hour the house was crowded ; E. H. took up most of the time of the meeting, endeavouring to overturn various Scripture testimonies which are given in confirmation of the divinity of Christ, and that sure foundation on which the holy men of old built their hopes of an eternal rest. I durst not do otherwise, before the meeting separated, than expose E. H. as an impostor, in attempting, as he did, to impose himself upon the public as a minister in unity with the Society of Friends : the Society having by a printed document declared against his doctrines and him as an approved minister. The meeting then proceeded to business ; our certificates were produced, E. H. and his companion produced theirs also ; after they had been read, a proposal was made, that these certificates should be entered on minute ; I informed the meeting if I might have a choice, I would rather the minuting of my certificate was omitted, if the certificate of E. Hicks was to be minuted also, as I considered the meeting, under the circumstances in which he stood, could not, with any propriety, minute his certificates. Much time was spent on this subject. E. H.'s party striving hard to have his certificate minuted on the quarterly meeting books ; but not effecting their purpose, this disappointment appeared to rouse E. Hicks and his attendant, who laid a complaint against me and my companion before the quarterly meeting ; in which his party united, and called out to the elders and overseers to take charge of us, urging our being dealt with for having broken the discipline. I informed the meeting I was willing to meet the elders and overseers generally, but not a committee of them, having seen for myself how much this part of the meeting were partizans with E. H., as some of the elders had been furnishing him with barns, fitting them up for holding his meetings in, and giving notice of the same ; I further added, they must produce their books of discipline : it was proposed, that we should meet at the close of the meeting to-morrow.

First-day, 3d of 8th mo., attended Westland meeting, which was crowded to an extreme. E. Hicks stood up, made a very lengthy communication, saying, the second coming of Christ, that had been spoken of, was that same power that delivered the children of Israel formerly, and not that same Jesus who suffered without the gates of Jerusalem ; endeavouring also, as far as words could go, to lessen the value of the sacred writings, and, in a fawning way, took his leave of the congregation. I had made

up my mind before I came to meeting, if any thing E. Hicks should offer called forth from me the necessity of any reply, rather to be willing to suffer by keeping silence than have to contend ; but I durst not keep my resolution, and suffer the attempts he had made, to invalidate the truths of the gospel, to pass unnoticed : on my standing up, E. H.'s party rushed out of the house in a body, many of those, not in profession with Friends, following their example ; on which I requested the meeting to keep quiet, and those who were on their feet took their seats quietly again until it closed. After meeting we met the elders and overseers ; I told them, if the cause of our coming together was traced to its foundation, it would be found it was the elders and overseers that had broken the discipline, by countenancing and encouraging E. Hicks's giving notice of his meeting, and providing places for him to hold meetings in, in violation of the judgment of the meeting for sufferings of their Yearly Meeting, which meeting had testified against his doctrines. I requested their rules of discipline to be read, by which they intended to criminate us ; which being done, Friends told the Hicksite party these rules did not apply to us, for we had not opposed E. Hicks whilst speaking. After they had striven hard to criminate us, and found they could not effect their purpose, they left us and Friends in the meeting-house, and withdrew disappointed, as some of their countenances manifested : thus Truth triumphed to the rejoicing of the few sound members of this quarterly meeting. This evening we reached Washington. As I felt it laid upon me to caution the inhabitants of this place against E. Hicks's imposing himself upon them as a minister in unity with Friends, and as it was expected he was coming here in his way to Mount Pleasant in Ohio, I went for this purpose to the residence of the head of the college, who is a preacher amongst the society of Methodists, and who was as I found acquainted with the unsoundness of E. Hicks's doctrine : I presented him with some of the Declarations of the meeting for sufferings in Philadelphia, and extracts on the divinity of Christ, which appeared to be gladly received. The retrospect of this day's work was cause of humble thankfulness.

Second-day morning, we proceeded on our journey ; crossed the Ohio river. On my landing on the other side, the woman at the ferry told me, she supposed I was E. Hicks, who she said it was reported was on his way to Ohio ; I found she had some knowledge of his principles by her manner of protesting against them ; she kept a tavern, and I left with her one of the Declarations, requesting her to circulate it amongst her neighbours. It appeared that all professing with Friends in this valley had lately gone off with the separatists, except the Friend and his wife with whom I lodged ; two zealous preachers of the Hicksites, who

once stood well with Friends as approved ministers, had been in this neighbourhood industriously sowing the seeds of disaffection.

Third-day, we rode to Middletown, and were kindly cared for by Samuel Boulton ; attended their select meeting. Here we met with a little company of simple honest-hearted Friends, the disaffection not having obtained any footing in this department of the monthly meeting ; we were much comforted in sitting with them, although we found they were in trouble, but not wholly cast down, —perplexed, but not dismayed. The said two zealous advocates for the principles of E. Hicks, had proposed to the disaffected members of the monthly meeting holding a meeting of conference with them ; these meetings of conference are for the purpose of laying down their plans to annoy Friends in their meetings for discipline, by encouraging persons who have lost their membership, or are under dealing by the monthly meeting, to remain in the meeting-house when the business is entered upon, in order that they may worry Friends out of their meeting-houses.

Fifth-day, attended the monthly meeting : when the meeting for discipline was opened, it being known to Friends that there were in the meeting divers individuals who had no claim to sit in the monthly meeting, they were repeatedly requested to withdraw ; which they refused to do ; one of their party informed the meeting of their intention to hold a new monthly meeting in the woods, if Friends would not allow them the use of the meeting-house, and to call it Middle Town monthly meeting : another of their party proposed to Friends an amicable settlement about the property of the monthly meeting, that they should have an equal interest in the meeting-house with Friends, and that Friends should hold their monthly meeting on one day of the week, and they would hold theirs on a different day. Friends having the controul of the meeting-house, the door-keeper being with them, the separatists could have no power over it, (except, as has been the case in other places,) they broke the meeting-house open, and took off the locks, and put on new ones of their own. The disaffected part of the meeting, and such as had no claim to sit in the meeting, continuing to manifest a determination not to leave the house ; and as the quarterly meeting was so near as not to allow of a convenient adjournment to answer the queries and appoint representatives, rather than resort to violent measures to clear the house of such as had no claim to sit the monthly meeting, it was concluded to go on with such of the business as concerned the quarterly meeting, and other business requiring to be early attended to. I felt it required of me to stand up and say, a snare had been laid for Friends, and if they did not take care they would be caught in it : a proposal had been made for a compromise, but no com-

promise must be entered into by Friends of that meeting with those who chose to separate from them, nor must they allow them to hold a separate monthly meeting in their meeting-house ; and as to what had been said about Friends driving them into the woods to hold their monthly meetings, and thereby exposing their delicate women to danger of suffering in their health, that was an artifice. Various cases of delinquency for separation were brought forward, and testimonies of denial issued : Friends being determined to go on with their business, and the separatists finding that if they persisted remaining in the house till Friends had finished, there was no prospect of their having daylight to hold their new monthly meeting, rose up in a body and left the house. Going into a wood that was near, they raised their voices to such a high pitch, in preaching, praying, and transacting their matters, that they were distinctly heard by us ; but Friends, endeavouring to keep in the quiet, were enabled to go on with their business ; and this day of storm closed with feelings of gratitude to the Almighty, who had thus in mercy made a way for Friends, where no way appeared at all likely, for them to get through the concerns of the monthly meeting to satisfaction.

Some Friends at West-land, who made a part of the conference of elders and overseers, being aware that we had a prospect of being at this quarterly meeting, and that E. Hicks and his companions also intended to be there, in order to refute any misrepresentation that might get abroad relative to that conference, forwarded to a Friend of this quarterly meeting the following statement, of which he furnished us with a copy :—

“ Feeling much sympathy for our dear friend T. Shillitoe, and his companion James Emblen, who, we are informed, are going on to your quarterly meeting, we thought it our duty to say, that their company and gospel labours have been acceptable and satisfactory to us. Elias Hicks has also appointed and attended a number of meetings within the compass of our quarterly meeting, which has produced great disorder and confusion, T. S. and J. E., feeling it their duty to attend several of our meetings where he was, and not only to detect his doctrine, but to give such information to the audience, as had a tendency to mar his prospects to such a degree, that he and his partisans were much exasperated against them ; and yesterday, in our quarterly meeting for discipline, when the minuting of E. Hicks’s certificate was rejected by a number of Friends, on the ground that it had not the signature of the clerk of the women’s meeting of his own quarterly meeting, (which their discipline required,) and further, that his ministry had been disapproved by his own Yearly Meeting, Elias, in reply to something Thomas had said, rose and informed



the meeting, that what that Friend said was false. E. Hicks, his companion, and their followers carried their point so far, in accusing our said Friends with a breach of discipline, for opposing a minister in his preaching. (though they did not oppose him whilst on his feet,) that they entered a complaint in the course of the meeting against them, to the elders and overseers. Our said Friends cheerfully consented to meet them, if the elders and overseers were all present, with a book of discipline. No doubt but their intention was to prevent them from having any further opportunity of exposing their leader. Most of the elders and overseers convened this afternoon, had a hearing in the presence of Thomas and James, (Elias not present,) and with all the ingenuity of such as favoured the separatists, they failed in their attempt. We therefore hope that no misrepresentation of the case whatsoever may have place with you, believing you are aware that many stratagems are made use of, in the disturbed state of our Society, to carry points. After consulting together, we felt best satisfied to give you the foregoing brief information, craving your sympathy, protection, and brotherly regard for them, believing them to be vessels for the Master's use."

[Signed by five Friends.]

Information being received by some Friends of this quarterly meeting, that Elias Hicks was in the neighbourhood, intending to be at the quarterly meeting, this being the day when the select quarterly meeting was to be held, Friends consulted together, and concluded it would be best to keep the doors of the meeting-house locked until the time for the meeting's gathering was fully come, and then for Friends to proceed in company with the Friend who had the key. On our reaching the meeting-house, Elias Hicks and his companion were waiting for admittance, two Friends of the meeting informed them they could not be allowed to sit that meeting: as Friends persisted in this determination, after some time they left the meeting-house, and one of their party in Salem furnishing them with a school-house, there they held their select quarterly meeting. In the afternoon we attended part of a committee of the meeting for sufferings, appointed to assist the quarterly meetings, as it was known, in addition to the separatists of this quarterly meeting, others of the like description were come from a distance, to aid them in their designs of sitting the quarterly meeting. This afforded Friends an opportunity of conferring together, relative to what was best to be done to preserve quiet in the quarterly meeting. It was concluded safest at this time to meet with shutters closed, and not, as heretofore, have a public meeting, there being door-keepers ap-

pointed by the different monthly meetings to preserve the meeting select. The subject of the meeting on First-day also claimed attention; it having been notified that E. Hicks was to be at that meeting, a great crowd of people was expected. It was concluded it would be advisable that a few Friends should wait upon E. Hicks, and inform him it was the determination of Friends, if he came to the meeting on First-day morning, and attempted to stand up and preach, to expose him to the audience, by informing them what was the situation he stood in amongst Friends. This visit to him had the desired effect, so far as it respected Friends being permitted to hold all their meetings in quiet. His party, finding there was no place for them in Friends' meeting-house, made additions to the school-house, where their First-day and quarterly meeting, and one or more public meetings were held.

Seventh-day, the quarterly meeting assembled, which was largely attended by Friends, and acknowledged to have been the most quiet and comfortable quarterly meeting that had been known for many years.

First-day morning, we attended Springfield meeting, about five miles from Salem, in which I believe the Friends of the meeting considered I had good service.

Second-day morning, we rode to New Garden; the separatists having possession of the meeting-house, and books and papers of the quarterly meeting, Friends expected to be shut out of the meeting-house. The time for holding the select quarterly meeting being come, we proceeded to the meeting-house, and finding the doors open, Friends took their seats. After the meeting for business was opened, Friends were informed there were four individuals present who had been members of the select meeting, some of whom now stood disowned by the monthly meeting, of which they had been members, and others of them were also under dealing; they were therefore requested to leave the meeting; but this not having the desired effect, a minute was made to adjourn into the women's apartment, when one of the intruders informed Friends they would not be admitted into that part of the house. Two Friends being requested to try the different doors into the women's house, they reported the doors were all made fast: Friends then adjourned to an old meeting-house near, which had been long out of use, a mere shell; in case of need, some Friends had provided a few rough forms for their accommodation. The business of the select quarterly meeting was quietly gone through: when the meeting closed, Friends' minds were not a little agitated about the quarterly meeting on the morrow, although it was not known to Friends that E. Hicks had arrived, yet notice had been given a month before, that he was to be at this quarterly meeting, and it had also been given out at their meeting

at Salem. From various reports in circulation, it appeared E. Hicks's visit to the different meetings belonging to this Yearly Meeting, is not favourable to him and his followers, having a tendency to confirm the minds of the serious part of professing Christians of different religious denominations, that the charge of his holding deistical doctrines is correct.

Fourth-day morning, one hour before the time for the meeting's gathering, the company of separatists, and those who did not profess with Friends, proceeded to the meeting-house in carriages and on horses, in great numbers; this plan being laid, it was reported, at their last meeting of conference, in order that they might occupy the gallery and other parts of the house, and keep Friends from having their proper seats therein, and that their clerk might take possession of the table. Although it was known that they had this in view by coming to the meeting-house thus early, yet Friends deemed it best for them not to act thus disorderly, but keep as near to the right time as would be consistent with good order. About ten minutes before eleven (that being the hour for Friends to meet,) we left our quarters, which were very near the meeting-house, in company with other Friends. On our arrival at the meeting-house, we found every seat was filled, many standing in the alleys, and on the outside of the house. I pressed through the crowd to the ministers' gallery, (my companion following me,) which appeared to be closely packed from end to end by E. Hicks and his party, some of whom scarcely made the appearance of persons professing to be of our religious Society; two persons who were in the gallery observing us, left their seats for our accommodation, which we accepted of. It did not appear to me like being in a meeting-house of Friends, for some were standing upon the seats, with countenances manifesting more of a disposition to disturb the meeting, than promote the quiet of it. E. Hicks, soon after we entered, stood up, and asserted, that mankind did not suffer any loss through the disobedience of our first parents,—that the idea of a mediator between man and his Creator was gross in its nature, and a belief herein must be offensive to Almighty God, recommending the people to the light, (that principle he said which George Fox and our first Friends recommended to the people,) but not to that Jesus Christ who appeared personally amongst men for salvation,—declaring this to be an impossibility. I found, if I were faithful to the pointings of duty I was favoured with, I must stand up and inform the audience that this Divine principle in man, which G. Fox and our first Friends recommended the people unto, E. Hicks had denied, it being nothing short of Christ in his second coming into the soul of man without sin unto salvation; this was that light they spoke of, and as such, E. Hicks could not be warranted in imposing himself as he was doing upon the people, as one in profession with Friends, he

having himself departed from the faith which they hold in the divinity of Christ: I then informed the assembly that seven out of eight of the Yearly Meetings on this continent, and the Yearly Meeting of Great Britain had testified against the doctrines which he preaches, and do not own him as a gospel minister; the Yearly Meeting also, to which he formerly belonged, having circulated a printed epistle containing a paragraph to the same effect: therefore the Society of Friends do not hold themselves accountable for any unsound doctrines he may attempt to propagate, and his proceeding as he now is doing, is contrary to the judgment of the sound members of the body;—with more than I am able to remember. I expected no other but to be pulled down; but the evil disposition was chained by Him who has all power. Soon after I had taken my seat, some of the separatists ordered the shutters to be closed between the men and women, which was done. Two stout men had taken their seats at the clerk's table, and others had placed themselves in the forms near them; the clerk demanded his usual seat at the table, which was refused him, the separatists saying, the clerks of the meeting were seated at the clerks' table, and they ordered them to open the meeting. The overseers, in the name of the meeting, then demanded the clerks' table, ordering the individuals seated there to quit, and give the clerks their seats, that Friends might go on with their business; but this they continued to refuse to do,—the separatists ordering their clerks to keep their seats and go on with the business of their meeting.

The request of the overseers being treated with contempt, it was then proposed that the representatives would nominate three of their number to demand, on behalf of the meeting, of those who were seated at the clerks' table, to leave their seats, and suffer the clerks to go on with their business, which was as peremptorily refused. One of the individuals at the table called upon those who were travelling with certificates to present them, on which E. Hicks's certificates, and his companion's minutes were quickly handed to the table, and one of the individuals at the table stood up, beginning to read them. Friends being satisfied it would not do to go on with their business amidst such confusion, and such a mixed multitude, the clerk made an opening minute upon his knee, calling over the names of the representatives, from which it appeared very few of them were able to get into the meeting-house; after which Friends adjourned to a school-house: the women being placed in a similar situation with the men, adjourned to the old meeting-house. Before Friends left the meeting-house, one of the separatists informed Friends they were disposed to agree to an amicable division of the property; to which Friends made no reply. The school-house was too small for our number assembled in it, yet we were favoured soon to settle down in the quiet; the business that came before



the meeting was conducted in much harmony, and many testimonies were borne to the loving kindness of the Lord, who had that day delivered the members of this quarterly meeting from the confusion and distress to which they had of late been exposed in their meetings for discipline.

Sixth-day, (15th of 8th mo.) proceeded to Mount Pleasant; the road was so deep in mud and holes, that it was necessary at times to support our carriage to prevent its turning over. We attended the select quarterly meeting, held at Mount Pleasant; several weighty matters came before it, and great unanimity prevailed.

Seventh-day, attended the quarterly meeting for the general concerns of the Society: numbers of the separatists from other quarterly meetings assembled, before the doors of the meeting-house were opened. The meeting for worship was quiet; after which the meeting for Society concerns was opened, when request was made that such as had been disowned or were under dealing by their monthly meetings, should withdraw; it being known to Friends there were such individuals present: the request was repeated again and again. As persuasion had no effect, the clerk was requested to take down the names of those who had no claim to sit in the quarterly meeting: at first they professed not to regard these steps the meeting was taking, yet after some further contention on the part of the separatists, one of their leading men proposed to withdraw, another followed him, but the clerk continuing to take down their names, they generally left the meeting. After a time of quiet, Friends went on comfortably with their business, and separated under feelings of reverent acknowledgment, that hitherto it was the Lord, who, in the riches of his mercy, had thus helped them out of their great difficulties.

First-day, attended meeting at Mount Pleasant; it was considered large, many of the town's people giving their company, and it proved a quiet meeting.

Second-day, we rode to Smithfield to attend the monthly meeting there; the meeting for worship being over, the clerk opened the monthly meeting: many being present who had no claim to sit in this meeting, they were requested to withdraw, which request was repeated again and again, but without the desired effect. Some of the separatists, far advanced in age, stood up and encouraged this disorderly proceeding, claiming their right to sit in these meetings,—until a proposal was made to take down the names of such; the clerk proceeding to do so, they withdrew, except two of my own countrymen, who stood it out to the last; after which Friends were favoured to proceed quietly with their business.

Third-day morning, we rode to Short-creek, and attended the monthly meeting there; the meeting for worship was large, and I

believe to many it proved a season of renewal of strength ; the business of the monthly meeting was conducted with much unanimity, a religious concern being manifested in the active members of the meeting for the welfare of the cause of truth and righteousness : many testimonies of denial were issued and many ordered to be brought to the next monthly meeting, against individuals who had united with E. Hicks's party in setting up new monthly meetings.

Sixth-day, we attended Flushing monthly meeting, which was held in quiet, and the business which came before it was conducted with more dispatch than is often the case in these back-settlements of Friends. After meeting we rode to Barnsville, a journey of sixteen miles, chiefly through woods and some newly-opened roads ; we did not reach our quarters until after sun-set.

Seventh-day, attended Still Water monthly meeting : the meeting for worship was a very exercising time ; necessity, I believed, was laid upon me to warn Friends against the danger of being implicated with two of the Hicksite preachers, who had recently been very active in endeavouring to bring about a separation in this quarterly meeting ; I felt myself constrained, if I did my duty, to describe them to be great apostates from the faith they once preached. Those who had not a claim to sit in the monthly meeting, quietly withdrew, which I afterwards understood was very unexpected to Friends : from the large portion of business that came before the monthly meeting, we did not separate till late. It has been pleasant to observe in this and the other monthly meetings, where cases of delinquency have been brought forward, a disposition of great tenderness manifested towards those who were the subjects of them.

First-day, attended Still-water meeting, which was large ; it was considered by Friends the most solemn, comfortable meeting that had been known there for a long time.

Second-day, 25th of 8th mo. 1828, we rode to Somerset to attend monthly meeting there. The meeting for worship was large ; I had to proclaim amongst the members the language of, "Come away from them, and be ye separate," as a renewed call of the Most High in mercy to some present ; also to hold out the language of encouragement, if an unreserved willingness were manifested to obey the call, that help would be vouchsafed, which would be found all-sufficient ; but if there were a continuing to unite with those who had so sorrowfully departed from the right way of the Lord, great suffering in a future day would be the result thereof : the meeting was preserved in quiet. When the meeting for discipline was about to commence, a large part of our company withdrew, they having been either disowned or were under dealing by the monthly meeting, for having united in setting up separate monthly meetings. The queries were answered, and numerous testimonies

of denial signed for both men and women, others ordered for next monthly meeting, and fresh cases were brought forward.

The next day, attended the select quarterly meeting, held at Stillwater: the meeting was informed before it was fully gathered, that some persons were on their way who had been members of this select meeting, but who had been disowned in consequence of uniting themselves with the separatists: on their making the attempt to enter the house, and the door-keepers preventing them, they assembled on the meeting-house lot, where they held their meeting, preaching and praying, so much to the annoyance of Friends, that they were obliged to close the widows of the meeting-house.

Fourth-day morning, 27th of 8th mo., the day of Stillwater quarterly meeting; my companion and myself on proceeding towards the meeting-house, observed a vast crowd of people assembled; the nearer we approached, the more awful the commotion appeared; the countenances and action of many manifested a determination to make their way into the house, by resorting to violent means, if no other way would effect their designs: by pressing through the crowd we gained admittance. The tumult increased to an alarming degree; the consequence of keeping the doors fastened any longer were to be dreaded, as the mob were beginning to break the windows to obtain an entrance that way, and to inflict blows on some of the door-keepers; it was therefore concluded to open the doors. The door of the men's house being opened, to attempt to describe the awful scene to the full, would be in vain for me to do. The feelings of alarm awakened in my mind were such, as almost to overpower my confidence in the all-superintending care of a Divine Protector; the countenances of many as they entered the house, seemed to indicate that they were ready to fall upon the little handful there was of us in the ministers' gallery, there being few others in the house. Some of their party forced up the shutters between the men's and women's house, as if they would have brought the whole of them to the ground, others ran to the doors which had been made secure, seizing them, tearing them open, and some off the hinges; the like outrage they committed in the women's house; the cracking and hammering this occasioned for the short time it lasted was awful to me, not knowing where, or in what, this scene of riot and excess of wickedness of temper would end. The house was very soon crowded to an extreme, the separatists taking possession of one end of the men's house and Friends the other; no sooner was the meeting become a little quiet, than the preachers of the separatists began uttering their Deistical doctrines, one after another; they attempting to prove man had not suffered loss through the disobedience of our first parents, endeavouring to make the sacrifice of Christ of none effect, and speaking irreverently of the Scriptures. I durst not do otherwise, trying as it appeared to be, than stand up and say,

If there were any present not in profession with our Society, I wished them to understand that the doctrines which had been advanced, were not the doctrines of Friends, and therefore I hoped we should not be charged with holding such unsound principles, nor considered accountable for what had been offered. I stated that it was my belief, that the sorrowful confusion and distress which had taken place that morning, had grown out of those unsound doctrines, which of late had been disseminated and received by many amongst them.

Trying as the prospect of our situation was, it appeared best to proceed with the business amidst the host of opposers and strangers present; the representatives were called over, the answers to the queries read, and a summary prepared: had I not been present I could not have conceived it would have been possible for Friends to have conducted the business of a quarterly meeting so quietly, and given attention to the several matters before the meeting, circumstanced as they were,—the separatists going on with the business of their new quarterly meeting at one end of the house and Friends at the other. One of the most active in this riot exhibited charges against me and other ministers, and against some active members of Stillwater quarterly meeting, charging us with acts of violence towards him, signing the same, and circulating it in a Hicksite work, called “The Friend, or Advocate for Truth.” The door-keeper, and other Friends who were present at the time, drew up certificates clearing me and others of the charges so wickedly brought against us, signed it, and published it in a weekly publication of the Society, called “The Friend,” and also in Bates’s Repository, to which no reply ever appeared. Friends were favoured to get comfortably through their business, closing under a grateful sense, that it was the Lord who had in mercy been the stay and staff to their minds through the difficulties of this day; and desires were put up to the throne of grace to be enabled to be found walking worthy of these his favours.

First-day, 31st of 8th mo., 1828, we rode to Benjamin Vale’s, where the meeting is now held, composed of those who remain with Friends of Plainfield, Clairsville, and Concord meetings, the separatists having possession of these three meeting-houses. The room being small, many were obliged to sit outside the house. I went to meeting in a tried state of mind: a thorn in the flesh is often my companion, doubtless in great mercy to keep down the creaturely part, lest any thing like being exalted above measure should appear and take root, through the acknowledgments made in meetings of approbation of my ministry and services amongst my friends: the meeting was held much in the quiet, and proved a comfortable, and, I hope, an encouraging one to many of our company.

Fourth-day, attended meeting at Mount Pleasant; on first



sitting down in the meeting-house the wing of Ancient Goodness was in mercy spread over us; as Friends came into the house one after another, the awe that was brought over their minds was to be observed, from the manner in which they took their seats: I had cause to say, it was good for me I was there.

Seventh-day morning, the first sitting of the Select Yearly Meeting commenced: at the time appointed for the meeting to assemble, Elias Hicks and two other preachers of his party tried to gain admittance, but being refused, they replied that they could hold their meeting in the open air, as George Fox did, furnishing themselves with chairs; in company with about twelve of the select members of this Yearly Meeting, who had united themselves to the Hicksite party, they accordingly held their meeting on the outside of the meeting-house fence: although their voices were at times heard in our meeting, yet it did not appear the meeting suffered thereby, except as it respected the minds of Friends being affected with sorrow on their account. In the afternoon, attended the meeting for sufferings. Friends being aware of the difficult situation they were likely to be placed in, on the day when the Yearly Meeting for the general concerns of the Society was to commence, a consultation took place on the subject; and it was concluded, to have the usual doors open, and that the door-keepers should be requested to do their best to keep the meeting select, but not to use force.

First-day morning, attended the meeting at Mount Pleasant: it may easily be supposed, the prospect of going to meeting this morning must have been formidable in appearance: the house was crowded, and before the meeting was fully gathered, Elias Hicks stood up and occupied much time in setting forth doctrines opposed to all Christian principles. After he had taken his seat, a Friend rose and informed the audience of the situation in which Elias Hicks stood with his friends at home; this he did in order to do away any unfavourable impressions respecting Friends, which might have been made upon the minds of any from the doctrines which E. H. had advanced. From the great concourse of people we passed in the afternoon on their way to Short Creek meeting, where E. Hicks was to be, I had cherished a hope we should have had a quiet meeting at Mount Pleasant; but we had not long been settled down before two of the preachers of the separatists rose one after the other; on their being requested again and again to sit down, the Hicksite party shouted from various parts of the meeting, manifesting such violence of temper, that it appeared safest to suffer them to go on. Although it was as distressing a meeting as most I ever sat in, yet when it closed, I could not say I regretted my lot was thus cast amongst Friends, to share with them in their exercises.

Second-day, 8th of 9th mo.: at eight this morning the com-

mittee of men and women Friends on Indian affairs met, to which committee strangers were invited, of which number I considered myself to be one. When the business of this committee closed, Friends and the clerks remained in the house: the time for the gathering of the Yearly Meeting on the general concerns of the Society being nearly come, these Friends filled up the ministers' gallery and front seats. Printed notices had been served on E. Hicks and others, and copies nailed on the doors of the men's and women's house, signed by the trustees of the property, warning them not to enter the meeting-house during the sittings of the Yearly Meeting; the numerous door-keepers were also in attendance, but the separatists became so violent, it appeared no longer possible for the door-keepers to maintain their posts, unless they repelled force by force. Friends conferred together, when it appeared safest to request the door-keepers to desist from their charge, and leave the doors; this taking place, the mob, headed by two of the preachers of the separatists, poured into the house like a torrent, accompanied by some of the rude rabble of the town; they violently forced open the doors that had been kept fast,—some young men entering the women's house, committed the same outrage. After the meeting had become quiet, beyond what could have been expected, all circumstances considered, the clerk, Jonathan Taylor, opened the Yearly Meeting amidst this crowd of intruders; on which one of the separatists' party stood up, and declared he was authorized by the members of Ohio Yearly Meeting to order the clerks that were then at the table to quit, and give place to such clerks as they should choose for themselves, at the same time naming an individual for the office; which nomination was confirmed by many of the separatists shouting out at the same time "That's my mind, that's my mind;" "Why does not our clerk come forward?" The separatists then crowding between the front seats, and up to the table, ordered the Friends who were standing near the clerks' table to quit; but their demand not being complied with, they began to use violence, on which the clerks were ordered to take down the names of such as appeared to take an active part in such proceedings. The taking down the names of such as were the most active in this riot did not check their proceedings; finding they were not likely to succeed in driving Friends from the front of the table, they endeavoured to do so by a door behind the clerk: my seat being next to the clerk, a man of large stature and bulk came over the gallery-rail almost upon me, and after him two young men. I was on the point of getting up to leave the house; but before I was upon my feet, one of the separatists near me looking up, exclaimed the gallery that was over our heads was falling; a great crash at this moment was heard over our heads, which it was afterwards proved had been produced by one of the separatists'

party breaking a piece of wood. Immediately on an alarm being given 'the gallery was falling,' from the other side of the house there was an outcry, 'The house is falling;' The door of the women's house was thrown open, and they were told the house was falling; a sudden rush in every direction produced a sound not unlike thunder, and brought down a small part of the ceiling in the gallery; this raised a considerable dust, and had the appearance of the walls giving way, and the ceiling coming down altogether. Whilst I was making my way from my seat, a Friend informed the meeting it was a false alarm; the separatists, who had crowded into the ministers' gallery, and given this alarm, instead of making their way themselves out of the house, called out, "Make way for the old Friend;" others said, "Let the old Friend come by;" so that I had no difficulty until I reached the door, where the crowd was very great. Some were thrown down and were in danger of being trampled to death; a young Friend (who was one amongst many more) told me they forced the sashes out with their feet, and tumbled out of the windows: one young man, (report says,) in his fright, dropped out of an upper window. The separatists having now obtained access to the door at the back of the clerks' table, voices were heard above the general uproar, "Now is the time, rush on," which they did, but not being able to get possession of the table, it was broken to pieces. In a short time I returned into the meeting again. When the tumult and uproar had somewhat subsided, it was proposed that we should leave this scene of riot; which being united with, Friends adjourned to Short Creek meeting-house, and the clerk made a minute, stating the cause whereby Friends were brought under the necessity of quitting their own house. On taking our seats in Short Creek house, many minds were afresh contrited before the Lord for his merciful deliverance.. The chief subject that occupied attention at this time was, what measures Friends were to adopt to secure a peaceable enjoyment of their privileges in holding their meetings select: the names which had been taken down of those who had been the most active in the riots, and in breaking the clerks' table, were read over; a very becoming care was manifested on the part of Friends, where mercy could be shown, to strike such names off the list; Friends were called upon to make such statement to the meeting, as they would be able to do if brought forward as witnesses in the case before a court. After which four Friends had it in charge to wait upon a judge at Stuben-ville, to lay before him the situation Friends were placed in, and to deliver to him the names of such as had been the authors of their difficulties.

Third-day morning, a few Friends met in the meeting-house lot at Mount Pleasant, and opened the adjournment of the select meeting, and adjourned again to Short Creek meeting-house,

admittance having been denied them to Mount Pleasant meeting-house. The Yearly Meeting standing adjourned to ten o'clock this morning, Friends were advised to make a formal demand of the men's and women's house; Friends therefore, assembled in the yard of the meeting-house at Mount Pleasant, and the trustees for the property, with two of the representatives went into the meeting-house, the separatists' meeting being then sitting in it, and in an audible manner, demanded quiet possession of the house to transact the business of the Yearly Meeting of Ohio select; after much quibbling on the part of the separatists, when pressed to give a decisive answer to this question, whether they were willing quietly to resign the meeting-house? the answer they gave was, "There is no reply;" the separatists' then resumed their business. Notice was now given, that Friends being kept out of their house, would open their Yearly Meeting in the yard; men and women collected accordingly at the front of the meeting-house, the men to the east and the women to the west: here we had a large and solemn meeting. The pacific nature of our holy profession was again manifested by Friends, after having asserted their right and made a formal demand of their property, then submitting to hold their meeting in the open air, rather than resort to force, their disturbers being less perhaps than one-third of their number. Divers living testimonies were borne to the praise of that Almighty arm, which had thus far in mercy sustained Friends, and preserved them in meekness and patience, amidst their accumulated difficulties. Friends were informed, that, in consequence of the injury which Jonathan Taylor, the Yearly Meeting's clerk, had received yesterday from the pressure at the table, he was unable to give his attendance, the assistant clerk was therefore requested to open the adjournment, which was accordingly done; after which the Yearly Meeting was adjourned to Short Creek meeting-house, in which not a few of our company on this solemn occasion were bathed in tears; some of the youth also distinguished themselves in this respect amongst others.

Fourth-day, 10th of 9th mo., Friends met according to adjournment, and were favoured with a solid sitting together; the meeting being opened, a minute was made, excluding from the several sittings of this Yearly Meeting such members of Society as had united with others in producing the riot at Mount Pleasant meeting-house, and who had otherwise identified themselves with the separatists.

Fifth-day morning, the Friends again met; the meeting continued large, and the weather being fine, was a favourable circumstance, as many were obliged to take their seats under the temporary awnings out of the meeting-house, the windows having been taken out to accommodate the numerous company. The clerks being obliged, with other Friends, to be in attendance on the



judge, relative to the riot on Second-day, such of the representatives as were not thus engaged, retired into the wood opposite to the meeting-house, to consider of suitable Friends to serve the meeting as clerks during their absence. Friends were favoured with a quiet, comfortable sitting together.

Sixth-day morning, the meeting again assembled, and matters which came before it were conducted in great harmony; the trials which Friends had passed through, had brought them very near to each other, baptizing them together under a sense that the concerns of the church they were met to transact, were not their own, but the Lord's, who I believe was much looked unto for counsel and help throughout this time of close travail and exercise of spirit.

Seventh-day morning, the meeting continued to be largely attended; Divine goodness still condescended to own us together with his enriching presence, to the contriting of our spirits, causing tears of gratitude to flow down the cheeks of many in the meeting. In the afternoon, I attended an adjournment of the meeting for sufferings, in which we were again refreshed together, under a renewed sense, that the Lord is still in mercy condescending to offer his help to our poor revolting Society.

First-day morning, feeling drawings in my mind to attend Harrisville meeting about seven miles distant from Short Creek, accompanied by my friend Rowland Green, we proceeded there; we had not long been seated in the gallery before one of the preachers of the separatists accompanied by many more of his associates, entered the house, and occupied a great deal of the time of the meeting; when he took his seat again, I felt it laid upon me to inform the assembly that the individual who had spoken had no right to stand up and preach in that meeting, he having been disowned by the Society of Friends. Although this meeting was a very suffering one, yet on comparing my feelings of mind with my companion's on our way back again, it appeared we neither of us felt cause for regret that we had given up to attend this meeting; believing our sufferings therein, would not all be in vain. On our way from meeting, we were joined by a goodly looking, middle-aged woman Friend, apparently under great affliction, which I found was occasioned by her husband having joined the Hicksites, and he was now staying behind with them.

Second-day the Yearly Meeting again met; when a report from the Indian Committee was received, from which it appeared the school had been suspended: Friend's minds were exercised with desires, that they might not remit their care over this part of our fellow-creatures, as far as their means and ability was equal to.

Third-day morning, the Yearly Meeting again met, and attended to the various concerns which still claimed attention, as having grown out of the present trying state of the Society, from

the unsound principles, which had made such inroads in the minds of many of our members. Under a reverent, thankful sense of the help which had been extended, whilst conducting the several weighty matters before the meeting, and after expressions of concern that Friends might be found walking worthy of the continuance of these Divine blessings, Friends separated in great nearness towards each other; the cheeks of most were bedewed with tears of sympathy and affection, at the prospect of the sufferings that awaited them, through the opposition to be expected from their revolting brethren in their several meetings at home.

## CHAPTER XXXIX.

FIFTH-DAY morning, my companion and myself left our comfortable abode at our kind friend Jonathan Taylor's, and proceeded towards Indiana: in the evening we were favoured to reach Zanesville. It being reported Elias Hicks had been at this place, and procured the use of the Court-house, and held a meeting there, as I had still in reserve some of the Declarations of the meeting for sufferings in Philadelphia, I devoted some time in visiting the preachers of the different religious denominations, (except the Roman Catholic,) and delivered to those we met the Declaration, which appeared to be well received; I also left others for distribution. One individual observed, that he had heard much which had been said on both sides, and had been desirous of seeing something official from Friends themselves; he was therefore glad to receive the Declaration, intending to make it known to his hearers.

First-day morning, attended meeting at Zanesville: it was a quiet time, and I hope a season of instruction to some. After meeting we pursued our journey through Alexander, where I distributed some of the Declaration, and then on to Circleville, where we understood Elias Hicks and several men and women had halted on their way to Indiana, but had not held a meeting there. We took up our abode for the night at a tavern. I called upon some of the leaders of the different religious denominations there, and left some of the Declarations, which appeared to be well received.

Third-day, we proceeded to Dry Run. It felt pleasant to get into a settlement of Friends again, from the difficulty we had experienced in being obliged to be at taverns, spending our evenings in such mixed companies as we frequently met with thereat. The prospect of a journey of five hundred miles before me, after quitting Indiana, when I must have this inconvenience to combat, of being at taverns to victual and lodge nearly the whole of the time, was trying; yet I found it was a subject not profitable for me to dwell upon, satisfied that no unnecessary anxiety of my own could make any change for the better, in the trials which were to fall to my lot.

Sixth day, attended the preparative meeting held at Walnut-

creek ; notice having been given of my desire to sit with Friends of this meeting, we were informed a general attendance of them had taken place, and we had good ground to believe our visit was an acceptable one to Friends of this meeting.

Seventh-day, we attended the monthly meeting at Fairfield, the meeting for worship was numerously attended by persons not in profession with Friends ; it proved to me an exercising season, yet I humbly hope I was found faithful, in declaring that which appeared to be the word of the Lord through me, his feeble instrument. In the afternoon we proceeded to Wilmington, about sixteen miles, and were favoured to reach it before dark ; here we were informed E. Hicks and his party had a meeting in the court-house, which at first was numerously attended ; but the doctrines he advanced, caused many of the most respectable of his hearers to leave the house before the meeting was over.

First-day morning, we reached to Centre, attended meeting there ; a large proportion of this meeting consists of young people who profess to continue with Friends, but from their external appearance it would seem they were ignorant of what they were making a profession of. I was constrained to endeavour to impress their minds with a sense of the mercy they enjoyed, in that there were yet preserved amongst them so many aged brethren and sisters, who had not dared to bow the knee to the Baals which had of late been travelling amongst them, nor to kiss the image they had been setting up : great quiet prevailed over the assembly.

Third-day morning, we rode to Wainsville ; on our arrival we were informed Elias Hicks and his party had possession of the meeting-house, and were holding what they termed, Indiana Yearly Meeting of Friends. This placed me in a very trying situation. I endeavoured to learn whether it was likely their meeting would close that night, and, if not, whether the week-day meeting would be held as usual on the morrow ; but this information I was not able to obtain, yet I was given to understand that a public meeting was to be held on the morrow morning in Friends' meeting-house, but that the hour for holding this meeting could not be ascertained. I endeavoured to give the subject all due consideration, my situation feeling to myself a very critical one ; as I thought I clearly saw if the meeting was to be held at the usual hour for the week-day meeting, it would be right for me to attend it ; but if the hour was altered by E. H. and his party, who had taken possession of the meeting-house, it thereby becoming the meeting of the separatists, I should be excused. I was informed there was a settlement of Friends at Springborough, about eight miles distant, on our way to Indiana ; and believing the pointings of duty directed my mind there that night, we concluded to proceed, as we could easily return to



attend the meeting at Wainsville next morning, if the hour of the meeting was not changed : the woman Friend at whose house we were, also kindly offered to inform us if no alteration took place in the hour of holding the meeting. We accordingly left Wainsville, under an assurance in my own mind of her faithfully fulfilling her engagement, and proceeded to Springborough, where we took up our abode for the night. Here we understood that the house we called at in Wainsville, was opened to the separatists attending their Yearly Meeting, for victuals and lodging, whereby I felt well satisfied we had left Wainsville for the night ; and I continued to feel assured I could place confidence in the woman Friend for information. I passed rather a sleepless night, the meeting of Wainsville coming before the view of my mind ; but I endeavoured to labour after entire resignation, which, I believe, I am justified in saying, I was favoured to experience fully brought about, although the prospect threatened certain suffering to my mind, if my poor body escaped. We rose early to breakfast ; as no information relative to Wainsville had come to my hands, I concluded the time for holding the usual mid-week meeting was altered, as being the cause the Friend had not written to me ; and, as we had a long day's journey before us, I proposed our moving on our way to Richmond. After a long fatiguing day's journey, we were favoured to reach our friend John Smith's in the evening, who, with his wife and family, showed us every kind attention we needed.

Sixth-day, on my entering the meeting for sufferings, a Friend stopped me, saying, " The Friends of Wainsville were disappointed at not seeing thee at their week-day meeting, a note having been sent thee, saying, the time for holding that meeting was not altered." This information for a time struck me almost speechless ! I was not able to make any reply ; but was led severely to reproach myself for my neglect in not making the needful inquiry before I left Springborough, if any note had come for us from Wainsville. The sufferings of mind I was plunged into for this neglect, my pen cannot describe to the full ; I was led to conclude, if my guilt for this omission and unwatchfulness in not more carefully attending to my Master's business, continued to weigh me down, as it now was permitted to do, I must not pursue my journey further, but return home ; as I was unable to see any probability of my being benefited or of my benefiting others by attending the sittings of this Yearly Meeting, unless, in adorable mercy, the weight of guilt I was labouring under, was somewhat removed. I experienced as great suffering of mind, as I think I ever endured ; look which ever way I would, every door of palliation and consolation appeared closed against me, all which I hope I endeavoured to bear with that becoming patience due from such an ungrateful servant to such a merciful

Master. After much inward struggle, I was favoured to experience more calmness and composure, yet I was not without fearful apprehensions I should not so rise above my present trying feelings of mind, as to be able to give attention to matters that might come before the Yearly Meeting, which I was desirous of doing. But as patience was abode in, that merciful Almighty Being, (who well knew my falling short in duty towards him in this matter was not wilful, but the sorrowful effect of great unwatchfulness on my part,) in his own time was pleased to condescend to say, it is enough; which mercy, I hope I may say, I received with feelings of reverent gratitude and thankfulness. The note alluded to, I afterwards understood, had fallen into the hands of a Friend, who had yielded to carnal reasoning on the subject, and concluded our attending the meeting in question at Wainsville, might be the means of promoting a disposition in E. Hicks and his party, to come and disturb Friends at their Yearly Meeting of Indiana, and that I might take Wainsville on my way to Carolina: but I found no such compromise would be accepted, and therefore durst not make the attempt.

Seventh-day, attended the select Yearly Meeting, which was large; the Great Master being pleased to own us together: for the unmerited favour of my being able to participate with my friends in these feelings, unworthy as I am, I hope I felt truly thankful.

First-day, attended meeting at White Water, about one mile out of Richmond; great crowds were moving along towards the meeting-house, which was thronged, and a great concourse of people were outside, it was supposed there were nearly four thousand persons in and out of the house: Friends were constrained to acknowledge, that the Ancient of days in His unmerited mercy, was pleased to condescend to come down, and show Himself abundant in loving kindness to His revolting, back-sliding people. At the close of the meeting, one of E. Hicks's party gave notice of a meeting to be held by E. H. on Fourth-day at Richmond.

Second-day morning, attended the African committee: the care which Friends of this Yearly Meeting (Indiana) had manifested for this too-much neglected portion of our fellow-creatures, was set forth in a report laid before this committee, by which it appeared Friends had exerted themselves for their welfare. The Yearly Meeting for transacting the general concerns of the Society, assembled this morning, and was very large. It being known that there were some individuals in the meeting who had no claim to sit there, they were importuned to leave the meeting-house; but as they manifested an unwillingness to do so, they were informed, unless they left the meeting, their names would be exposed and minuted down by the clerk; on which several left the house, and

it then appearing the meeting was select, the clerks proceeded with the business of the Yearly Meeting.

Third-day morning, attended the adjournment of the meeting for sufferings: the names of such of the members of this meeting as had united themselves to the separatist party were brought forward, in order to their being laid before the Yearly Meeting; the meeting's taking such a step as this, it was evident, closely tried the minds of some Friends present, but Truth prevailed over the affectionate part, and by the meeting's keeping in patience, a general uniting in such a step prevailed, and the names were ordered to be taken forward to the Yearly Meeting. The meeting again assembled and the business that came before it, though it occupied much time, was conducted in great harmony.

Fourth-day, the public meeting for worship was held; E. Hicks had also appointed a meeting, to be held at the same hour in a barn adjoining the meeting-house lot, which his party had fitted up for him; notwithstanding which, the meeting of Friends was large, and proved a quiet, favoured one. How short-sighted we are; my being put by from my attendance at Wainsville, did not hinder E. Hicks from trying to annoy Friends at this Yearly Meeting, as far as he had power. In the evening I attended an adjournment of the Indian committee, which committee it appeared was placed in a difficult situation, in consequence of the funds which were originally designed to support the concern, being in the hands of those of Baltimore Yearly Meeting, who have identified themselves with the separatists. It further appeared, that application had been made by missionaries of other societies to take the charge of the Indians, but that the latter had uniformly rejected their offers, stating, that they had taken the Quakers by the hand, and would hold them fast; that they always gave them good advice, and told them things which made them glad.

Fifth-day, (23rd of 10th mo.) attended an adjournment of the select meeting, where divers weighty testimonies were borne, and important remarks made on the state of this part of the body.

First-day morning, the meeting for worship was very large, although E. Hicks had appointed a meeting to be held in the barn adjoining the meeting-house lot at the same hour; we were favoured with a quiet, comfortable sitting together.

Second-day morning, the Yearly Meeting again met, and after a sitting of nearly six hours, closed under a very precious and awful covering.

On Third-day morning, I set out, in company with several Friends, to return eastward; the next day at noon we reached Cincinnati. Feeling drawings in our minds to sit with Friends there, a meeting was appointed to be held that evening, and we had

cause to believe both visitors and visited were satisfied with the time we thus passed together.

Fifth-day morning, we again pursued this long journey before us, crossed the Ohio river in a horse-boat, and landed in Kentucky, a slave-holding state; on which my feelings were awakened to a thankful sense of my being no man's slave. On Second-day morning, about half a mile out of Mount Vernon, we had a considerable mountain to ascend, and, to make it more easy of access, bodies of trees were laid from the foot to the summit; a heavy fall of rain in the night, and a very large drove of fat hogs which preceded us, had occasioned our road to be very slippery; on reaching about half way up the mountain, our carriage ran back, our horses turned round, and turned the carriage off the road into a hole about three feet deep, amongst the rocks; I was favoured to escape unhurt, although in the carriage: we managed through help to have our carriage brought on the road again, and pursuing our journey, we reached the top of the mountain in safety. This morning, we were met by a company of slaves, some of them heavily loaded with irons, singing as they passed along; this, we were informed, was an effort to drown that suffering of mind they were brought into, by leaving behind them wives, children, or other near connexions, and never likely to meet again in this world. A short time after we met another company; one respectable-looking, rather well-dressed slave, attracted my attention, with his hand grasping the hand of a fine-looking girl, about fourteen years of age, his countenance appeared very dejected and melancholy; I was led to conclude, from the affection with which he appeared to treat the girl, that she must be his child, whom, in all probability, he expected soon to be compelled to part with for life. After this came two waggons, in which they were conveying some more who were not able to walk, also the coloured children, all going to be sold at a market, like cattle. The time being come for us to bait our horses, whilst they were feeding, I walked to some distance from our tavern, and observed a handsome carriage standing, which I supposed belonged to a pedlar, as it appeared to be loaded with coarse woollen goods: I addressed myself to the owner of the carriage, telling him he had a load of more bulk than weight; on which he replied, his carriage contained the clothing of the company of slaves we had passed on the road, of which he was the owner, saying, he was seeking a market where he might dispose of them to the best advantage. I told him his business was a very bad one, and that a day of reckoning would come in which he would have to account to his Maker for his conduct towards these poor creatures. He replied, he believed so too, but said, I have them, and what am I to do with them? I told him, I believed, were I in his situation, my duty would point out to me the



necessity of liberating them, and if it were not in my power to do it in any other way, to sell all my goods and chattels, and part with the last cent I had, to assist them in getting to a free country. To which he replied, it was a bad trade, and he wished it was wholly done away with. I told him to consider, that same Almighty Power which created him, created the coloured people; and I questioned him, should his wife and children be torn from him, as these poor creatures had been torn from their near connexions, how would he feel under the like circumstances? he replied, he should feel it a hard case to be reduced to; I told him he had better die poor than amass wealth by such means as he was aiming at. I then made inquiry into the situation of the respectable coloured man I had seen with the other slaves; he informed me, that this man had left behind him a wife and children, the property of another slave-holder. When he took his leave of me he said, he hoped he should remember the remarks I had made to him.

Sixth-day, our road to-day lay over the Blue Mountains; the ascent being gradual, our difficulties did not commence until we reached the summit and began to descend; the descent is computed to be near two miles to the foot of the mountain; my companion remained in the waggon and I footed it, fearing the injury of our waggon, from the great steep we had to descend, the large stones in the road, and trunks of trees we had to travel over; before we had near reached the bottom, we had so splintered one of our axletrees, and broke some of our bolts, that I began to doubt our being able to accomplish arriving at the house where we proposed to take up our abode for the night. On our arrival at the foot of the mountain, we durst not attempt to proceed until our repairs were accomplished. We observed a despicable-looking tavern, not a pane of glass in any window in the house, nor did it appear there ever had been; the night threatened to be very cold and frosty; how we were to take up our abode here for the night, after such a fatiguing day's journey, I was at a loss to comprehend: on querying with the tavern-keeper, if he could take us and our horses in, he replied, he would do his best to make us comfortable, which rather cheered me; on which I told him we would be satisfied with his best. The rest of our company soon arrived, and after we had refreshed ourselves with a good hot supper by a comfortable fire,—our landlord and his family defending the windows with various woollen articles, we received no injury, but passed a comfortable night; I had a good bed and plenty of covering. Next morning we again pursued our journey; and took up our abode at an inn for the night: two men who were strangers to us, formed a part of our company in our sitting-room; they inquired of us relative to the droves of fat hogs we had met on the road; on our giving them such information as we

were able, one of them observed, he had taken a drove of six hundred to one of the markets, and offered them at ten per cent. discount, and to take them out in negroes (!) but could not succeed. On my companion remarking to him as to his trading in his fellow-creatures, he excused himself by saying, if he had made such an exchange it would have been for his own private use ; but in the course of our conversation he exposed himself, and gave sufficient proof his motives for trying to make this purchase, were not such as he would have had us to suppose ; for on our remarking, we had met a waggon-load of negro children, and men and women on foot, he said he would have purchased the whole cargo if he could have agreed with the owner of them about the price. Although I felt much at the time he made these remarks, yet silence then appeared to be my proper place ; but in the morning, before we parted, I found it laid upon me to open my mind to him freely on the iniquitous practice of dealing in, or keeping in bondage, our fellow-creatures, and to warn him against pursuing such evil courses ; closing my remarks by declaring it to be my firm belief, that in this enlightened age, neither slave-holder nor slave-merchant would ever find a seat in the kingdom of heaven. These remarks appeared to strike him very forcibly, and silenced him for a time ; I thought from a good degree of feeling, that he acknowledged his belief of the truth of what I had advanced : he then gave me his hand, I thought affectionately, and we parted. I went on my way, rejoicing that I had thus far been found faithful, in leaving with him that which to me appeared to be the counsel of my Divine Master ; for which, I hope I may say, I felt truly thankful, inasmuch as deep-felt sorrow and suffering had been my portion pretty much since the close of the Yearly Meeting. The fruits of my short coming relative to Wainsville, had again become heavy to bear, and I durst not try to get from under my sufferings by any artifice of my own, assured, as I was, when it was good for me to be released, all-sufficient help would come from the Lord's holy sanctuary. It was enough for me to be favoured with the continued assurance, that my short coming did not lay as a sin against me, but as an act of great unwatchfulness on my part. I believe it right for me to record these things, that they may become a warning to others.

Early this afternoon we reached the comfortable abode of our kind companion, Abel Coffin, after a journey of about five hundred and sixty-six miles, and eighteen days' travel, without rest, except part of a day, and at night. I was weary in body, but, through adorable mercy, quiet in mind ; and I humbly hope, able to say, bowed in feelings of reverent thankfulness for the preservation every way which we had experienced. The weather much favoured us, but little rain having fallen whilst on our journey ; but during this night, there was a heavier fall of rain than has

been known for a long time, which in all probability must have impeded our journey, had we not arrived as we were favoured to do.

Seventh-day, (1st of 11th mo.) attended the select Yearly Meeting for North Carolina, held at New Garden, which was large. Caution, counsel, and encouragement were dealt out, to the tendering of many of our hearts; causing feelings of humble gratitude to the great Dispenser of these favours through his poor instruments.

First-day, attended meeting at Deep River, which I understood was smaller than usual, occasioned by the great quantity of rain that had fallen since our arrival. In the afternoon we proceeded to New Garden.

Second-day, attended the opening of the Yearly Meeting, which was numerously attended. The next morning we attended an adjournment of the meeting for sufferings, which was chiefly occupied in the concerns of the negroes under Friends' notice. Friends here are much to be sympathized with, on account of the great load of care and exercise that has devolved upon this part of the Society, in consequence of the unjust and oppressive laws of their state, relative to this long-neglected race of our fellow-creatures. After the close of this adjournment the Yearly Meeting again met: the state of this Yearly Meeting, as exhibited by the summary answers to the queries, was proposed to become the first subject of consideration; and in order that it might be more effectually entered into, it became a joint concern of men and women Friends, and the shutters were raised between their houses. The clerks of the men's and of the women's meetings read the summaries which had been prepared from the answers of their respective meetings; the deficiencies in the answers of both meetings were fully considered, and were spoken to in a convincing and awakening manner: it proved a season of favour, which I believe never will be wholly erased from minds that were present;—vocal praises were offered for this continued mercy. The meeting was further brought under exercise, on account of that departure, which had of later times taken place amongst the members of this Yearly Meeting, from plainness of dress and address, and not altogether confined to the youth; many pertinent remarks were made thereon, and much salutary advice communicated. The following circumstance was related in the meeting, by a Friend who was an eye and ear witness, and who had acted as one of the jurors in the case:—four men were called forward to be witnesses in a trial before the court, and were required to take the oath; all were dressed fashionably alike. On being directed to put their hands upon the book, all were sworn but one, and they departed, leaving the one standing; which the judge observing, he addressed this individual in nearly the following language. "Do you affirm!" He answered, "Yes." "Are you

a Quaker?" He said, "Yes." "Do you belong to that church or Society?" He said, "Yes." After a little pause, the judge replied, "The time had been, that the members of that Society were known by their peculiar dress and appearance; but it is not so now; you could not be known by your dress, you are like a ship on the sea or privateer sailing under false colours, that it may not be known." I felt it best to give this circumstance a place in these memoirs, should they ever meet the public eye, in hopes it may prove as a watchword to such, who may be tempted to gratify their natural inclination, by departing from that simplicity into which the Truth first led its followers.

Fifth-day, after a sitting of about five hours, the Yearly Meeting finished its business—under feelings of gratitude, that the several sittings of it had been owned by the extension of holy help.

Sixth-day, we rode to our friend Joshua Stanley's, at Centre, and attended the select quarterly meeting for the western quarter, which was small. Seventh-day, attended the quarterly meeting for discipline, which was large; but it gathered very disorderly.

First-day, we rode to Providence, and sat with Friends of that meeting; amongst whom, through holy help, I humbly hope, I was favoured faithfully to acquit myself. In the afternoon we rode to Salem, to attend a meeting there, appointed at my request. Second-day evening, I was favoured to rest in body and mind in the well-conducted family of our companions from Indiana—D. Clerk.

Third-day, we rode to Marlborough, to attend an appointed meeting, which was long in gathering, but in time the house was nearly filled: many infants were brought in, but my mind was not suffered to be disturbed by them, which I hope I esteemed a great favour. Our kind friend Nathan Hunt, who was once engaged in religious service in my native land, gave us his company. I had to advocate the Great Master's cause with such as were trampling on his precious testimonies, and to hold out the language of encouragement to the few (for they appear to be very thinly strewed in this meeting) faithful followers of "the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sins of the world:" after meeting we rode home with Nathan Hunt.

Fourth-day morning, attended the monthly meeting of Springfield. In the meeting for worship I had to stand up with nearly the following expressions: "When a careless, lukewarm, indifferent disposition of mind is given way to, by the female head of a family, domestic matters are generally brought into confusion; carelessness in domestic matters being the mother of waste, and woeful want is frequently the consequence hereof; and this will apply with respect to spirituals as well as temporals." I felt not a little tried at being obliged to express myself in this way, but I



was afterwards informed, what I had thus offered was a very appropriate subject for some in the meeting to take home in every sense of the word.

Fifth-day, went to an appointed meeting at Union, which we were informed was pretty generally attended by its members, and some Friends from a neighbouring meeting. Although I had close things to deliver to the unfaithful, yet Friends appeared generally to part from us affectionately.

Sixth-day (14th of 11th mo.) we went to Deep Creek; on our way we had to ford the river Yadden, said to be a quarter of a mile across, which we found very deep: fording these rivers, which are rendered dangerous by the rains, often puts my faith in the superintending care of an Almighty Power closely to the test.

Seventh-day morning, attended the select quarterly meeting for Westfield, held at this place, in an old log meeting-house; the mortar in many places was out of the joints, and only one small window was glazed; we were obliged to sit with both the doors open for light; the frost being very intense, I suffered not a little; there was no convenience for making a fire in the house. The houses of the attenders of this meeting not being in a much better state than the meeting-house, those Friends would not suffer as I and my companion did from that cause. The meeting was small, many Friends having left this quarterly meeting, and settled in Ohio, partly, it is said, on account of North Carolina being a slave-state. There being but little business, this meeting closed a considerable time before the quarterly meeting for discipline commenced; and no Friends' houses being near, as the meeting-house was situated quite in the woods, we, who are strangers to such a mode of proceeding, found it to be a great exercise of patience to endure what we had to suffer from the cold. The quarterly meeting for discipline was very small; the few well-concerned members of it were much to be felt for.

First-day, the meeting was very largely attended by those not of our religious Society; many were obliged to remain outside of the house; the meeting was considered to be a time of Divine favour,—holy help being near to enable those who had to minister, to divide the word aright: I believe praises ascended from the hearts of many to the God of all comfort and consolation. We had a solid sitting in a Friend's family in the evening, which closed another day, in addition to those gone before, to account for to Him, who sees not as man sees, but who looks at the heart, and weighs not only our actions, but our motives to action, in a just and equal balance. May I not, when weighed in this balance, be found wanting, is the secret breathing of my soul!

In passing through the Moravian settlement, on our way to this quarterly meeting, I left with the preachers of it some of the Declaration of the meeting for sufferings in Phila-

delphia ; during this halt, apprehensions were awakened in me, that some religious service would be called for at my hands in this settlement, before I was clear of North Carolina.

Fourth-day morning, we reached Newberry meeting ; notice having been given to members, and such as were in the practice of coming to Friends' meetings, I understood there was a pretty general attendance. I hope I was favoured to feel truly thankful for that help which had been administered, and that my mind was relieved : may the praise be given, where only it is due !

The next day, attended meeting at Concord ; we sat in this meeting nearly half an hour, before we had any addition to the kind family where we had lodged ; in time, three men and one young woman were added to our number, which made the whole of our meeting. Before the meeting separated, a Friend stood up and expressed the satisfaction it had afforded him in being one of our little company : and he advised Friends to treasure up what had been cast before them : I left the meeting, thankful I had given up to attend it.

Sixth-day, (21st of 11th mo.) proceeded to New Salem, and attended the select quarterly meeting there, which was small, in consequence of the great quantity of rain that had fallen : some of the Friends of this meeting resided on the other side of the Deep River, which they have to ford to get to meeting, and which had risen, it was supposed, fourteen feet above its usual height.

Seventh-day morning, the quarterly meeting for the general concerns of the Society commenced, which was considered to be very small, occasioned, it was supposed, by the difficulties in travelling : I thought there was good cause for believing that the meeting separated under a grateful sense of that continuance of holy help, which had been extended in transacting the several matters that came before it.

First-day, attended what Friends here call the public meeting, because there is in general a large attendance of those not of our religious Society on the First-day after the quarterly meeting ; the house was filled with company. We were favoured with a quiet, comfortable sitting together, and I left the meeting-house thankful, however the expectations of the people might be disappointed, that I was preserved from attempting to offer that which was not intended to be given to others. We had a comfortable sitting in the family at our quarters, before we retired to rest ; and thus closed another day, to account for to Him who will judge of our actions according to our motives to action, whether pure or not pure, and who will reward us accordingly in that day, when there will be no possibility of our correcting the errors which we may have made.

Second-day, in company with our friend Phineas Nixon, we ventured to ford the Deep River ; the current was very strong,

and the bottom rocky, our horses appeared not to like to contend with it, yet we were favoured to get safely through, and reached our friend P. Nixon's quiet abode to dinner. Third-day, I rested, and wrote a letter home to my dear wife and family.

Fourth-day, attended monthly meeting at Deep Creek: I had to labour with those who were at ease in Zion, trusting to what a name to religion would do for them,—I believe to the relief of the minds of the few faithful followers of the Lamb in this monthly meeting.

Seventh-day, attended New Garden monthly meeting; the meeting for worship was to me a very low time. After the meeting had sat a considerable while together, a Friend proposed that the business of the monthly meeting should be entered upon; I had sat for a great part of the meeting under the weight of something to communicate; but fearful of breaking silence, and fearful also to keep the little opening my mind had been exercised with any longer, I ventured towards the close of the meeting to stand up and cast before them my little offering, to the relief of my own mind, and the quiet settling down of the meeting; for which favour I hope I may say I felt truly thankful.

First-day attended Dover meeting: if any service fell to my lot, it was to labour with those who were settled as on their lees, easy and unconcerned, as it respected a consistency of conduct with the profession they were making; also to warn such against the sorrowful consequences that would eventually result from this careless, unconcerned disposition of mind, if continued in. The meeting closed under a precious covering of good.

Fourth-day, attended Hopewell meeting, which gathered very irregularly; but after it was fully gathered, we were favoured to settle down in that holy quiet, which, if carefully abode under, needs not the medium of words to render our coming together truly profitable: this meeting was, I believe, a time of renewed visitation to many of the members of it; sympathy was produced in my mind towards the few still preserved, truly alive to the promotion of the cause of truth and righteousness.

Fifth-day, (4th of 12th mo.), we attended the monthly meeting at Deep River; and, if my friends did not flatter me, I had good ground to hope I was in my place in being with them. May the good opinion of my friends tend to abase the creaturely part, and awaken in me a humbling sense of the great need there is, in all states and situations, for continued watchfulness; that so the praise and the glory may be given unto God for the word of his grace, without whose renewed aid nothing that is truly good can ever be accomplished. After meeting, we rode to our friend Jeremiah Hubbard's.

First-day, we went to Kennet meeting-house; it was as rainy a morning as ever I remember to have turned out in, yet the

meeting was large. I felt much for the few honest-hearted members of this meeting; it appeared from feelings my mind had to experience, whilst silently sitting amongst them, that the living were scarcely, if at all, sufficient to bury the dead. Oh! how such are to be felt for, whose lot it is thus to sit solitary in meetings and out of meetings; yet there is this consolation they have to flee to, in all their seasons of dismay they may have to endure, that the Lord knows them that are his; and in the day when he makes up his jewels, if there is but a faithfully continuing in the way of well-doing, and in the daily cross, to the end of the race, he will spare them, as a man spares his only son that serves him. Fourth-day, attended meeting there, which I was favoured to leave under a hope I had not been out of my place.

Fifth-day, we rode to Sherbourn, attended their mid-week meeting, which was very small; a little child was running about the meeting-house nearly the whole of the time; and as if it was disposed to come up into the gallery whilst I was on my feet.

Sixth-day morning, we rode to our kind friend Nathan Hunt's, at Springfield. First-day, attended meeting at Pine Wood, which was very small; it appeared to me Friends here were scarcely equal to keep up a meeting reputably, although we were led to believe there were two or three, who in a good degree felt attached to the cause of Truth, and were desirous to be found walking answerably to its dictates. At the close of the meeting, a man stood up and gave notice he was to preach a funeral sermon in that meeting-house, on a day he specified; I observed some Friends conversing with him after meeting; but as I supposed he was a person not of sound mind, I left the house and Friends with him: but on inquiry, it appeared a person not a member had recently been buried in Friend's grave-yard adjoining to this meeting-house, and that the man was correct in his mind, and the use of Friends' meeting-house was granted him to preach a funeral-sermon for the friends of the deceased: such is the low state of things in this meeting!

Feeling as I apprehended the time was come for me to give up and be willing to attempt to hold a meeting in the Moravian settlement at Salem, I proposed the same to my friend with whom I lodged; the village being wholly under the controul of that religious community, I understood Friends and others (except in one instance) had been refused that privilege; yet I saw no way for my relief, but by being willing to do my part towards its accomplishment. We proceeded to Salem: on our reaching the settlement, we waited upon one of the active members of the Society; I presented him with my certificates, which he appeared slightly to look over, and returned them to me again, which proved rather discouraging; but I found I must not be cast down thereat, but do my part. I informed him of my apprehensions of duty, to try to have a meet-



ing in the settlement ; but this it appeared, did not meet his views with cordiality, he replied, that no meeting could be had before evening, and then it was doubtful whether such a liberty could be granted me, yet he offered to go to one of the ministers on the occasion, and bring us word. Believing, from the feelings of my mind, it would be safest for us to accompany him, always having as yet found it best for me myself to try to obtain an interview with the principals, who might have any thing to do with my religious concerns, where it could be obtained ; I therefore proposed our going with him, and we set out together ; but on his objecting to this, and one of our company proposing our returning to our tavern, he then urged it again ; I yielded from persuasion, but not from conviction, for which I afterwards suffered deeply in my own mind. In about an hour our messenger returned to us, saying he had not been able to see the person necessary to be consulted, nor could he be seen until one o'clock, and that it was uncertain if he could then be seen ; adding, he supposed we could not stay so long as that. I felt as if he wished to get quit of us, but we concluded to wait until that hour ; I endeavoured to put on in the best way I knew how, being fully satisfied I had done wrong in returning to our tavern, and that if way did not open for me to prosecute my religious prospects, I should have cause to reflect upon myself, as not having done all that was in my power towards its accomplishment. When one o'clock came, and our messenger did not arrive, I made inquiry who was the chief person in the settlement, and where he resided ; on receiving the necessary information, I concluded we must go to him ; we therefore proceeded : on our way my mind became very much tried, lest the steps I was now about to adopt should offend our messenger, and thereby block up my way for effecting what I had in prospect ; but after all, I could see no course but for us to proceed to the house. On our arrival, we were directly introduced to him ; he received us very cordially, to whom I opened my prospects of a meeting in their meeting-house ; but this at first did not appear to be united with ; I was kindly offered the use of their school-house for a meeting, but this not according with my views, I was obliged to decline the offer. Feeling it laid upon me, in addition to what I had before proposed to him, to request to have a meeting with their ministers and elders, in fear and trembling, I think I may say, I ventured to do so ; this latter request beyond my expectation appeared to be readily fallen in with, and four o'clock was concluded upon for their ministers and elders to assemble for this purpose ; the other meeting was to be further considered. I felt thankful now I had thus pursued my prospects, and that way had been made for me so far.

We were careful to be punctual in keeping to the time appointed : the company we met with was small. After a short

interval of silence, I expressed the regard I had long entertained for the Moravian brethren, but the sadness that had covered my mind in passing through their settlement some weeks before, on being informed they were in the practice of holding men in slavery. I then related the interview I had had with a slave-merchant in Baltimore, who attempted at first to justify his trafficking in his fellow-creatures, by the example of individuals who did so, and yet were (he said) making a profession of Christianity. I endeavoured to impress on the minds of our little company, the necessity there was for them to grant their slaves their liberty as a Christian duty, and to set a good example to such as might be at times awakened to see the iniquity of the practice of holding our fellow-creatures in slavery. We were informed their members were advised against the practice. Although I felt much tenderness towards this little company, yet I found I must press upon them the necessity there was, that, ranking high as they did, as professors of Christianity, they should make it a part of their discipline, and one of the terms of continuing in religious membership with them, as our Society had done. I found great openness to receive what I had to offer; and I believe we were brought very near to each other in the bonds of true religious love. On my asking the question, if it would be allowed me to have a meeting in the town in their house that evening, a united consent was expressed: one of our estimable company, for so I felt them to be, expressed a fear, as our manner of sitting together to worship was so different to others, the children might not behave as orderly as they would wish them. They however fixed the time, and undertook all other arrangements for the meeting. We had a large and satisfactory meeting; the chapel, which is a commodious building, was well lighted up, and, contrary to the expectation expressed to us, the children, of whom there was a considerable number, behaved in a solid becoming manner. The meeting being over, after taking an affectionate leave of our kind friends, who granted me this privilege, we returned to the tavern, the individual who at first became our messenger, kindly accompanying us thither, and attending upon us until we took our departure; he parted from us, as I hope I can truly say, I did from him, in feelings of near affection: we rode about six miles to the house of an attender of Friends' meetings, where we took up our abode for the night.

First-day, (14th of 12th mo.) attended meeting at Eno, which we found to be very small, partly, we were told, occasioned by marriages from amongst Friends: our visit appeared to be received well. The retrospect of this day affording a peaceful close, I humbly hope I was not deficient in my care to return the Lord thanks.

First-day, attended Sutton's Creek meeting, which was small,

having been reduced by deaths and removals into free states. Family concerns calling my kind companion home, I could not do otherwise than willingly release him, aware that his own monthly meeting had need of his help, from the sorrowful convulsion that had taken place therein: we parted in near affection, after having travelled together many months in much harmony; he left me for a time in a very stripped state.

Fourth-day, attended Newbegun Creek meeting, composed of Friends and others, and a considerable number of coloured people: the meeting was held in quiet: I was led to hope the minds of some were introduced into a feeling sense of what was offered, one woman in particular (not professing with our religious Society) who came into the meeting as with stretched-out neck and wanton looks, before the meeting closed manifested much tenderness, and as if she was really brought down into the valley of true pleading, where the voice of the Shepherd is clearly and distinctly heard.

1st of 1st mo. 1829. Fifth-day, attended the Narrow's meeting, after which we attended a committee of Friends, who have the charge of a considerable number of free coloured people, some of whom have been freed by Friends, and others have been willed to Friends by persons not in profession with our Society, in order to their becoming freed; the great load of care that has devolved on this committee, calls for the near sympathy of their absent friends, from the ignorance and untowardness of those they have to do with, in addition to the severity of the laws of the state relative to free coloured people.

Seventh-day, attended the monthly meeting of Pine Wood; we had a large meeting of Friends and others, and I hope our sitting together might be said to be a time of comfort and encouragement to the feeble-minded; the concerns of the meeting for discipline appeared to go heavily forward, for want of a more lively zeal being manifested, to assist the clerk by properly speaking to matters that were before the meeting.

First-day, attended Beech Spring meeting, at which were many not in profession with Friends, amongst whom there appeared much openness to receive what was communicated, and the meeting separated under a degree of solemnity.

Wainsville has been uppermost with me when out of meetings, sometimes in meetings, much of late; I dare not try to get from under the distressing feelings it occasions, until help is sent from the Divine source of comfort: what would I not give, were it possible I could realize the return of the Fourth-day morning before I left Springborough, with the information I received at Richmond relative to the meeting at Wainsville! but how merciful is my heavenly Father, who does not bring it against me as a sin, but as an act of great unwatchfulness on my part!

Fourth-day morning, attended Little River meeting, and the next day, attended Symond's Creek meeting; we had the company of many not of our religious Society, in whose minds I was led to fear there was not much openness to receive what was offered; and yet the necessity being felt to labour as ability was afforded, I found there would be no way for me to secure that peace which only can sustain the soul, but by being faithful, and leaving all to the Divine disposal.

Seventh-day, attended Sutton's Creek monthly meeting; the weather was severely cold, and the meeting-house being a cold comfortless place, occasioned me much suffering during the meetings, the doors being obliged to be opened the whole of the time to give sufficient light.

First-day, attended Wells meeting; the weather continuing very severe, here I also had a suffering meeting,—daylight appearing through the roof in at least twenty places, and the doors obliged to be open for light; this meeting, from a large one, is now so reduced, partly by Friends moving into the free states of Ohio and Indiana, and partly by deaths, that it is expected it must be discontinued.

Fourth-day, accompanied by my kind friend Aaron White, we had a meeting at Rich Square, notice having been given of my desire to see the members and attenders generally, the meeting was large; and Friends kept their seats more than is often the case during the time of the meeting. Here I met with a number of solid Friends, in sitting with whom I felt good satisfaction.

Fifth-day, (15th of 1st mo. 1829), we proceeded towards Virginia; and on Seventh-day attended monthly meeting at Gravelly Run, which is greatly reduced by Friends moving into the western country, and it is likely to be more so: I felt well satisfied in sitting with Friends of this monthly meeting, some of whom are to be felt for, as they have to come forty miles to attend their monthly meeting.

First-day, attended meeting here: some not in profession with Friends gave us their company; it proved to me an exercising, trying meeting. In the evening we had a quiet religious opportunity in a Friend's family: after which, taking a retrospect of the proceedings of this day, before I retired to rest, feelings of gratitude and praise to the great Author of all that is truly good, were in mercy the clothing of my mind.

Third-day, attended Stanton's meeting: a considerable body of Friends, I was informed, once composed this meeting, but now it consists of only two families; these have since that time removed into the western country, and the meeting-house is shut up.

The next day, attended meeting at Black Creek; many not of our Society gave us their company.



Fifth-day, attended Johnson's meeting: and on Seventh-day, the monthly meeting for the western branch; it was long in gathering, which greatly interrupted the quiet settling of the meeting: at the close of the monthly meeting the select meeting was held, consisting of six, in the station of elders; there are now only two acknowledged ministers left in the compass of this Yearly Meeting.

First-day, attended Summerton meeting, which was large, and I humbly hope a profitable one to some of us, a season in which the lukewarm and indifferent were laboured with.

Second-day morning, we set out on our journey to Lynchborough, a distance of about two hundred miles, and chiefly away from Friends.

Fourth-day, we took up our abode at a tavern for the night; this has been to me as trying a day as any I have had to pass through for some time; my short-coming relative to Wainsville coming before me, this thorn in the flesh goaded me sorely: this messenger of Satan was permitted to buffet me severely, and yet I durst not ask for it to be removed until my Divine Master pleased, believing it is one of the means he sees meet I should be tried with, in answer to my secret petitions to him, to humble me, and keep me in the low valley of self-nothingness, and in that entire dependence on Divine aid for the performance of every religious engagement. From the quantity of snow that had fallen, and bad roads, our poor horses were greatly fatigued; we were truly thankful when on Seventh-day night, about dark, we reached Lynchborough.

First-day, 1st of 2nd mo. 1829, attended the meeting of Friends of Lynchborough, about three miles from the town, a cold comfortless meeting-house; the meeting was long in gathering, which caused it to hold beyond its usual time, but the people remained quiet to the last; I felt well satisfied in having given up to travel thus far, at this inclement season of the year, to sit with Friends of this place, although the prospect of a succession of faithful standard-bearers was discouraging.

Second day morning, we left Lynchborough: it rained and froze, which made the prospect of our journey discouraging; but we were favoured to reach the neighbourhood of Wick's meeting, on Seventh-day evening.

First-day, the meeting was held in a Friend's house: after meeting, our kind friend Richard Jordan piloted us through the swamp, the water being very deep.

Sixth-day, attended the select quarterly meeting at Blackwater: it was to me a low trying meeting; I was led into near sympathy with the little number I met with, endeavouring to press upon them the necessity there was to keep near to the spring of Divine life in themselves, as the only way to expe-

rience preservation in their low seasons, when led to take a view of the stripped state of the church within their borders.

Seventh-day, we attended the quarterly meeting at Black River; and on First-day attended meeting for worship there; a more disorderly meeting I never attended; a great crowd of persons assembled not professing with Friends, many of whom remained outside the house during the meeting in conversation, where they made up a fire and regaled themselves. A considerable number of people of colour made a part of our company, whose good behaviour must, I think, have shamed many of the white people who were in the meeting: in the evening we had a quiet religious opportunity at our quarters.

Fourth-day, we attended meeting at Burleigh: a few not members attended.

Fifth-day, we rode to Richmond, and were kindly received by our friend Thomas Lad.

First-day, attended meeting there, which was very long in its gathering; but in time it settled down in outward quiet, and I was led humbly to hope the silence of all flesh was in degree known by not a few of our company. A visit to the penitentiary had a little exercised my mind, but the way had not yet opened with clearness to speak to my friends on the subject. I returned to my quarters. Fearing the result of my giving way to unnecessary discouragement, and not doing my part towards the discharge of this apprehension of religious duty, I opened my prospects to my kind friend Thomas Lad: matters were arranged for my proceeding to the house of the superintendent of the prison, who kindly granted my request; the prisoners, about one hundred and fifty in number, were assembled. Great quietness was manifested on the part of the prisoners, and I was favoured to leave the prison with feelings of gratitude to my great Almighty Master, who had in mercy been a present help to me in the needful time.

Second-day morning, we rode to Cedar Creek, and on Fourth-day, attended the select quarterly meeting: if my feelings were correct, there is yet left in this meeting those who are preferring the cause of truth and righteousness to every other thing.

Fifth-day, attended the quarterly meeting for discipline, which is reduced to a very few.

Sixth-day, we returned to Richmond.

Seventh-day morning, being brought under apprehensions of duty to attempt to hold a meeting in the place of religious worship, built on the ground where the theatre had stood, which was destroyed by fire some years ago; on informing my friend Thomas Lad thereof, as the place was the property of the Episcopalians, it appeared best to apply to the bishop; therefore, accompanied by my companion and a son of my landlord's, we proceeded to the house of the bishop, by whom we were kindly

received After he had made a few inquiries relative to the time I left England, and other indifferent matters, I prefaced my business with him by presenting him my certificates, and when he returned them, I said to him nearly as follows; ‘Whenever my mind has been turned towards Richmond, it has been accompanied with a belief, that if I reached this city it would be required of me to be willing to apply for leave, to hold a meeting in the place of worship built on the ground where that theatre stood which was destroyed by fire, not then knowing to what religious sect it belonged; but understanding it was the property of the Episcopalians, I am come to throw myself upon the kindness of the bishop for his aid in the matter.’ To which he answered, “I am but an individual; it is the vestry in whom the power rests to grant such a request; I will consult the vestry to-morrow: if they should not be willing to grant the use of the church, there is a large school-room in the grave-yard, with which perhaps they would be willing to accommodate you; or there is a large room at the capitol,\* which I expect you might have for the purpose, if applied for.” I paused for awhile and found no way open in my mind that would justify me in accepting either of the two last-mentioned places, but that I must keep firm to my first prospect of religious duty, if I had any such meeting in Richmond; I therefore informed the bishop to this effect: “I have believed it was right for me thus to cast myself upon thee for help, and having now done as far as in me lies, in order that this part of my religious duty should be carried into effect, if the way does not open for my request being granted, I believe, as respects myself, the will will be accepted for the deed:” I then requested him to be so kind as to send me a note when the mind of the vestry was known. On which the bishop queried with me, “had I any prospect, if liberty should be granted me, of referring to the theatre?” I told him, if way opened for my request being granted, I was not prepared with any thing in prospect to offer there. He said his reason of putting this question to me was, that a friend of his engaged to preach for him on a Sunday afternoon, whose mind having been previously occupied with the consideration of theatrical amusements, introduced the subject in the course of his sermon; his so doing gave great offence to some who held pews, many of whom instantly leaving their seats, went out of the church, and this circumstance appeared to lay the foundation for a new theatre’s being built; for some of those who thus withdrew at that time began a subscription for the purpose, and followed it up until money was raised for the completing of one: until this circumstance occurred, they had no theatre in Richmond after the former one was consumed.

\* The capitol contains the general court-houses or offices of the State.

First-day, attended meeting there, which was small; the prospect of a succession of rightly qualified members to maintain that wholesome discipline established amongst us, is as discouraging as in any meeting I have yet attended on this continent, both as it respects male and female,—very much owing I believe to the sad effects of a too free intercourse with those out of our own religious Society. I left the meeting under a hope that what I had to offer amongst them would not all be lost; I had not daubed as with untempered mortar, but had given faithfully that which appeared to me to be the counsel of my Divine Master, whom, I hope I may say, I desire to serve with a perfect heart and a willing mind. I passed a few silent moments at the monument erected over the depository of the few mangled remains of the sufferers, when the theatre was consumed; from the various inscriptions, it appeared that seventy-three souls, including two children, were, by this disastrous circumstance, plunged into eternity, comparatively speaking, as in a moment; the consideration of which produced awful feelings in my mind, more easily felt than described; especially when I recalled to mind the manner in which they were spending their precious time, and the gaiety of disposition excited in most, if not all, by the vain pleasures that were set before their eyes, when the curtain of the night of death was thus awfully drawn over them.

Third-day, attended meeting at Wain Oak; the meeting suffered greatly owing to the disorderly manner of its gathering; the prospect here of some of the young men becoming useful members in the Society was more encouraging than is generally the case in this Yearly Meeting.

Seventh-day, attended the monthly meeting at Wain Oak; this meeting suffered from a lack of that religious energy, which is in degree the life of our meetings for discipline, and for want of which, in those who should help forward the business, more is imposed upon the clerk than meetings are at all warranted in doing.

First-day, our meeting was small, but I hope it proved to some of us a time of renewing covenant: that we may be as careful to be found keeping our covenants as we are to renew them, is the frequent fervent breathing of my soul.

Second-day, rode back to Richmond, where I found a note from the bishop, saying, he had conversed with a few of his friends, who considered it inexpedient to grant my request, but if I would use the capitol for a public meeting, he would with great pleasure attend the service. I gave the capitol a further consideration, which I found could be easily obtained, but the way not opening for me to move further in it than I had gone, the matter rested there.

Third-day, having still in my possession a few printed sheets



on theatrical amusements, headed with the query, "Why don't you go to the play?" I procured a young man to conduct me to the residences of some of those most esteemed for their piety and rightly tempered zeal for the good of others, amongst the Baptists, Presbyterians, and Methodists, and furnished each of these with some of these sheets, accompanied with this charge, "I have now done my part towards having publicity given in this city, to the salutary advice and caution these sheets of paper contain; be faithful and do thy part." I found they were well received, and where they were read over, accepted as a treasure in a needful time, when exertions were making to promote stage entertainments: thus closed my engagements at Richmond, I humbly hope under a grateful sense of the need I had, afresh to set up my Ebenezer, to the praise of Him who had helped me, and been present with me in every time of trial.

## CHAPTER XL.

FOURTH-DAY morning, 14th of 3rd mo. 1829, we rode to Jennito, and were kindly received by a Friend of that place; and on Fifth-day attended meeting there, consisting of three families; many not in profession with Friends gave us their company, and we were favoured with a quiet solid sitting together.

Seventh-day, attended Cedar Creek monthly meeting.

First-day, attended Caroline meeting, consisting of two whole families, and part of two other families; the house was nearly filled by the coming in of the neighbours. I believe there was ground to hope that what was offered was by some received gladly. Had a quiet sitting in the family before I retired to rest, and in the retrospect of having endeavoured to do my best towards a faithful discharge of this day's work, fresh cause was felt for singing the Lord's praise, who had in mercy been my stay and my staff through this day's exercise of faith and patience.

Third-day, we proceeded towards Alexandria, and reached Ferrisburgh that night; the next night we reached Ward's tavern with great difficulty, from the danger we were frequently in of being set fast in mud-holes or turned over,—the heavy falls of rain having washed the road and made such gulleys in some places as barely to leave room for our carriage to pass between them and the bank on the opposite side: on conversing with our tavern-keeper on the state of the road we had travelled, and inquiring into the cause we had not met one carriage since we left Ferrisburgh, we were informed, travellers had found it so dangerous, that the steam-boat conveyance had been considered preferable.

Fifth-day morning, after we had comfortably refreshed ourselves, we pursued our journey, but soon found we should not have to say the last part of our journey was the best; my companion appeared at times apprehensive of our not being able to get to our journey's end without some injury to our horses, carriage, or ourselves; but through the watchful care of that Almighty Power, without whose notice a sparrow falls not to the ground, we were favoured to accomplish this journey of eighty miles in three days, and reached Alexandria in safety this evening, not having seen a carriage of any kind on the road since we left Ferrisburgh. As I advanced towards Alexandria the

watchword was in mercy powerfully proclaimed in the ear of my soul, "Into whatever city or town ye enter, inquire who is worthy, there abide; go not from house to house;"—although I was well aware, that a steady, uniform attention on my part to this Divine injunction, would expose me to much suffering of mind. The family in which I was most kindly cared for when here before, as well as some other families who had been unremitting in their attention to me, had united themselves to the separatists' party in this Yearly Meeting. I thought I never felt greater need of attending to the injunction of, "Pray always; pray without ceasing,"—lest the affectionate part should be so wrought upon, as that the feet of my mind should be turned off from the sure foundation, which I soon found. I was in great danger of; our arrival in the city being quickly noised abroad, I had invitation after invitation from families, who had been amongst the most active in the separation that had taken place in the Yearly Meeting of Baltimore. Aware how generally the members of the Society at Alexandria had gone off with the Hicksites, I had, before I left Virginia, written to a Friend of Baltimore, requesting him to inform me where I could be safely housed; and having received the necessary instructions on this head, I endeavoured after holy help to be preserved firm in keeping to my quarters, notwithstanding all the importunities I had to encounter, to visit here and there amongst those who had denied the faith: however, accompanied by my companion and landlord, I called upon the amiable family with whom I had taken up my abode when here before. Our meeting appeared to be mutually trying—trying to them, as they expressed themselves, that I had changed my quarters,—and as trying to me, if not more so, on account of that which had been the cause of my being obliged so to do. I felt my mind drawn to make a visit to those individuals, who were esteemed the most pious amongst the Episcopalians, Presbyterians, Baptists, and Methodists, for the purpose of leaving with them what I could spare of the printed sheet on theatrical performances; they appeared to receive them with feelings of gratitude, and to be viewed as help sent in the time of need: the theatre in this place had been long shut up on account of repairs, and was to be opened again in a few days; much pains, I was informed, had been taken, through the public papers, to obtain a full attendance when it should be opened, by endeavouring to set forth the benefit and advantage of theatrical amusements. Something to counteract these attempts, I understood, had been in contemplation by some of the more serious part of the city, but it was not yet effected; I was led to rejoice I had yielded to these simple pointings of duty, not being aware at the time of the state of things here relative to the theatre.

First-day morning, I rejoiced that the time was come for me to

leave Alexandria; and more so, that strength had been afforded me by my Heavenly Father, to rise above the affectionate part, by withstanding the importunities of those whose spirits I could not now associate with, as it respected religious opinions,—the command having been renewedly ushered into my mind, of “Touch not, taste not, handle not, the leaven of their spirits.” Accompanied by a kind friend and his wife, we rode to the city of Washington, to sit with the four individuals in that city now with Friends; the few left at Alexandria and Washington, now make one meeting, which at present is held in a sitting-room belonging to one of this little company; two young women, not in membership with Friends sat with us: the Divine Master, who told his followers, “Lo, I am with you always,” condescended, in his mercy, to own us in our sitting together; causing feelings of gratitude, I believe, to flow in our hearts.

Second-day morning, part of a committee appointed by the last Yearly Meeting to visit the quarterly, monthly, and other meetings within the compass of this Yearly Meeting, having notified to Friends their intention to sit with such of this meeting, as had not united themselves to those who had seceded from the Society, application was made for the use of their own meeting-house, it being in the possession of the Hicksites, but it was refused; on which, application being made to the Baptists for the use of their house for the purpose, we understood it was cheerfully granted. Having yet a few sheets left of the printed paper on theatrical performances, and apprehending it would be right for me to put them in a channel to be made public, I waited on the preachers of the different religious denominations in the city, and found it was gladly received, with an assurance from them of making it public through the newspapers and other channels.

Fifth-day, part of the Yearly Meeting's committee, with the Friends of this place, also such as had been disowned, and others who had been in the practice of attending Friends' meeting, but had not united themselves to the Hicksites, met at the Baptist meeting-house; several also who had joined the separatists and other religious persuasions gave their company, the doors not being shut against any during the meeting for Divine worship: the people generally appeared solid, and I doubt not but that it was a season of profit to not a few. When the meeting for worship closed, such as had been disowned, and others who were in the practice of attending Friends' meetings, but had not united themselves with the separatists, were encouraged to remain in the house and keep their seats; a Friend on behalf of the committee informed those who remained with Friends the cause of their being thus convened, and such means were proposed for the help of those yet left with Friends as Truth appeared to dictate; the meeting separated under a humbling and thankful sense that



best help had been mercifully vouchsafed in conducting the several matters that were brought forward as important to be attended to.

First-day ; a separation having taken place here, the meeting was held in a large room offered for the use of Friends ; it was supposed that more than one hundred Friends and others were present. Second-day morning I proceeded to Baltimore.

Fourth-day, 1st of 4th mo., I proceeded to Deer Creek ; and on Fifth-day, attended Friends' meeting there ; the Hicksites keeping possession of Friends' meeting-house, the meeting is now held in a private house ; here are yet left a few solid Friends to keep up this meeting.

Sixth-day, attended meeting at Eastland ; the meeting-house being in possession of the Hicksites, the few Friends of Little Britain and Eastland are united in one meeting. Several not in profession with us gave their attendance ; I believe Friends were comforted in their sitting together.

Seventh-day, we returned to Baltimore. First-day ; both the meeting-houses in this city being in the possession of the Hicksites, Friends hold their meeting in a chapel built by a private individual, of whom it is rented, until they can build for their own accommodation ; here I found a very respectable body of Friends left ; the morning and afternoon meetings were well attended by Friends and others, and proved solid, satisfactory meetings.

Second-day, I rode to Gunpowder, accompanying a part of the Yearly Meeting's committee of men and women Friends, and took up my abode with my kind friend Thomas Scott. The Hicksites having possession of the meeting-house belonging to Friends, they had the use of the meeting-house belonging to the Methodists' Society.

Third-day, the committee and Friends of this meeting met, and they were encouraged to seek out a place to meet in for the purpose of religious worship, which, as yet, it did not appear they had strength to do, as they sometimes met with the Hicksites, at other times staid at home, and some of the young people went to the Methodist meeting ; these are some amongst many more of the sorrowful effects which this dividing spirit has produced. Friends of Gunpowder manifesting a desire to embrace the present opportunity to put in practice what had been proposed, a time was concluded upon for them to meet and consult together, as to the most suitable place for them to hold their meetings for worship in, until some more permanent situation could be provided. After meeting we rode to Baltimore.

Fifth-day, attended the week-day meeting there ; at the close of which was held the monthly meeting. Friends not having yet taken up the cases of those who are gone off with the sepa-

ratists, there was but little business ; the meeting closed under a thankful sense, that Divine support was near, to help this deeply-tried company, during the difficulties that await them. The separatists in this city, it appeared, were active in issuing their testimonies of denial against Friends, without ever attempting to visit those they thus testified against, sending their testimonies of denial by lads and coloured people, and at times throwing them into the houses of Friends. On Sixth-day, I left Baltimore.

First-day, attended meeting at Wilmington, in their new meeting-house, the Hicksites having possession of that which belongs to Friends ; the morning meeting was well attended. I rejoiced in sitting down with Friends of this meeting thus select. The afternoon meeting was larger ; several of the separatists, it was observed, had given their attendance ; the meeting closed under a grateful sense, that in this our collective capacity, we had not been forgotten by the Great Head of the militant church. I spent the evening with my kind friend Samuel Hillis, his family and scholars ; the children being collected before retiring to rest, reading commenced out of the sacred pages, closing with a time of sweet, solemn silence.

Third-day, we rode to Philadelphia, where I was again kindly received by my friend Thomas Stewardson, his wife and family. Fourth-day, attended Twelfth-street meeting, the solemnity of which was much broken in upon, through late comers-in ; before the meeting for worship separated, I found, if I did right, I must notice this disorderly proceeding. At the close of the meeting for worship the monthly meeting commenced, the business of which appeared to be conducted with much deliberation and weight.

Fifth-day, I was at Arch-street meeting, which, for a mid-week meeting, appeared well attended, and I trust it proved a season of profit to some. At the close of the meeting for worship, the preparative meeting was held ; Friends appeared to dwell under the weight of the cases of delinquency brought forward by the overseers, previous to their being reported to the monthly meeting.

Sixth-day, sat with Friends in the meeting for sufferings, which was attended by its members pretty generally, as appeared when the names were called over ; divers remarks were made, which were applicable to the present tried state of the Society and the trials that are yet expected to grow out of the schism which has taken place : I believe it may be said with reverent gratitude to the Author of all our blessings, that it was a good beginning of the Yearly Meeting, and an earnest of Divine help mercifully dispensed to us at that season.

Seventh-day morning, attended the Select Yearly Meeting, at which a large body of (may I not say in truth) solid, weighty

Friends assembled. Before the meeting separated, I informed Friends my services in this land appeared to me near coming to a close, there being no prospect of my sitting with Friends in another Yearly Meeting in this city. The meeting adjourned to the afternoon: these sittings were worthy to be had in remembrance, to the praise and glory of Israel's Shepherd, who is still in mercy condescending to evince to those who sincerely depend upon him, that he is ever watching over such for good.

First-day morning, attended Pine-street meeting, and North-street in the afternoon, whereby I escaped the crowd there was at some of the other meetings, such is the prevalency of desire to hear what the servants have to say; but how little fruit do we see in a willingness to obey the counsel of the Great Master through his servants.

Second-day, (20th of 4th mo.) the Yearly Meeting for transacting the general concerns of Society commenced: this meeting was considered large, and continued its sittings until Seventh-day, in much quiet; the several matters that came before the meeting being conducted in much harmony and solid deliberation; the young men manifested that attention to matters before the meeting, which must revive a hope in the minds of their elder brethren, that they really felt an interest in what was going forward.

First-day, attended Arch-street meeting in the morning, and Pine-street in the afternoon, which was well attended by Friends and others: it proved, I have no doubt, a comfortable meeting to many, and closed under a precious solemnity. Not feeling easy to take my horses and carriage to New York, fearing lest the separatists should seize them as common stock, as they had done property belonging to Friends of New York Yearly Meeting, I left them at Philadelphia to be disposed of, and the money to be remitted to the treasurer of the meeting for sufferings of New York Yearly Meeting.

Third-day morning, we went on board the steam-boat for New York, where we were favoured to arrive that evening, and I was again kindly received by my friend Elizabeth Bowns, and her family.

Fourth-day morning, accompanied by my kind friend William Hawkshurst, we proceeded to Long Island, and attended the adjournment of the monthly meeting of Westbury and Jericho, held at the house of John Titus; at this adjournment a testimonial of denial against Elias Hicks was produced, and twice read over with great deliberation, accompanied, I believe, with feelings of regret on the part of most present, at the necessity of the course the meeting was then about to take: after much time had been spent, and the meeting generally uniting in the propriety of what had been prepared by the committee, the clerk was ordered to sign it

on behalf of the meeting, and two Friends appointed to offer him a copy. I think I may say I never was before at a meeting, where the issuing of a testimony of denial appeared to excite so much painful sensation, or when I have witnessed more of solemnity accompanying the pause which took place, after this painful task the meeting had to perform was thus far closed.

Fifth-day morning, we returned to New York.

First-day, sat with Friends in their newly-erected meeting-house, the day being rainy the meeting was smaller than usual; we were favoured with a quiet sitting together: the afternoon meeting was pretty well attended, and I believe to many, or most, it was a time of Divine favour.

Second-day morning, attended an adjournment of the meeting for sufferings: from minutes on the book, it appears the troubles of Friends through the medium of the Hicksite party are increasing in this Yearly Meeting; but yet it was very consoling to the mind to observe Friends so preserved in meekness and resignation to their allotted portion of suffering.

Fourth-day, 6th of 5th mo. 1829, attended the monthly meeting of New York; the meeting for worship was well attended for a week-day meeting, and it was a time in which I doubt not the minds of many were favoured to know something of the Lord's preparing hand, qualifying them to enter upon the weighty concerns of the Society committed to their charge; the great load of business in consequence of the separation that had taken place in the monthly meeting, and the feelings of sorrow evidenced in the minds of many, in consequence of the necessity there was for the meeting, to draw the line of the discipline over such as were their relatives, and at one time their bosom friends, called for much sympathy.

Fifth-day, attended the monthly meeting at Flushing on Long Island, which is held in a private-house, the Hicksites keeping possession of the meeting-house of Friends; about six men and fifteen women are left with Friends in this monthly meeting; yet strength was mercifully vouchsafed to this little company, to give timely attention to the cases of those of their members who had seceded; no disposition that I could observe was manifested to shrink from the painful task allotted them by the meeting.

Seventh-day, accompanied by my late kind companion Samuel Wood, we rode to Mamaroneck, where we were kindly received by our friend Richard Mott and his wife.

First-day, attended meeting in their new meeting-house, the Hicksites keeping possession of that of Friends: about one half of the former meeting, I was informed, remain with Friends.

Fourth-day, attended Purchase meeting, held in a new meeting-house, the Hicksites having possession of that belonging to Friends;



when the meeting for worship closed, much business came before the monthly meeting, which appeared to be conducted with weight, and in the unity of the Spirit; although it was painful to observe the task many had to perform in treating with their delinquent members, yet the care that was manifested to deal tenderly by all, was very commendable.

Fifth-day morning, attended Shappaqua monthly meeting; the Hicksites having possession of Friends' meeting-house. This monthly meeting still continues large, and many solid, weighty Friends belong to it; the meeting for worship was held in a store; a great deal of business fell to the lot of this monthly meeting in consequence of the separation; but, as many hands make light work, the Friends were spared that great weight of suffering which falls to the lot of some of their brethren, where nearly the whole of the meeting is gone off from Friends.

Sixth-day, attended Amawalk monthly meeting, held at Croton, the Hicksites having possession of the meeting-house; there is yet left to this monthly meeting, a considerable number of Friends, and amongst these not a few hopeful young people: the meeting held nearly five hours, the chief business was the attending to cases of delinquency in consequence of the disaffection of many of the members of the meeting. In going through the monthly meetings of this quarterly meeting since the separation, I was much comforted in observing the agreeable change that had taken place, both in meetings for worship and discipline; there was none of that restless, disorderly conduct, which is the fruit of that spirit of insubordination which prevailed in the minds of those who have taken their flight: the quietness restored to these meetings is not easily to be described. The meeting for worship and that for discipline were seasons, in which Divine goodness in mercy condescended to extend His arm of all-sufficient help, whereby Friends were comforted together, and afresh encouraged to renew their covenants. Before the closing minute was read, desires were feelingly expressed by different Friends, that it might be a day long remembered by them.

First-day, attended the meeting at Peekskill, which was held in a Friend's house, the Hicksites having possession of the meeting-house. Many of the serious, respectable inhabitants gave us their company; the meeting was conducted in much quiet, and, I believe, it proved a time of comfort and encouragement to seeking minds.

Second-day morning, we rode to Poughkeepsie, and had a meeting with the few Friends left there; many not in profession with our religious Society attended: my mind being relieved from the exercise I was under when entering the house, I said, it is enough, and as much as the poor, unworthy instrument has any (if any) claim to look for.

Third-day, we rode to Pleasant-valley, where there still re-

mains one family and a few individuals with Friends; those remaining at Poughkeepsie and this place, now unite in making up one meeting. Having felt drawings in my mind to sit with Friends there; on our arrival I was informed the Hicksites, hearing of my intentions, came forward, and informed Friends, the doors of the meeting-house would be open for me; as no other place could be found so suitable, Friends gave notice of the meeting to be held there this evening. At first hearing of this circumstance, I felt placed in a trying situation; but notice having been given, and it being late in the day, and considering that the house was the property of Friends and not of the Hicksites, my mind settled down quietly under this unexpected circumstance. The meeting was largely attended by those of other societies, also by many of the Hicksites: it was conducted with much quiet, and was, I hope, profitable to some present.

Fifth-day, attended monthly meeting at Creek, which was held in their commodious new meeting-house, the Hicksites having possession of Friends' former meeting-house. Although this meeting has experienced a great stripping, yet it was an encouraging prospect to behold, how the hands of the few left were strengthened for the labour, which had fallen, and would fall to their lot, as respects their backsliding brethren, unless they seasonably return.

Sixth-day, attended the monthly meeting for Nine Partners, held in one of the school-rooms,—the Hicksites having possession of Friends' meeting-house. Friends here are greatly reduced, and, it would seem, almost ready to cast away the shield of faith, as if it had never been anointed, and to sink under their varied discouragements, and the perplexing and trying circumstances in which they are, and yet may be, involved through the Hicksites' party; who are annoying, in every way they possibly can, the Yearly Meeting's institution here, for the education of the youth. I have not attended a monthly meeting of this Yearly Meeting, which had a greater claim on the sympathy, and needed more the help of their friends: encouragement was held out to the few faithful members left in this meeting, that they might be willing to make use of the little strength they had, as the only way to know an increase.

Seventh-day, 23d of 5th mo., 1829, attended the first sitting of the select Yearly Meeting of New York, which was large, considering the mournful schism which had taken place within its borders. Apprehending my services amongst Friends on this continent were nearly brought to a close, I felt it right for me to inform the meeting to that effect.

First-day, Friends occupied the usual meeting-room and basement story; both of which meetings were well attended and quietly conducted. Second-day, the Yearly Meeting for transacting the general concerns of the Society commenced, which was

held in the basement-story, the women occupying the meeting-house. The men's meeting was large: divers testimonies were borne to the goodness of the Lord, in thus again permitting us to sit down together, free from that spirit of contention and tumult with which aforetime these meetings had been tried. The Yearly Meeting continued by adjournments from day to day until Seventh-day, when it closed under a very precious solemnity, which favour not being at our command, feelings of gratitude for the same were evidently the clothing of our minds.

First-day, our morning and afternoon meetings were attended by many serious persons not in profession with Friends, and they were owned by the good presence of the Great Head of the church, Christ Jesus.

Second-day, the 1st of 6th mo., I left New York, and went on board the steam-boat for Newport on Rhode Island, in New England. Fifth-day, attended meeting; the morning being wet, the meeting was small. First-day, attended the meeting of Friends held on this island; it was large, and was attended by persons not in profession with our religious Society: it proved a quiet, solemn meeting. Second-day morning, we crossed another ferry, about two miles over; the weather being very foggy, crossing these ferries appeared rather a formidable thing. Fourth-day, attended the week-day meeting, held at Weston; a considerable number not in profession with Friends, gave us their company.

First-day, this meeting was attended by many not in profession with our Society, whose solid and weighty deportment, manifested somewhat of a sense of the importance of the great duty of thus coming together; I felt well satisfied that my lot had been cast amongst Friends of this meeting. Fifth-day, walked to South Kingston, and attended the mid-week meeting there; this is a small meeting of Friends, but being attended by many not in membership, we had a considerable gathering; my faith being at a very low ebb, I found it hard work to rise upon my feet, and attempt to obtain relief for my exercised mind; the meeting settled down in quiet, under which we were favoured to separate. Sixth-day morning, I returned to Newport, and the next day rode to Portsmouth, to attend the select Yearly Meeting held there: here I met with my countryfolks, George and Ann Jones. In the afternoon I attended the meeting for sufferings; divers subjects of importance were weightily considered.

First-day, attended meeting at Portsmouth; the number of carriages and horses at the meeting-house at an early hour was great; the house soon became crowded with Friends and others, very many were obliged to remain out of doors for want of room in the house; through the prudent care of the door-keepers, the meeting was held very much in quiet, compared with what was the case the preceding year; and although the meeting held

long, yet the people quietly kept their seats until the close. The afternoon meeting was also very large, and was preserved in quiet; from testimonies that were borne by divers Friends, and the language of supplication and thanksgiving which was uttered, there was good cause for encouraging a hope, that it would prove a day of renewed visitation to some of our numerous company.

Second-day, 15th of 6th mo., Friends met at Newport, when the Yearly Meeting for the general concerns of the Society for New England commenced; and after adjourning from day to day, closed its sittings on Fifth-day evening.

Seventh-day, attended monthly meeting at Westport, which was large, a number of hopeful young people making a part of it. In the afternoon I visited a Friend, a minister, who had long remained at home under great depression of mind. I endeavoured, in as tender a way as possible, to rouse him, believing discouragement was the chief cause which had deprived his friends of his company at their meeting: viewing the sorrowful situation this dear friend had slidden into, strong cries were raised in my heart to the Lord to be preserved from thus giving way, whatever sufferings of body my getting out to meetings might expose me to.

First-day morning, attended meeting at New Bedford: the afternoon meeting was large; the calming influence of Divine love was mercifully extended towards us; I hope it proved a profitable meeting to some. Third-day, attended the select preparative meeting, which was small; a good degree of concern was manifested for the welfare of this part of the body, and the meeting closed under a feeling of thankfulness for the comfortable quiet which had been spread over us. Fourth-day, having a prospect of attending the monthly meeting of Nantucket, and the wind continuing contrary for the packets to return, both of which were on the Nantucket side, I felt tried lest I should not be able to reach in time for the monthly meeting: under these discouraging prospects, a hope at times would cross my mind, that the way would yet open for me to reach the island in due time. I set out to make a few morning calls, but had not proceeded far from my quarters, before a Friend came in search of me, with the unexpected information, a small sloop would sail for Nantucket in about half an hour: although I would rather have chosen a larger vessel, I feared the consequences of refusing this opportunity. The wind had been very tempestuous, in consequence of which the ocean was greatly agitated, and our vessel being small, her bow frequently pitched deep into the water, whereby we were much tossed to and fro; but we were favoured to land safely in the evening.

Fifth-day, attended the week-day meeting, in the south meeting-house; at the close of which was held the monthly meeting for the south and north district, there now being only one monthly meeting on this island. It being known to some Friends



in the monthly meeting, that there was an aged man present, formerly a resident on the island, who had joined the Hicksites in the state of New York, request was made that the meeting should be select; this request was made again and again without effect; at last he stood up, saying, he supposed he was the person alluded to, pleading his right to sit that meeting; yet he informed Friends if it was the mind of the majority of the meeting he would quit. Many Friends stood up and requested him so to do, but it soon became manifest that he had already made a party on the island, who favoured his principles; these pleaded for his remaining in the monthly meeting; but Friends continued to urge his leaving it, which he now refused to do, finding he had a party in the meeting to support him in staying: Friends, not being willing to resort to force, adjourned until the afternoon, requesting the door-keepers to keep the meeting select. Friends were fearful he would have given them trouble at the ensuing quarterly meeting; but finding he could make so little way with Friends here, he left the island. If Friends had not thus stood firm against his sitting in the meeting, as they did, it is probable, as the Hicksites have threatened to try their strength in this Yearly Meeting, (saying, Nantucket was their strong-hold,) they would have been encouraged to have made a beginning on this island to effect their evil designs on the Society.

First-day morning, attended the south meeting, and in the afternoon the north meeting, which last was large for an afternoon meeting; both of these meetings, I hope it may be acknowledged, were profitable seasons to some of us.

Fourth-day, attended the quarterly select meeting; it was to me a low, trying time, the harp continuing, through the whole of the meeting; as on the willows. Fifth-day, the quarterly meeting for the general concerns of the Society commenced; the meeting for worship was attended by a considerable number of those not in profession with Friends; the meeting for discipline was quietly conducted, Friends appearing to move along harmoniously in the business.

Sixth-day morning, 4th of 7th mo., went on board one of the packets, in company with divers other Friends, and after a passage of ten hours, we landed at New Bedford.

First-day, attended meeting at Allen's-neck; I would gladly have proceeded for New York, but I feared omitting this meeting; the day being wet, the meeting was smaller than usual. If any service fell to my lot this day, it was to labour with an individual present, who had been favoured with a precious Divine visitation, and had given proof to his friends of having joined in with it, by running well for a time, and manifesting by his conduct that there had been a giving in his name to follow Christ; but he had broken his goodly resolutions, and his conduct bespoke a lan-

guage, as if he repented of what had been done. I endeavoured to lay before him the sorrowful state into which he had fallen, both as it respected his own soul's salvation, and the influence which his example might have over others, and earnestly beseeched him to be willing to stand resigned to renew his covenant with the Lord his God, if so be the lengthened mercy of Divine grace still awaited his acceptance. I found it very hard work to obtain full relief to my own mind on this very gloomy subject. After the meeting closed, a Friend informed me, that an individual, who sat in the gallery near me, who was once an approved minister, but had lost his standing, had swerved into a contentious spirit, and had become tinctured with the Hicksite principles.

Third-day, I proceeded to Providence, where I was kindly received again by my hospitable friend Moses Brown. Fourth-day, attended meeting at the school, and the day following I attended the usual meeting held there, which was small; the meeting separated under a covering of solemnity, which is very precious when we are favoured with it. Seventh-day, I went on board the steam-boat for New York, which place we reached early on First-day morning. I sat with Friends in this city this morning; the meeting was very large, as was the case also with the afternoon meeting; the quietness restored to Friends in these meetings is, I believe, felt as a fresh cause for gratitude.

Second-day afternoon, attended a burial: the Hicksites having taken possession of the burial-ground, Friends were obliged to apply to them for leave to inter the body; several of them attended at the house and grave-side, but no interruption took place from their preachers, although there were one or more present.

Fourth-day, attended the monthly meeting of Westbury and Jericho, held at John Titus's; although these two meetings have been so stripped as to make it necessary to unite them into one monthly meeting, yet there still appears to be a respectable number of well-concerned Friends to support the meeting: in the evening we returned to New York.

Sixth-day morning, I left New York, by steam-boat, for Burlington, in New Jersey. First-day morning; I had often been led to sympathize with the few Friends left at Bristol, deprived as they have been by the followers of Elias Hicks, of their meeting-house; but the way never clearly opened in my mind before this morning to sit with them. Accompanied by my kind friend Samuel Emlen, we crossed the river Delaware, and proceeded to a farm-house on the banks of another river, where the meeting of Friends of Bristol is now held: the number in attendance at the meeting was considerable, many not professing with Friends making a part of our company. I hope I was not out of my place in yielding to this apprehended duty. We had intended, being at the afternoon meeting at Burlington in due time; but

when we reached the ferry, the boat was on the other side of the river, and having to wait its return, we were not able to accomplish our object until half an hour after the time of meeting; but being conscious we had done our best for a timely attendance, we went into meeting.

Second-day, in company with several Friends, I went on board the steam-boat for Philadelphia, where my friend Thomas Stewardson and his family received me again with their usual kindness. Third-day, attended North-street preparative meeting, which, after a time of close exercise, I was favoured to leave with a peaceful mind.

Fourth-day, attended Twelfth-street monthly meeting, and the next day Arch-street preparative meeting: cases of delinquency for joining the Hicksites were produced, which obtained much weighty deliberation before they were ordered to go forward to the monthly meeting. My mind had for some time past been exercised with apprehensions that it would be required of me, before I left this continent, to attempt a visit to the state-prison in the city, also the House of Refuge; but the way not clearly opening for it until now, I consulted a few Friends on the subject, and they undertook to make arrangements for the visits to take place on the morrow.

First-day morning, accompanied by my kind friend Thomas Stewardson and Philip Garrett, we proceeded to the state-prison; on entering it, some persons were in conversation in the centre room, one of whom was expressing himself with great warmth to the keeper: from what I heard while sitting in an inner room, the person so expressing himself had come to the prison under the same views with myself, and being refused the liberty of seeing the prisoners, was offended: I felt not a little for the man. We were shown to the place set apart for religious worship; the prisoners (about three hundred) were then assembled: the meeting was orderly conducted, and when it closed the prisoners quietly departed, and placed themselves about the yard. I gave them each my hand, most of whom appeared to receive it affectionately. In the afternoon we attended the House of Refuge, where we met with about eighty-four males and twenty-five females; the managers appeared to manifest a lively interest in the welfare of the institution: earnest were my desires that they might not grow weary in a steady attention to this good work, in which they were thus engaged. The children were assembled in a room set apart as a place of worship: the quiet, orderly sitting of both sexes did great credit to the managers. This, I understood, was the first meeting Friends had had in this institution.

Second-day morning, (26th of 7th mo. 1829,) Friends from all the Yearly Meetings on this continent (except one,) assembled at Arch-street meeting-house, as a committee to take into their

consideration the general state of the Society ; from the weighty deliberation with which the subjects were entered upon, and the harmony which prevailed, I considered it a favour to have had the privilege of being present on the occasion.

Third-day, attended North-street meeting, which was large. Fourth-day morning, attended Pine-street meeting ; after the meeting for worship, the monthly meeting was held : these meetings were owned by the Great Master, and proved, I doubt not, times of comfort and consolation to drooping minds.

Fifth-day, sat with the meeting of conference, in which I was comforted under a sense that we were yet favoured, as a Society, with an evidence, that the Lord our God has not forgotten to be gracious to us, but is still offering his aid in rebuilding the waste places, and repairing the breaches which sin has made in our walls.

Seventh-day morning, (1st of 8th mo.) after taking an affectionate leave of my kind friend Thomas Stewardson and family, with many other Friends who felt very near to me, I went on board the steam-boat for New York ; where we were favoured to arrive safely that evening.

The new penitentiary of Sing Sing had for a long time so fastened on my mind, that I found I must now do my part toward a visit to the prisoners there, otherwise I believe the way will not clearly open for my departure from this land on Seventh-day next, as I have been in hopes of doing, on my voyage to my own country. To effect this, I found it was necessary for me this evening to exert myself, and call in all the help I could muster from my friends. My kind friends Samuel Wood and William Waring exerted themselves as far as they could in the city for that purpose ; but it appeared, if liberty to make the visit was to be obtained, it rested very much with the governor of Sing Sing, which was thirty miles from New York : there was then the uncertainty, when we reached there, of being allowed the privilege of seeing the prisoners ; but as I could see no way for me, but to make every effort for its accomplishment, and my said friends kindly offering to accompany me, we proceeded, on First-day morning, for Sing Sing ;—this day appearing to me the most suitable time to see prisoners, who are on other days occupied in labour. On our reaching the penitentiary, and entering the house of the governor, he received us with attention ; we had procured a letter of introduction from a person of some account in the city of New York. When the governor had read the letter, and heard from me my errand, he told us the time of their worship had been over an hour and a half ; and according to their usual practice, it being the only day the officers and keepers of the prison could be at home with their families, and attend their own meetings, they were discharged from their duty, and the prisoners were locked up in their



cells, until the return of the keepers in the evening. This seemed to foreclose all expectations of my seeing the prisoners, yet I thought I felt as if the governor had expressed himself with feelings of regret. I was not a little tried in my mind, but I could not see I had overstayed my time at Philadelphia, and how I could have attended earlier than I had done, I did not see; but trying to keep in the quiet, a ray of hope sprang up in my mind, with a caution, not easily to abandon my prospect of duty. After a while, it appeared to me the next expedient I must try was, to inquire of the governor if any time the next day could be allowed for me to have a meeting with the prisoners, adding, we should be willing to wait such time as might be thought the most suitable. On my putting this question to him, he made a pause, and then replied, it was a serious thing to stop five hundred men from their labour for an hour; adding, but it may not be time lost: they shall not, therefore, return to their work after breakfast, and if we would come to the prison about eight o'clock next morning, he would have the prisoners assembled in the galleries,—a chapel not yet having been erected for the purpose of Divine worship. Matters being thus arranged, we hired a small vessel to take us across the Croton Bay, to the house of the widow of Robert Underhill, where we took up our abode for the night.

Second-day morning, the sons of our kind landlady took us over the Croton Bay, accompanying us to the prison; a short time after our arrival there, we were informed the prisoners were ready to receive us: upwards of five hundred were collected in four galleries, two on our right hand and two on our left; a large platform stood in the centre, on which seats were placed for us; these galleries, we understood, were well constructed for hearing, when they are all assembled for worship. The prisoners stood in great order, and after a suitable pause, in fear and trembling I rose on my feet, beseeching my Divine Master to preserve me from uttering a word, unless given me by him, that might have a tendency in the least degree to prove a wound in any mind, which was in the way to be healed soundly without instrumental interference. I had anticipated having opposition to contend with in the minds of some of the prisoners, but such feelings as these were not manifested, or at least a sense was not given me of it, if such were the case; and I felt nothing but openness to receive what I had to communicate; quietness prevailed until notice was given for the prisoners to retire. After the opportunity was over, the governor acknowledged he never before had observed the prisoners manifest so much attention to what was communicated. I felt truly thankful this engagement was, I hope, well got through: I would gladly have given the prisoners my hand, but fearing lest I should exceed the bounds of the liberty which

had been granted me, I reluctantly restrained my inclination in this respect, as it would have been attended with considerable difficulty, from the manner of their retiring again. The governor afterwards took us over this truly admirable institution for reclaiming those who have offended against the laws of their country: this evidently appeared to be the chief thing he aimed at; and as far as human means are likely to prove availing to this desirable end, I never have yet met with any thing that to me appeared so likely to effect it. I had no idea of danger from being encompassed by more than five hundred prisoners in one place, many of whom, it was to be supposed, had been as abandoned characters as the state could produce, and who were free from all that restraint which chains, fetters, and handcuffs might in degree have effected. There appeared such an air of confidential authority throughout the establishment, and unaccompanied by anything like terror or dread when the governor came in sight, (although he is absolute,) that I felt as secure in walking amongst them, as I possibly could have done had they all been free men, and working for a master from whom they expected to receive pay at night for the labour they had been performing. In going through this establishment, I was agreeably struck with the uniform cleanliness of the persons and linen of the prisoners: their decent garb was free from those badges of disgrace, which I had observed in other prisons on this continent and on the continent of Europe; their generally healthy appearance, but above all their countenances, (which are said to be an index to the mind,) without exception, as far as our observations went, manifested freedom from any thing like a ferocious, morose, resentful disposition, on account of the discipline they were under. The profound silence observed in every part whilst the prisoners were at work, was very striking: they are not allowed to hold any kind of communication with each other, however slight or transient, from the time they enter the prison to the expiration of the term of their confinement: to prevent conversation, becomes a great part of the business of the overseers, who are men of character and known to be trusty, and who are constantly in attendance upon the prisoners when out of their cells; and so rigidly is this silence observed by the prisoners, that if one prisoner has a tool which another is in want of, he is not allowed to ask his fellow-prisoner for it, either by words or by signs, but must apply to the overseer, who is to act as the middle-man. Each of the prisoners has a separate cell, about seven feet long, and about seven feet high, and of sufficient width, having an iron door, the grating of which is large enough to admit of light to read at the farthest end of the cell; a good-sized window being opposite every cell-door: the cell is ventilated by a square hole in the ceiling, communicating with a sort of chimney, which runs up to the roof of the building: in

summer the windows being kept open, air is admitted to the prisoners in their cells, and in winter the building is, we were informed, made comfortably warm. A good-sized Bible hangs up in each cell for their use, but no other books, we understood, were furnished,—the governor considering the Bible to be the most suitable book for them; and although at the moment I rather regretted they were not indulged with a greater variety of religious reading, yet on hearing the reasons given for these restrictions, I was afterwards fully convinced the judgment of the governor in this respect is correct. The building now erected will accommodate eight hundred prisoners, the whole of which has been built by the prisoners themselves, who are now preparing to build workshops in addition to carpenters', tailors', and smiths' shops already in use. Watchmen are placed on the different landings during the night, to prevent any communication amongst the prisoners; these watchmen are furnished with shoes made of wash-leather, whereby their movements cannot be ascertained by the prisoners whilst they are on their duty, which gives them an opportunity of hearing the faintest attempt at communication made by one prisoner to another. We were requested to stay to see the prisoners take their dinner, which I gladly accepted, for I thought I could willingly have passed the whole day in the establishment, so fully convinced was my mind, that reform, not punishment, was the great object in the discipline laid down, and thus rigidly enforced. On notice being given by a bell, the prisoners ceased from their work, and arranged themselves in order to march, not two and two, but one behind the other, to prevent the slightest opportunity of communication: they were attended by their overseers to a window, where, by a sort of machine, as they approached this window, their dinner was handed to them, which each man taking, went directly into his cell. After all were served, which was completed in about twenty minutes, each man was locked in his cell to eat his meal, which consisted of boiled pease, about six ounces of pork or beef, and about the same quantity of Indian corn and rye bread, with water to drink. At breakfast they had the same food, but rye-coffee sweetened with molasses; at night Indian meal boiled thick with water and molasses: their provision, although coarse, appeared amply sufficient; their persons manifested no lack of food. When the prisoners were all secured in their cells, a horn was blown to give notice to the few centinels that were on duty on the top of the rock (about five or six in number) to get their own meals; by the time the prisoners were allowed to take their meals, the sentinels returned, and blew a horn, to notify to the keepers they were all at their posts; when the cells were unlocked the prisoners, attended as before by their overseers, marched to their work again. In visiting the hospital, out of five hundred and twenty prisoners, there were but five confined there; some of these

were injured through accidents at their work. But what appeared to us the most extraordinary of all was, there not being any fence whatever to enclose this establishment; the whole was open to the river on one side, and the surrounding country and rock on the other: on the rock were stationed a few sentinels under arms, which to me was the only unpleasant circumstance in the establishment, whose orders, we were informed, were that if any of the prisoners were observed by the sentinels to attempt their escape, to hail them, and then, if they persisted, to fire; only one instance, we were informed, had occurred of the loss of life in consequence of attempting to escape. The only punishment in use for offences is a small whip of about six cords, each cord about the thickness of a child's finger, but no knots at the end of any of the cords, only the ends bound round with a piece of thread to prevent their untwisting; twelve strokes on the bare back are inflicted for the first offence, and for the next offence it is doubled, but the governor informed us a repetition of this punishment has not often been necessary; for although it is not remembered that the skin of any of the prisoners who have undergone this punishment, has been broken by it, yet one of the prisoners who had been in the army, and suffered the punishment inflicted therein, and had undergone this punishment, acknowledged, for the time it lasted, the effects of this punishment in the prison, was harder to bear. On leaving this interesting establishment, I could acknowledge that the one-half of the order and management of it had not before been told me. We parted from the governor, Captain Lynes, much gratified by his frankness of disposition and unremitting attention, and returned in the evening to New York.

Third-day, I went on board the *Silas Richards*, Captain Holdrich, master, bound for Liverpool, believing I might now with safety secure a passage in her: I made an agreement with the owners not to be a contributor towards the spirits and wine drank on board, which I found, if I acted agreeably to the convictions of my own mind, I must do, or take my passage in the steerage; for I had been a painful witness of the unbounded liberty given to passengers on board these packets of drinking to great excess, in consequence of a certain sum being charged for the passage, wine and spirits being included, with liberty to call for what they like, and when they like.

Fourth-day, sat with Friends in their monthly meeting, which was chiefly occupied in attending to the various cases of delinquency that came before it, in consequence of the separation.

Fifth and Sixth days were occupied in taking leave of Friends in this city, and preparing for my departure.

Seventh-day morning, 8th of 8th mo. 1829, accompanied by my kind and attentive landlady, Elizabeth Bowns, her daughter Sarah



Minturn, and her grandsons, Robert Bowns and Robert Minturn; my late kind companion Samuel Wood and daughter, and divers other Friends, after an affectionate and long farewell of each other, I went on board the steam-boat, which was to take us down to the packet. There were only five cabin-passengers besides myself, but a great number of steerage-passengers; the captain kindly accommodated me with a large state-room. Before we had made much way, a severe storm of thunder, lightning, and rain arose, after which the air was more cool and temperate; we sailed with a wind, which, had it continued, it was expected would have taken us to Liverpool in about twenty days; but we were so frequently becalmed, and had a head-wind to contend with, that our expectations in this respect were frustrated. On taking a pilot on board, he informed us there had been the most severe storm on the Irish coast that had been known for several years; many vessels had been wrecked and lost: this information afresh excited in my mind thankfulness that our first prospect of a quick passage had been frustrated; for had we made our passage agreeably to our first calculation, the probability was, we should have been in the very mouth of it.

Seventh-day afternoon, after a passage of twenty eight days, I was released from the society of two as wicked men—cabin-passengers, as I ever before had been in company with, and I set my feet on one of the docks in Liverpool, where I was kindly received by Thomas and Frances Thompson and other Friends.

Fourth-day, I went by coach to Sheffield; and on Seventh-day, proceeded by coach to London.

First-day, attended Gracechurch-street meeting, and a burial at Bunhill-fields, where I met with a mournful company round the grave-side of a young woman, whose removal had been sudden and unexpected to her parents. After which a kind young friend drove me down to Tottenham, where I found my dear wife and children, favoured with health. We mutually enjoyed each other's society again, after my absence from home of three years and one month. May I never forget the multiplied mercies of my Divine Care-taker, amidst the many perils and dangers, to which I have been exposed; but above all, in that He was pleased to hear and answer my daily petitions to him to preserve me out of the hands of men of unsound principles, who, I had good ground for believing, were watching for opportunities to ensnare me; and in that the retrospect affords a consoling evidence, through adorable mercy and preservation, that nothing of an offensive nature have they justly to lay to my charge. Oh! may I in future be found walking worthy of these unmerited favours, saith my soul!

## CHAPTER XLI.

IN the year 1830, apprehending I was called upon by my Divine Master, to bring more generally into view some parts of the Address, I had believed it required of me to issue a few years back, to our own religious Society, I endeavoured to know this subject properly matured, and when I believed this was the case, a care was on my mind to be favoured to see the right time for me to engage in it: believing this time was fully come, I earnestly besought the Lord for help, to select such parts and make such additions as would be in accordance with His holy will. Having, as I apprehended, been enabled to do the needful in this respect, and put it into the hands of a friend for revision, in the year 1831, it was printed for circulation as follows:—

“AN AFFECTIONATE ADDRESS TO ALL WHO ARE MAKING A PROFESSION OF THE CHRISTIAN NAME, MORE ESPECIALLY TO THOSE WHO, IN THEIR RESPECTIVE NEIGHBOURHOODS, ARE SETTING THE GOOD EXAMPLE OF A REGULAR ATTENDANCE AT A PLACE OF RELIGIOUS WORSHIP.

“In the first place let me put you in mind of the nature and importance of our taking upon ourselves this profession, this name of Christ, which demands of us, that through his holy help we depart from iniquity: ‘Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity,’ (2 Tim. ii. 19,) by living, acting, and moving in all our civil, as well as religious engagements, under the influence and government of the Spirit of Christ Jesus, our Lord and Lawgiver; that whether we eat, drink, or whatsoever we do, God may in all things be glorified. (1 Cor. x. 31.)

“Christ must become the chief corner-stone of our building, our fundamental principle; therefore let us well consider how far the general tenour of our conduct, corresponds with this profession; how far we are each earnestly endeavouring to be found in all things conformable to the example and precepts of this great and holy pattern of all Christian perfection,—of Him who has trod the path of temptation and trial before us, but rejected

every snare of the enemy. Should this not be the case with us, is there not a danger, from our example, to the less concerned part of mankind, who, watching our progress in the Christian course with a jealous eye, will have to consider us like the evil spies to the children of Israel, and thus receive, through our lukewarm profession, discouragements, and hinderances; instead of being attracted to a pursuit of the prize, by our more obvious faithfulness? 'Be ye holy, for I the Lord your God, am holy.' (Deut. xix. 2.) 'Be ye perfect even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.' (Matt. v. 48.)

"Let us remember, that however we may be at peace with ourselves by thus professing, but not doing, the best in our power to attain this perfect stature of the Christian, that whatever our name or denomination as to religion may be, we are but branding ourselves with the odious character of hypocrites in the estimation of the more irreligious part of mankind: and let us call to mind, that the sad effects of this dissembling will not end here; for if this mode of conduct be persisted in, we must expect that we shall incur the woe pronounced by our blessed Lord; 'Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.' (Matt. xxiii. 13.) If every one that nameth the name of Christ is to depart from iniquity, is it not in an especial manner obligatory on all who are making a profession of Christianity, to endeavour to attain to a state of purity of conduct and converse amongst men?

"In addition to the declarations of holy men of old, handed down to us through the medium of the Sacred Writings, I believe that the first reformers were also raised up in their day to bear testimony to the sufficiency of that divine principle of light and life in all mankind, through Jesus Christ, which would direct them to the heavenly Canaan, and strengthen them to walk in obedience thereunto; these confirming the truth of their testimony by the general tenour of their conduct; giving ample proof to even the more careless, that through submission to its holy appearance in their hearts and minds, they were mercifully redeemed from the world and its spirit—not only from its pleasures, but also from its profits—and were enabled to count all things appertaining to this life but as dross and as dung, so that they might win Christ. (Phil. iii. 8.) Thereby they became as an ensign to the nations; and were, I doubt not, made preciously instrumental in the Divine hand, to awaken others, and gather souls unto God.

"But, alas! my professing Christian brethren, of every denomination, is there not cause, in this day, to take up the lamentation against us and say: 'How has the gold become dim, and the most fine gold changed?' How is the love of God, and that hu-

mility and self denial formerly so manifest, now, by many professing the Christian name, exchanged for the love of other things—the pleasures and treasures of this world, and an eager desire to make an appearance of greatness amongst men! That this sorrowful change has taken place, and is increasingly so amongst the professed followers of a meek and humble Redeemer, cannot be denied—cannot be controverted.

“ Yet, notwithstanding the siftings that have of late years so frequently occurred, relative to our commercial concerns as a nation, there is reason to fear that many have not profited by the things they have had for a time to endure, whilst sailing on the unstable ocean of commerce. Although they have seen, with clearness, the instability of all mundane concerns, the utter uncertainty of them, and the necessity of seeking after durable riches and righteousness, yet they have lost sight of these again when a season of calm has succeeded the heavy gales they had to endure, and the danger that threatened. Thus they had become ‘ like unto a man who beholding his natural face in a glass, goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.’ (James, i. 23, 24.) For want of abiding under these renewed visitations of the great Head of the Church, how evident is it that we soon forget again our own deformities, and are thus in danger of adding sin to sin.

“ Do not these things loudly call upon all professing Christians, to be individually willing to enter timely into the closet of the heart, and seek for divine help to shut the door thereof against carnal reasoning, the unsanctified use of great acquirements, and the love of the world, which there is cause to fear has overpowered the better judgment of many of the well-disposed amongst the different professors of Christianity? Hereby, as we become willing to stand open to Divine conviction, we may be favoured each one to see in what manner and how far we may have contributed to this sorrowful declension, and timely amend our ways and our doings; seeing we are yet mercifully followed as a nation, immediately, by the great Head of the Church, Christ Jesus, the sent of the Father, in his spiritual appearance on our souls; in order, that through a willingness on our parts to become subject to his all-controlling power and government, he might redeem us from all iniquity; and also, instrumentally, with line upon line, line upon line. Oh! how applicable is the language of the Most High, (formerly uttered,) to his dealings as respects this our highly-favoured nation: ‘ How shall I give thee up, Ephraim? How shall I deliver thee, Israel? How shall I make thee as Admah? How shall I set thee as Zeboim?’ (Hosea, xi. 8.)—cities that were overthrown for their rebellion. Then how can we magnify that mercy and long-suffering which has hitherto spared us? Must it not be by un-



reserved obedience to the dictates of the Holy Spirit, in our daily walks through life ?

“ May we no longer, as professing Christians, be found walking unworthy of these multiplied mercies, but be prevailed upon to return to the good old ways ; that we may also be found in those paths of holiness of life and conversation, in which the holy men of old, and first reformers walked, even under sore travail of mind and suffering of body, waste of their outward substance, and persecution unto death. Oh ! let us be no longer trampling upon their testimonies, by slighting the many great and gracious privileges of this day of outward ease, free from the dangers and persecutions our forefathers were exposed to, and unmolested as it respects our various religious tenets ; lest, if we still continue refusing to yield our necks to the same precious yoke of Christ, which they took upon them, and will not cast away from us those things which have led into captivity to the world, to its spirit, its maxims, its manners, and deceitful ways—our gods of gold, of silver, of wood, and of stone,—the Almighty may see meet, after long forbearing in love and mercy with this our favoured nation, to rise up and plead with it in judgment ; and the declaration formerly uttered respecting the children of Israel may be fulfilled respecting this land : ‘ You only have I known of all the families of the earth : therefore I will punish you for all your iniquities.’ (Amos, iii. 2.)

“ I have long been led to believe, that the advancement of the Redeemer’s kingdom is more especially obstructed by such as are making a profession of religion, and are active members of the society they are in connexion with, contending for the faith once delivered to the saints in words, but whose general conduct respecting their commercial transactions, manner of living, houses and furniture, does not correspond with that humility and self-denial, which the doctrines, precepts, and example of our Holy Redeemer enjoin ; thus giving proof that they are friends of the world, and not of Christ Jesus : the fruits brought forth by such, also testifying, that *within* they are like the whited sepulchres, full of dead men’s bones and all uncleanness, (Matt. xxiii. 27 ;) and that the spirit of the world is the governing principle in most, if not in all, their actions amongst men ; pursuing the world as if they counted gain godliness, and not, as must be the case with the true disciples and followers of Christ, godliness with contentment to be the greatest riches ; (1 Tim. vi. 5, 6 ;) proclaiming, in the language of conduct, their disregard of the nature and extent of their business, if there be but a prospect of a good profit attached to it ; whereby the gifts, which the god of this world bestows upon these his votaries, have blinded the eyes of many who, I doubt not, were once favoured to see clearly the things which belong to peace and salvation. Oh ! these professing worldlings,

who say they are Jews, and are not, but whose fruits testify for them that they are of the synagogue of Satan! And how can it be likely to prove otherwise, but that such unworthy professors of the Christian name, who are refusing to become subject to the governing principle of Christ within them, will be stumbling-blocks to the honest inquirer after Zion, and instrumental in turning the blind out of the right way of the Lord?

“So, let us look to ourselves, my highly professing brethren; you, in an especial manner, to whom these remarks more immediately apply,—you who are resolving to effect an impossibility, to be heirs of two kingdoms. I would humbly hope, that instrumental labour, under the Divine anointing, is bestowed by many who are, under different denominations, professing faith in our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, and who are standing forth in his name, to advocate his cause against the world, the flesh, and the devil: and I cannot doubt but that the word thus preached has been, at times, believed in and received. But is it any marvel, that so little fruit appears from this labour, when on comparing things with things, the conduct of some of the more active members and esteemed pillars in the different religious communities, has been found so at variance with the doctrine preached, and this even with some who are standing forth as the Aarons and the Hurs by the side of the Lord’s messengers, (Exodus, xvii. 12.) as, I doubt not, to cause others to leave their place of worship with sorrowful hearts; and who, instead of resolving, through the renewals of Divine aid, to pursue the path that has been pointed out towards the heavenly Canaan, have been tempted to form this conclusion,—that they would rather remain as they were, and not persevere, as they clearly saw the inconsistency of many, who stood high in profession. (see 2 Peter, ii. 20, 21.)

“Nor do the sad effects of this dissembling end here. I believe we may trace its sorrowful consequences to the rising generation, as being one of the causes, and not one of the least, that so few in early life, in this day of outward ease as to liberty of conscience, are coming forward in true religious usefulness, by being examples of real vital religion, in the different communities of which they are members; thereby serving the Lord’s cause, by the religious exercise of their spirits, and by an endeavour to be found walking amongst men, consistently with the doctrines, the precepts, and example of our holy Redeemer. They may appear active in the religious concerns of the society they are in communion with, and yet be strangers to this religious exercise, without which none of us can become helpers in the Lord’s cause, and lights in the world. (Matt. v. 14.)

“The enemy of all good is ever on the alert, and ready with baits to answer his purposes; so that when the good hand of Divine help has been held out towards any, and they have been

favoured to see and feel the need of a still further separation from all sublunary things, and the mind has become exercised with desires to experience this; then he has endeavoured to counteract the gracious designs of Omnipotence, by raising mountains of difficulty and discouragement in their way, and trying to persuade them that the path thus opened to their view is not to be trodden by mortals. And as a confirmation of these his evil suggestions, turning their attention towards such, in a more particular manner, who are standing foremost in taking an active part in religious matters, and are making a great profession of spirituality, but are not coming up, in a consistent conduct, with the nature and spirituality of the gospel of our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ; whereby there is reason to fear the pure witness for God, in such awakened minds, has often again been put to silence.

“ I cannot doubt but that a desire to do a great stroke of business, get great riches, and make a great figure in the world, is as much some men’s besetting sin as ever the love of strong drink has been that of others. I am aware that persons of the latter habits are deemed the most immoral; but if our minds are unfitted for the faithful discharge of our civil and religious duties, whether such disqualification proceeds from the love of gold and worldly splendour, or of strong drink, I believe the crime is still heinous in the Divine estimation. An overcharge of business, and a desire to make a splendid appearance in the world, must disqualify a man for a faithful discharge of his civil and religious duties. When the mind, and spiritual faculties of any person are so benumbed and overcome, if not with surfeiting and drunkenness, yet with the cares and gratifications of this life, (Luke, xxi. 34.) with the love of his gold and silver, houses and lands, so intent on his mortgages and bonds, his interest, and compound interest, trying to make a heaven here below; whilst in this state of mind, is there not sufficient ground for believing that his religious performances and offerings are made like the niggards, grudgingly; scarcely at his place set apart for religious worship in due time, with his heart so full of the world, so much like the inn of old, that there is no room, no fit place for his Saviour there; it is no marvel that such should be thus spending the time they profess to sacrifice to the Lord, to little or no benefit to themselves, or those with whom they are in religious connexion. I hope I may in truth say, I have not been wanting, at times, in endeavouring to cast a veil of charity over the conduct of such, who, it is evident, have become, in this way, Satan’s bond-slaves, wedded to the treasures and splendour of this world; and at such times my heart has been sad on their account, under an assurance, that whatsoever our temptations and besetments may be, or our dangers through the evil example of others, to whose company we may be unavoidably exposed, if we are but willing to resist and

seek for Divine Help to overcome them, both he, who covets great trade, great riches, and to make a figure of splendour in the world, as well as he who covets strong drink, will then experience a sure way prepared in due time by the Lord, for his merciful escape from this otherwise impassable gulf, between him and an eternal resting-place with the righteous ! for the Scriptures declare, that neither drunkards nor covetous shall inherit the kingdom of God, (1 Cor. vi. 10 ;) and again, that ‘ without holiness no man shall see the Lord.’ But if we will continue to harden our hearts against the holy intimations and offers of restraining love, that thus in mercy follow us, we must expect to wander into the many byeways, and crooked paths of the enemy of our soul’s peace ; and shall be making for ourselves a labyrinth which we never may clearly escape from, and which, it is to be feared, has been the case with many that are gone before us. Restraint must be submitted to by those who will live godly, in Christ Jesus : not only as to the quantity and quality of our trade and business, but also in the use of the Lord’s outward blessings, which he has in mercy given us richly to enjoy : and that mode of getting a livelihood must be avoided, which either directly or indirectly, has a tendency to lead away the mind from the pure, peaceable, and self-denying path, and to foster the contrary disposition in ourselves or others.

“ In proportion as the mind is let out, and desires increase after wealth and worldly greatness, it becomes indifferent as to consequences, neither fearing the overcharge of quantity, nor properly regarding the quality of business. Happy had it been for many in those seasons of sore conflict, which commerce has, at times, of later years, experienced, had they willingly and timely yielded to those divine intimations they had been favoured with ; for I believe that none ever were suffered to turn aside from the path of safety, totally ignorant thereof ; but that in the beginning of their erring and straying, the witness for God followed them, and at times smote them : but if we will disregard its invitations and secret monitions, it is then most just on the part of Almighty God, to leave us to the power and insinuations of Satan, the god of this world, who rules in the hearts of the children of disobedience. (Eph. ii. 2.) Yet even whilst thus promoting the cause of the evil one, such may continue to make a fair show in the flesh, as to a profession of religion, and to be very tenacious respecting some externals, as were the Pharisees, (Matt. xxiii. 23 ;) things comparable to the mint, anise, and cummin ; and in which Satan will not oppose them, so long as they rest satisfied herewith, and continue to rebel against the light of Christ Jesus in their souls, (Job, xxiv. 13,) refusing to submit to the heart-cleansing operation of God’s word and power, which alone can effectually cleanse the inside of the cup and platter. (Matt. xxiii. 25, 26.)



Happy, I say, had it been for many, had they in due time attended to the pure limitations of the Divine Spirit in their own souls, in their trade, and in the right use of the Lord's outward gifts; who now are, through this neglect, plunged, with their families, into accumulated difficulties, and unlooked-for distress; and respecting whom, the declaration of the apostle has been verified, 'They that will be rich, fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.' 'For the love of money is the root of all evil; which, while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.' (1 Tim. vi. 10.) Is it to be wondered at, that such disgraceful failures in the discharge of just debts should so sorrowfully prevail with those who are making a profession of the Christian name, when their conduct has been so opposed to their profession, which demands of such that they be men fearing God, and hating covetousness? (Exod. xviii. 21.) How opposite is this disposition of mind, (the love of the world,) to that warfare which the true Christian should daily maintain! For as this is brought about in us, and abode in, the mind as much dreads the approach of any of Satan's gilded baits, as if surprised by any venomous creature, whose wound is fatal: because, if we suffer ourselves to be beguiled by him, spiritual death will surely follow. And there is ground for believing that this has been sorrowfully verified by not a few, who had given proof that they were the visited children of the Lord our God, having covenanted with him, and for a time evidently confirmed their covenants by sacrifice; but who, for want of continuing to ask wisdom daily, (James, i. v.) to go in and out with acceptance before the Lord, (who still fails not to grant liberally to those who thus ask of him,) have given the riches and greatness of this world the preference; and if they have been suffered to obtain their heart's desire, it has been evident, that what they have coveted did not come alone, but was attended by its never-failing companion,—those who covet an evil covetousness, (Habb. ii. 9,) must expect to possess leanness of soul; the sorrowful consequences of which will be, unfruitfulness towards God; which, although it may appear to be very slow in its gradations, will assuredly take place, whatsoever such may have known aforetime of an enlargement of heart towards God, and the cause of our Holy Redeemer. For when the door of the heart is opened towards covetousness and the love of this world, its pleasures and gratifications, and there is a stumbling at the cross of Christ, (Gal. vi. 14,)—refusing to become crucified unto the world, and to let the world be crucified unto us; this love of God once known and felt, in time takes its departure, and leaves in the soul an awful, aching void.

“Consider from whence the determination proceeds, which

many have ventured upon making this willingness to sacrifice every thing that should be nearest and dearest to them, in order to gratify their thirst for wealth, and the making of a splendid appearance in the world—to add ten thousand to ten thousand, and double it, and treble it again, if possible. Let these things speak for themselves; can they proceed from any other disposition than the love of the world? Oh! let such who are professing to be called by the Lord's name, of whatever denomination of professing Christians they may be, (for it is for such I feel so deeply interested,) consider, whether the apostle's declaration be not true, (as to them,) that the love of the Father is not in them. (1 John, ii. 15.) For many years it has appeared to me to be a reproach to the character of any professing the Christian name, that when summoned from works to rewards, it has been found they have left large sums of money behind them of their own accumulation. Oh! what a cloud has it brought over their best actions, however conspicuous they may have stood in the religious society they have been in communion with. Oh! the sorrowful feelings which have clothed my mind on account of such, language fails me to set forth. I find that, if my feeble efforts are accepted, the whole council given me must be imparted. (Acts, xx. 27.) I would not be understood to criminate those who leave large property behind them, which they came to by inheritance; but even when this is the case, great care is necessary on the part of such, that a righteous distribution is made of it at their death, which, I believe, would be more conducive to their peace, when about to leave this world, than if they had left their property, in large sums, where it did not appear to be needed. 'He that oppresseth the poor, to increase his riches, and he that giveth to the rich, shall surely come to want.' (Prov. xxii. 16.) Let these considerations have due weight with us, that by a right distribution of our property, we may be preserved from embittering our last moments. The idea may be new to some, but it has long been my belief, that we shall be made as much accountable for the righteous disposal of our property when we leave this world, as we are for the right use of it whilst we have it in our possession.

"Some profess to say, when remonstrated with on these subjects, that they are at a loss to define the word, 'enough' of this world's goods: this difficulty, I am fully of the mind, solely rests with themselves. In the first place, through an unwillingness to have their wants circumscribed by that Power, which is from above; and in the next, for want of a sincere desire to have this word defined for them by that Wisdom, which is as competent to direct in this, as in any other important step in life. It is a duty we owe to the body, to make suitable provision for its comfort and conveniences, especially for old age; that we may rather be helpful to others, than require their help; and also to put our children

in a way to get their living by moderate industry, and to provide for such of them, who may not be in a capacity to keep themselves. When a kind Providence has intrusted to us so much as may answer all these lawful purposes, if, after this, there remains a disposition to accumulate, and we give way to such disposition, then, I believe, we are violating that command of the Divine Master, ‘Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth,’ (Matt. vi. 19;) and that we are giving full proof where our hearts are. Not that I apprehend it would be better for all who have attained this competency to quit their trades and occupations, because some may be more in the way of their duty in continuing to pursue them honourably; when, besides introducing deserving persons as their successors, they may be the means of helping the widow and fatherless, the infirm, who frequently are obliged to labour under extreme pain and suffering, and those who, although industriously disposed, cannot succeed in whatever they may undertake as masters for themselves;—but there must be no adding to the enough on their own account, lest that enough, which has been mercifully dispensed, be taken away again; for, ‘covet all, lose all,’ is, I believe, a maxim, the truth of which has often been confirmed by such conduct.

“I am aware of the trying state of trade and commercial affairs, and the great difficulty many honest minds have had to struggle through, who are obliged to give credit in their trade, thus depending on others to make good their own payments; yet I believe complaints of want of punctuality in fulfilling engagements would not be so general as they are, were such in earnest to do every thing in their power that the chief cause, the inordinate pursuit of business, might be removed. Therefore, by others’ harms may you take warning; and lessen your temporal concerns where necessary, you that have been permitted to weather the storm that has at times blown with fearful violence. It is true there have been some intermissions, something that at times might be termed sunshine; and a hope has been entertained by many of those who had deeply felt the pressure of the times, that the worst was past, and that better times, as to trade and commerce, were hastening. How soon has the expectation of such been disappointed! and how many that have been tempted, by these prospects, to venture out on the wide ocean of commerce, have again become a total wreck! the next cloud that has gathered exceeding those which had gone before in magnitude and terrific appearance, sometimes as if ready to burst and carry destruction before it. My brethren, where your trade and business exceed the bounds of Christian moderation, lessen them with all the resolution of which you are capable. Take especial heed to the Good Pilot at the helm: get into a safe port, if possible—to as safe an anchoring-place as the nature of your various outward circumstances

in these times will allow of, before the day of the Lord come 'upon every one that is proud and lofty, and upon every one that is lifted up; and he shall be brought low: and upon all the cedars of Lebanon, that are high and lifted up, and upon all the oaks of Bashan, and upon all the high mountains, and upon all the hills that are lifted up, and upon every high tower, and upon every fenced wall, and upon all the ships of Tarshish, and upon all pleasant pictures.' (Isaiah, ii. 12—16.) Read the remainder of this remarkable chapter, and the foregoing one, and let none be saying, 'such things have been declared aforetime, and what has come of it?' lest their calamity come upon them as a thief in the night, in a day when they look not for it, and at an hour when they are not aware. (1 Thess. v. 2, 3. Matt. xxiv. 44—51.)

"You that sail on the wide ocean of trade and commerce, and have its tempestuous billows to contend with, and to whom it has appeared as if nothing less than a total wreck could be the result, be no longer unwilling to act the part of the wise mariner; for, when danger like this threatens him, he looks well to the helm, reduces his sails, and lightens the vessel by lessening his cargo, rather than risk the loss of the whole. I am not unmindful of the distress, that nature must have to endure, before the mind is at all likely to be brought into a willingness to take such steps as these; and I think I can enter into feeling with those who have families, and have so far extended their manner of living, as that, from the depressed state of their trade, and the losses they are assailed with, their income barely covers their expenses, while, perhaps, their families are increasing; because it is gratifying to human nature to appear to the world to be increasing in its substance, but mortifying to retrench, lest it should be suspected that we are going down hill in the world. This must be the case with many in the present day, or I am mistaken in my view of the state of things. Many must be content with the moderate portion of the things of this life allotted by a wise Providence for them. Lessen your business, and regulate your family expenses accordingly, otherwise you may be brought into the same trying situation that many are now in, who once carried their heads high in the commercial world, and moved, in what are called, the more genteel circles, but who have now no bread at all they can strictly call their own.

Let me now claim your attention, who are females in families, by pressing upon you the necessity of your being willing to do your part in facilitating the escape of your husbands and parents from the troubled waters and sunk rocks of commercial difficulty, which the keen eye of human policy is so often unable to discover. With you generally rests the management of household affairs: it being chiefly for these supplies that the labouring oar is kept at work: you must be willing (both mothers and children,) to ex-



amine closely the mode and circumstances of your expenditure, with a mind fully made up to relieve, as far as in you lies, the head of the family, who may have both wind and tide to contend with. Where it is needful, search your houses, search your tables, search your garments: and where any expense can be spared, seek for Holy Help to pursue the path of Christian moderation. I am well assured, from our natural proneness to gratification, that it will require Holy Help to take such steps as these; but this I am also as well assured will not be wanting, if sought after in a proper disposition, 'the perfect heart and willing mind' accompanying our endeavours after it. Hereby we shall find that those things which have been sacrificed, being calculated only to please the vain mind in ourselves and others, and to pamper a depraved appetite, had not the effect of contributing to our real comforts. Regard not the world's dread laugh, but set your intimates and neighbours this salutary example of Christian moderation; an example, I believe, that all who profess faith in Christ, and in the sufficiency of his power to redeem from all iniquity, are in a peculiar manner called upon to hold out to the world at large; although this mode of proceeding may, for a time, produce a sore conflict to such, supposing that they shall let themselves down in the eyes and estimation of the worldly-minded, yet, in the end, they will appear more honourable than those who have compelled the head of the family to go on pushing business, to keep up an appearance which their circumstances do not justify, clothing and feeding themselves and their children with that which they were not able to pay for. And you that are of bodily ability, be entreated to learn to wait more upon yourselves; teach your children industry and a well regulated economy, even admitting they have a prospect of a large patrimony, remembering that riches have wings, (Prov. xxiii. 5,) and various may be the ways and means Providence may see meet to permit this their patrimony to take wings and fly away from them, and they be left, as others have been before them, who were once similarly circumstanced, but now placed in a very destitute situation as to outward support. It must be self-evident to every rightly-considerate mind, that there is great need in the present day to press upon parents the necessity of this wholesome practice, wholesome both for body and mind; for, next to a pious example, accompanied by a religious education, parents cannot bestow a better portion on their children, than instruction in industry, and the art of living well at little expense. Labour is a part of the penance enjoined on man in the fall: 'By the sweat of thy brow shalt thou get thy bread.' (Gen. ix. 19.) This sentence, pronounced upon Adam, I believe, descends to all his posterity. I do not mean to infer, from the words of the text, that all are called upon to be engaged in manual and servile work, but that all are called upon

to be usefully employed in some way or other for the good of their fellow-creatures. I fully believe that suitable employment, under the regulating influence of an all-wise Creator, is salutary, and qualifies us the better to feel for, and proportion labour to those who may be placed under us: it may even prove a secondary means of keeping our nature under subjection, which we cannot be ignorant is corrupt, and requires much subduing—something to check its impetuosity, and have rule in all our actions. There is yet another precious advantage resulting from bringing up children in habits of well-regulated industry and economy; a moderate share of business will then be found sufficient to bring up a family reputably, when our wants are confined to real comforts and conveniences, which I find the religion of Jesus fully allows of. It is those things which have nothing to recommend them but show, and an appearance of what the world calls gentility, that the religion of Jesus Christ opposes in each of our minds, did we but attend to it more faithfully. For want of this attention, how easily do we become bond-slaves to appearances; and where this well-regulated industry and economy are wanting, and idleness and fulness of bread prevail, how little is to be observed, in the conduct of such, of reverential thankfulness for the bounties they are receiving from heaven. Although I am well aware that our constitutions are so varied by nature, we cannot, nor must we presume to draw a precise line one for another, respecting that in which real comforts and conveniences consist; yet I am as fully satisfied as I am of my own existence, that we have a Divine principle implanted in each one of us, (to the truth of which the sacred writings, from the beginning to the end of them, bear ample testimony, although spoken of under various characters, such as—‘the law written in the heart’—‘the Spirit in the inward parts’—‘the Teacher that cannot be removed into a corner’—‘the anointing that teaches as man never taught’—‘the inspeaking voice of God,’ &c. &c. &c.) and if we are willing to receive and attend to its secret and sacred monitions, it will not fail faithfully to impart to us a knowledge of the conduct we must each one pursue, so as that we may be found only in the right and proper use of the good things of this life, which our beneficent Creator has given us richly to enjoy. It will be clearly pointed out to us, what are the real comforts and conveniences allowed us, and what are the imaginary ones, the use of which we are to deny ourselves. If we neglect to attend to these secret monitions in our own hearts, we must expect, from our natural proneness to gratification and the delights of the world, that we shall in various ways violate the trust our heavenly Father has reposed in us, by using these temporal things contrary to his designs, and to our unspeakable and eternal loss.

“When we are made willing thus to move in true humility,

we are prepared the better to meet reverses that may come upon us. Let none be saying in their hearts, 'I am out of the reach of reverses,' because none *are* out of the reach of them; for however variously our outward substance may be secured, all sublunary things are unstable as water; and various as may be our resources, every supply may be cut off. The Philistines may be permitted to stop all the wells which we have dug for ourselves and our children; (Gen. xxvi. 15;) the Most High may permit his great army of little causes to enter our vineyards and olive-yards, and strip us of all, without power on our parts to prevent the devastation: for what the palmer-worm leaves, the locust may eat; and that which the locust leaves, the canker-worm may eat; and what the canker-worm leaves, the caterpillar may so destroy, that not the least vestige of our former greenness and greatness may remain. (Joel, i. 4.) This has been the case within my memory. The crafty have been so taken in their own craftiness, and the lofty so brought down from their seats, and men of low degree exalted, that he who was the servant, has become the master, and his master's children have served his children. (Job, v. 13.) What has been, may be again; for thus has the All-wise Disposer, to whom belong the cattle of a thousand hills, and every visible thing, (for nothing is mine or thine any longer than he sees meet we should possess it,) evinced his sovereignty and power to humble his creature man; thus convincing him of the great uncertainty of all visible things. (Psalm, l. 10.) May these turnings and overturnings, both in commercial concerns and in families, which from time to time we have heard of, and of which some have more keenly felt the smart, prove the means of stimulating us to an honest endeavour to forget the things that are behind, all of which are perishing, and renewedly to seek for Holy Help, to be found daily pressing forward to those which are before and which are eternal!

"I am afraid, my sisters, to close this subject without adding another hint, from an earnest desire which I feel, that you may not be found deficient in doing your part, every way in your power, in bringing about that necessary reformation in family concerns which is so much wanting. I would suggest to you an expedient essential to be put in practice, in order to enable you the better to keep your family expenditure within proper bounds, having myself experienced its salutary effects when I had a dependent family around me; which is to determine to purchase, with ready money, the various articles consumed for family use; and that we resolve to perform this task, however mortifying it may prove to ourselves and our children, by depriving us and them of many things the natural disposition may crave. I am fully persuaded that great advantage would result from this practice, both to parents and children, more especially to such who,

at times feel themselves straitened to carry on their business respectably; for when these difficulties are felt by honest minds, it becomes obligatory on such, (if they get through their difficulties,) closely to inspect the manner of their expenditure, and this will afford an opportunity of timely checking any unnecessary expense that may have crept into the family; but when things for family consumption are mostly, if not all, had upon credit, this opens a wider door, both for parents and children, to greater indifference, both as it respects expediency and cost, than Christian moderation at all justifies; and the children of such parents are in danger of being brought up ignorant of the real use or value of property. The purchasing of goods for family consumption on credit, often proves a serious inconvenience to tradesmen, especially to those with a small capital, for it too frequently proves that such purchasers are not very ready to make payment in due time; and when this is the case, are we doing as we would be done by? Is not this golden rule sorrowfully violated by such unpunctual proceedings? (Matt. vii. 12.)

“I have long viewed it as a mean practice, and beneath the dignity of a professed follower of Christ, to consume in any way the property of another, before I have paid for it (except under some peculiar circumstances); for general usage does not justify me (to say no more) in wrong practices. The professed followers of Christ are not to view things as the world at large does; but through the more pure medium of truth and uprightness. How needful is it, that those of every denomination, who are making a profession of the Christian name, should frequently recur to that which they are making a profession of, and as frequently compare their practice therewith, and how far it corresponds with the doctrines, precepts, and example of Him whom they profess to call Lord and Master; and bring their deeds to that Light, by which, in a future day, they will all be judged, and sentence passed, not only according as their actions have been, but their motives to actions will also be taken into the account.

“Whilst we are so commendably engaged in circulating the Sacred Writings and religious tracts, in order to awaken the minds of the more unthinking part of mankind on these all-important and most interesting subjects, if our labour is blessed to those amongst whom these distributions are made, I am increasingly persuaded that we must, in the first place, give proof ourselves of the happy effects which these Sacred Writings have had upon our own minds, that they are indeed ‘able to make wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus,’ (2 Tim. iii. 13, 15;) the tenour of our conduct and conversation corresponding with those doctrines which the Sacred Writings contain. Example will do more towards reforming the lives of others than precept,—actions speak louder than words.



“The introduction, which of late years has taken place in London and its neighbourhood, of what are called Sunday newspapers, and the frequenting, on the first day of the week (called Sunday,) the public news-rooms, which are now instituted in most cities and market-towns in this kingdom, has been a great injury to the minds of many; for the practice of reading the news previously to going to a place of worship, must tend, in degree, if not altogether, to unfit the mind for approaching the Divine Being with that entire devotedness of soul which He requires. And if there has been with any a refraining from this injurious practice, (to go no further,) until their returning from their place of religious worship,—or if the practice has not been indulged in until the evening of this day,—if any benefit has been received, or any serious impressions made during their attendance there,—has it not had this baneful tendency, that these serious impressions thus made, this benefit thus experienced, have been in part, if not altogether, dissipated? Do the sad effects end here? I fear not: but where it is known such practices exist with those who are making a profession of the Christian name, such examples of earthly-mindedness open a wide door for those, who are deemed libertines, to indulge in making this day of the week a day of pleasure and gratification. May those of the former character, who may have been setting this ungodly example, be willing to take home to themselves the language uttered by one of the prophets, speaking in the Lord’s name, to a highly-favoured people in his day: ‘Oh, Israel, thou hast destroyed thyself;’ and experience the subsequent part of the text fulfilled respecting themselves; ‘but in Me is thine help.’ (Hos. xiii. 9.)

“I cannot, with peace to my own mind, conclude, without expressing the earnest solicitude of soul which I feel, that those who are moving in the higher walks of life may be willing, through Holy Help, to come forward, and by example, lead those who rank in the middle class, and the poor, in the path of true humility and self-denial: for if we, as a nation, are delivered from the bondage and captivity of pride and extravagance, into which every class of the people, down to the poor, are sorrowfully sunk, this so necessary reformation should begin with you who are moving in the higher circles in life: then I have faith to believe your example would be so blessed by Divine Providence, that the iniquity charged against Sodom of old may no longer be found too generally applicable to our awful situation as a nation; pride, fulness of bread, and abundance of idleness was in her. (Ezek. xvi. 49.) Hereby you will be doing much towards bettering the condition of those who are moving in the *middle ranks* of life, and of the *poor*; this, I firmly believe, you are called upon by Almighty God, the giver of every temporal as well as spiritual blessing you enjoy, to be found acting here below. That every

class amongst the people may be willing to unite with that All-sufficient Help, which I believe still awaits our acceptance as a nation; and suffer it so to operate in our hearts and minds, that an increase of that salt which has thus far saved us, as a nation, from becoming the object of the Divine displeasure, may be found amongst the different denominations of professing Christians; which is, at times, the secret breathing of my soul."

*"Tottenham, 1st of 5th mo. 1831."*

New South Wales still being of late the subject of my daily thoughts, notwithstanding a report was in circulation amongst Friends, that I had given up this prospect of religious duty; in consequence of which report, I felt my mind brought under the necessity, in the Select Yearly Meeting, to inform my friends that this concern still remained with me: although of late there have been seasons in which I have been disposed to query, whether "a ram" would not be caught; I earnestly craved, if such should be the will of my Divine Master, that I might be preserved patiently waiting to know His further mind and will, and Him to prepare the offering, until it becomes that whole burnt sacrifice He is calling for,—offered up in His own time, and way, and manner.

Having for some months past felt drawings in my mind to make a visit to the Bishop of London, on the 12th of 5th mo. this year, agreeable to a previous appointment, accompanied by my kind friend Peter Bedford, we waited on the bishop at his residence, who received us kindly. Having taken our seats, after a short pause, I felt myself constrained to inform the bishop, I had been an acknowledged minister in the Society of Friends upwards of fifty years, which I found had placed me in an awful and responsible situation; inasmuch as I was aware my example was looked at by the body. This led me frequently to consider how far the general tenour of my conduct and converse corresponded with the doctrines, precepts, and example of our holy Redeemer, and how far I was earnestly concerned by example and precept, to use my utmost influence in checking any wrong practices that were in danger of creeping and did creep into the Society; from an assurance that by such neglect on my part, I should be criminalizing myself in the sight of my Maker, by my becoming a party thereto. I then informed the bishop, one subject I had to lay before him was, the abuse of the First-day of the week, called Sunday, saying I had read the address which the bishop had written on the subject, and was comforted that one of the higher order of the Episcopalian clergy had come forward, and protested against the existing abuses of this day, and had pointed out some of the sorrowful consequences resulting therefrom; and that I did most earnestly crave, that the bishop might seek for Divine

help to use his influence to the utmost, in order that a remedy might be applied: that I could not divest my mind of a hope that our sovereign and his royal consort, by seeking for Divine help, would be made a blessing to this nation, by bringing gradually about that reformation so much wanted: that three years out of the last five, I had been in America; on my return to my native land, I was sorrowfully affected in observing the increasing abuse of the Sabbath, and the baneful effects of what are called Sunday newspapers. In this the bishop most fully concurred; on which I again expressed the desire of my mind, that the bishop might be engaged to seek for Divine help to be enabled to do his duty faithfully without fear, favour or affection: to which the bishop replied, (meaning Divine help) "Without it I can do nothing." I then informed him, there was another subject I must lay before him, which was, the great increase of intemperance;—fearful as I was, unless some steps were taken to arrest its progress, it would arrive at a similar height to that which it attained in this country about a century back—having heard from my father a deplorable description of the extent it had then reached. I presented him with a small volume of the tracts published by the Temperance Society, which the bishop received with pleasure. I then urged him to promote the objects of the Temperance Society, assuring him the exertions already used had been made a great blessing; on which it appeared the bishop saw some difficulty in acting in this way, intimating that some fiscal regulations on the part of government would be necessary in order to suppress it: to which I involuntarily said, in the warmth of my feelings (but which was evidently well received,) "But, my dear friend, do seek for Best Help, to enable thee to do what thou canst." I was stopped from apologizing, as I was about to do, for the freedom with which I had addressed the bishop, by his saying, "All Christians should love one another:" to which I replied, "I do feel that I am speaking to a friend." Books on our religious principles were then handed to him, which the bishop appeared to receive acceptably. During the whole of the interview, the bishop heard us with much courtesy, and in a friendly and kind manner, observed it was desirable to have the good wishes of all Christians, and that he was glad in receiving the visit; he shook hands with us, and escorted us to the door, and soon after became President to the Temperance Society, and a warm promoter of its interests.

[Our friend T. S., it is believed, took a very warm interest in the establishment and extension of these Temperance Societies. At a meeting of the British and Foreign Temperance Society at Exeter Hall, London, in the 5th month, 1833, he addressed the meeting upon the baneful effects of ardent spirits and high living upon himself, in the earlier period of his life, and upon the re-

markable benefit he had experienced from a total abstinence from all stimulating drinks, as wine and fermented liquors, as well as from animal food. As his speech contains much information on the subject, not to be met with in this journal, the following report of it is here introduced, as published by the Temperance Society:—

“ I believe I am safe in saying, that duty has brought me here to-day, to prove, from my own experience of more than thirty years, (which is said to be the best schoolmaster,) that ardent spirits are not essential to the health and to the comfort of mankind; and also to prove the fallacy of the opinion abroad, that where individuals have been in the habitual use of them, it is dangerous for such to abandon their use all at once.

“ A fright when a lad brought on a very severe nervous complaint, which increased as I grew up. At the twenty-fourth year of my age, my health became so impaired, that my medical attendant ordered me to quit London altogether, and put me on a very generous diet; a beef-steak, and some of the best ale that could be procured, were ordered for my breakfast, and at my dinner and supper plenty of good ale and wine, and, to avoid obesity, vegetable diet. This mode of dieting myself I pursued for twenty years; my health gradually declined; my nerves were so enfeebled, that twice I was confined to my bed from the sudden sight of a mouse. These frights, too, which proceeded from different causes, produced such dread, such horror, such debility, and such sinking, and frequent craving for food and stimulants, for several days afterwards, and my frame became so overcharged with the quantity of food and liquids, and my nervous irritability so increased, that I felt as if I could not live. Smoking, and spirits and water, were then recommended. Although the quantity was increased from time to time, they did not produce the effect I desired. I became alarmed at the consequences, not knowing where it would end. These not producing sleep, I was then advised to have recourse to laudanum. I began with ten drops, yet I found I was obliged to increase my dose three drops every third night, until I got to one hundred and eighty drops; I left off at that quantity. In addition to my nervous attacks (I apprehend in consequence of my generous and high manner of living), I became bilious, rheumatic, and gouty; I frequently had very bad colds and sore throat; and I can only describe the situation I was brought into, by saying I went about day by day, frightened for fear of being frightened, a dreadful situation indeed to be living in.

“ I made a visit to a medical friend of mine in Hampshire, where I spent some time. This afforded him an opportunity of observing the state of my health, and the effect which my manner of living had on my constitution, and before I quitted his house he advised me to make a general change in my manner of living, to abandon my beef-steak, to abandon the use of all fer-



mented liquors, and to use animal food but very sparingly. At first it appeared to me as if human nature could hardly be willing to submit to my friend's prescription; for my physician in London had desired me to double my portion of ale in the morning, saying my hypochondriacal habit required it. However, I again called upon him for his advice, in as debilitated a state of body, I think, as I well could be. His advice to me was, to procure some of the oldest Madeira wine that could be got, and to take a bottle of it in as short a time as possible. A friend of mine provided me some, which he told me was twenty years old. I believe it is best thus to go into the details of what I suffered. I took the bottle of wine between the hours of eight and ten at night, and it produced very little more effect (such was my state of debility) than if I had taken so much water. At length, feeling satisfied of the sincerity of my friend above mentioned, who had enforced on me the necessity of a general change, I made up my mind to seek for help from Almighty God, that I might give the recommendation a fair trial,—satisfied, as I was, that nothing short of His help could enable me to endure the conflict I must undergo. When I returned to my own home, favoured, as I believe I was, with that holy help that would bear me up in making the attempt, I proceeded all at once, (for I found tampering with these things would not do,) and gave up my laudanum, fermented liquors of every kind whatsoever, and my meat breakfast. My health began gradually to improve, although I felt some of the effects of my old complaint in my stomach after I had taken my dinner meal: I therefore confined myself wholly to vegetable diet, and my health has gradually improved from that time to the present; so that I am able to say, to the praise of Him who enabled me to make the sacrifice of these things, that I am stronger now, in my *eightieth* year, than I was fifty years ago, when in the habit of taking animal food, wine, strong malt liquor, and spirits and water; and my bilious, my rheumatic, and my gouty complaints, I think I may say, are no more. Nor have I, since this change, ever had an attack of that most dreadful of all maladies, hypochondria:—I call it most dreadful, from what I have felt of it: it exceeds derangement, because when derangement takes place, the mind is gone. I find, from continued experience, (it being thirty years since I have eaten fish, flesh, or fowl, or took fermented liquor of any kind whatever,) I find abstinence to be the best medicine; I do not meddle with fermented liquors of any kind, even as medicine. I find I am capable of doing better without them, than when I was in the daily use of them.

“It is an opinion that it is necessary to take ardent spirits when people are travelling, to defend them from cold. Now I will mention two striking instances of my experience to the contrary. Having to travel from Copenhagen, in Denmark, to Christiana, in

Norway, eleven days' journey before me, in carts that had no covering over them, in the twelfth month, that is December, when the frost was very severe, my friends told me I must have spirits. We sometimes started at four in the morning, and travelled till ten at night, at that season of the year, fearing the falls of snow might have a tendency to impede our journey; during which I never took any thing stronger than coffee; while the man whom I hired to take charge of me was taking his spirits, and seemed as if he could not do without them. I have reason, however, to believe I suffered less from cold than he did. I spent the greater part of the winter in Petersburg, and travelled on sledges, without having recourse to any thing stronger than coffee. I do not say my mode of living would do for all constitutions, but I am sure that if persons had but courage to *make a trial of it*, it would suit a great many, and be the means of procuring and preserving their health better, than living in a more generous way.

“When I think of my friend who put me upon this mode of living, I am satisfied that he did more towards my comfort here, and towards my endeavouring to seek after a better inheritance in the world to come, than if he had given me ten thousand sovereigns. It is probable that such a present would have promoted an increase of the indulgence in which I was living; and it would have been almost sure to increase that state of disease, which I had from time to time been labouring under.

“In another way, also, was I favoured to experience help, in abandoning all these things; this arose from the effect my abstinence has had on my natural temper. My natural disposition is very irritable, which was not helped in my nervous complaint, irritability being very much attached to such complaints. I am persuaded that ardent spirits, and high living, have more or less effect in tending to raise into action our evil propensities, which, if given way to, war against the soul, and render us displeasing to Almighty God. When I recur to the effects that the use of ardent spirits had on my health and on my mind, I am renewedly confirmed in the belief, that the good Power never had any thing to do in producing them, and therefore they must have been produced by the evil power—that power which envies our happiness here and hereafter.”

A gentleman present said, T. Shillitoe had walked from Tottenham, six miles, to attend the meeting, and would probably walk home again.]

On Fifth-day, 27th of 9th mo. 1822, I left town, accompanied by three Friends, for Windsor,—arrangements having been made for me to have an interview with the king at the castle, in order to present him with an address on some subjects which had previously deeply occupied my thoughts, the presentation of which ap-

peared to be a duty I could in no other way get relieved from. We reached Windsor by ten o'clock, and were conducted to the castle; my friend Peter Bedford and myself were taken to the apartments of the king's private secretary, Sir Herbert Taylor: after some time we were conducted to the apartment of the king, who was standing to receive us, but moved towards us on our entrance. We were with him about twenty minutes; he was quite unattended by any person whatever, and it may be said he received us very graciously. He soon entered into familiar conversation with me, and turned to my companion, as if to remove all undue restraint; he then held out his hand to receive the books we took with us, which my companion gave him; after which I handed the address I had prepared, which the king took of me, opened it, and intimated that he would further look at it. A little pause then ensued: on the king's having knowledge that I had crossed the Atlantic, and travelled through Germany, Sweden, and Denmark, he then inquired if there were any of our Society in Berlin, and whether the Herrnhites belonged to our community, saying, they are found in almost all parts of the world; he further observed, that the Friends or Quakers have no appointed ministers. My companion then informed him that I was an acknowledged minister of the gospel, had travelled in this capacity, and had been admitted into the presence of the king and queen of Denmark, and other branches of that family, and that our late kings, George the Third and Fourth, had also allowed me that privilege. I thought it right to say, that I believed the king would not be offended at our appearance before him with our hats on, and that it was not out of disrespect: to which he promptly replied, "You know I am aware of that." Under a degree of solemn feeling, I then expressed that I felt thankful to Almighty God, that he had been pleased to renew in my mind at this time, that earnest solicitude which at times I have experienced for the welfare of the king, accompanied with earnest desires that the Almighty would be pleased to incline his heart so to walk in the ways of His requirements, that he might become a blessing to the nation over whom he is permitted to reign; beseeching the Lord, on the bended knees of my soul, (though not of my body,) to incline the heart of the king to seek daily for help, to be enabled to maintain the noble resolution of one formerly,—“Let others do as they may, I will serve the Lord;” and then, when called upon to surrender up his earthly crown, that he might be favoured to receive the crown designed for him to wear in the kingdom of heaven. To which the king manifested serious attention. I then acknowledged his kindness in allowing me this interview, and said, there was still another favour I was anxious to obtain, but I feared it would be requesting too much. The king promptly inquired, “What is it?” I then told him I was desirous to present two books to the queen, and to have

the privilege of addressing her in a few words, if it would not be unpleasant to her. The king replied, "I have no doubt she will readily comply with your wishes;" and he immediately rang the bell, and sent a message to the queen by one of the servants. The king then inquired if Penn was not the first Quaker, and if there were not many of our Society in America, also if there were many in Scotland, and added, he knew there were in Ireland. He was informed George Fox was prior to William Penn, and I then inquired if the king would like to receive Sewell's History of Friends, and the Book of Extracts, containing an account of our religious principles and the rules of the Society, to which he replied in the affirmative; he desired they might be sent for him to Sir Herbert Taylor.

The messenger not having returned from the queen, my companion expressed a fear that we were unsuitably trespassing on the time of the king, to which he replied, not at all. My companion then acknowledged the condescension of the king to us, and his desire that the Divine blessing might rest upon him during the remainder of his reign. The messenger being returned informed us, the queen would receive us in her drawing-room, and we were then conducted to the queen's apartment; after waiting there a few minutes, the queen, quite unattended, walked into the room,—a striking example of simplicity in her attire for her exalted station: after a few introductory remarks, the queen sat down, and desired us to be seated, which we accordingly did. We presented her with two books, and a printed copy of the address, which she received in an obliging manner; after a short pause, I told her that I was one of the deputation who presented the address of the Society of Friends to the queen on her accession to the throne,—that at that time, and frequently since then, the queen had been brought to my remembrance; and my mind had been impressed with a belief, that a kind Providence had favoured her with a mind capable of entering into feeling for those who were in distress, which feelings of sympathy, I believed, the queen was disposed to cherish; under these impressions I had often regretted that she had not the opportunity for becoming more fully acquainted with the distress of thousands, and tens of thousands of her subjects, who were wanting sufficient food, clothing, and fuel, principally arising from a want of employment, which I considered was chiefly occasioned by articles for clothing and those for domestic purposes, being manufactured by machinery, which I considered had been injurious to the nation in another way also; it being allowed on all hands that goods manufactured by hand were generally much more serviceable than those made by machinery. As I did believe the queen was desirous to relieve the distressed as far as in her power, when these subjects had been presented to my mind it had appeared to me that the queen's example and influence



might relieve some of the distress, and draw down upon her the blessing of the poor; and whilst I did not wish to be considered as dictating to the queen, I could but recommend what appeared to me likely to afford relief, by suggesting that in the palace such articles as are made by hand should be used; which the queen did not object to. My companion, being a silk-manufacturer, then acknowledged the kindness of the queen in having adopted the use of silk manufactured in Spitalfields, which he said he believed had already been of much service; the satisfaction that gleamed in the countenance of the queen at this information was very striking. The queen then inquired, if the poor weavers were better employed than they had been, and informed us, that the silk furniture of the palace was of that manufacture. After a pause, I then felt it my duty to address the queen nearly to the following effect: I feel thankful to Almighty God, that He has been pleased afresh at this time to awaken in my mind those earnest desires which at times I have felt, that the queen may be made a blessing to the nation, by seeking to the Almighty for help to be found so filling her station, that, when called up by Him to surrender her temporal crown, she might be prepared to receive an eternal one. My companion then acknowledged the kindness of the queen in having favoured us with the interview, and expressed his sincere desire, that God Almighty might be pleased to bless her. When we rose from our seats again, at our parting, the queen took off her glove and gave us her hand. On leaving the queen's apartment, Sir Herbert Taylor, who appeared in waiting to receive us, paid us the greatest attention, entering into familiar conversation with us, saying, "You must see over the palace," and proceeded with us; after having passed through the private rooms and state-apartments, we were conducted to an apartment where we partook of some refreshment; and we were thankful the visits to the king and queen had been accomplished, without, we trust, cause for offence to be taken by any one. My own mind being relieved from that great load of exercise I had been and was labouring under, at the time of our entering the king's and queen's apartments, feelings of gratitude now filled my heart to the gladdening of my countenance, which was visible to my friends. It is right to acknowledge that throughout the whole, from our entering the palace to the time we left it, every one to whom we were introduced treated us with the utmost civility and kindness; and I desire to render unto Him, the Author of all good, thanksgiving and praise for having made the way easy, as it has been to me, and enabling me to perform that which I believed He required at my hand. Sewel's History was forwarded to the king by my companion, who received a very handsome acknowledgment of it from Sir Herbert Taylor, stating, the king received it most graciously. The Book of Extracts being under revision, it is intended

to send one of the new edition. The address, which was printed, is as follows.

AN AFFECTIONATE ADDRESS TO THE KING AND HIS GOVERNMENT.

“ May it please the king

“ To receive the respectful and affectionate address of one of his subjects, whose mind has, of later times, been deeply impressed with sincere desires for his welfare, and that of his royal consort and native country, accompanied with fervent prayer to Almighty God, that we may, as a nation, at this awful awakening crisis, manifest an entire willingness, through God’s all-sufficient help, ‘ to break off our sins by righteousness, and our iniquities by showing mercy to the poor, if it may be a lengthening of our tranquillity.’ (Dan. iv. 27.) But if this change is thus happily brought about in our land, it has long been given me to see that in the onset it must become a government work; may I therefore be allowed to say, not only to the king, but to all those who hold the reins of government under him, that there must be an entire willingness manifested on your part, through the help of Almighty God, to remove out of the way of the people those temptations to evil, which by licence, and by your not controlling them, are sanctioned by your authority.

“ If this reformation goes forward, and becomes more and more an individual work, you must be willing, O ! ye rulers, to stand forward, unshackled by the fear or favour of man, and thus to show yourselves to be on the Lord’s side. I am aware this will be no easy task which you are loudly called upon to perform, and that you will have much discouragement to contend with, both from within and from without; but then it will be the more necessary for you to endeavour to keep in view, that the Master whom you will thus serve is ‘ the Lord on high, who is mightier than the noise of many waters; yea, than the mighty waves of the sea;’ and that if He be for you and work with you, and you with Him, through His divine aid,—who is there that shall oppose you and prevail?

“ Permit me to remind you, that by merely appointing a fast for a day, we cannot find acceptance with God, appease his displeasure, and cause Him to withhold his just judgments from us, as we have sufficiently proved; for since that day has passed over, the threatenings have yet been more awful. The impending calamity, the disease which has baffled the skill of medical aid to fathom its origin, has from time to time made its terrific appearance in other parts of our nation, and spread its deadly influence amongst the inhabitants; allowing such who have fallen victims to its unparalleled force but very little time for that necessary preparation of soul which we all must experience before we leave this world, if we are favoured to live with God and Christ Jesus in a happy

eternity. Have we not then reason to fear, that because of our national and individual transgressions, the Spirit of the Lord is daily grieved, and that this language of the psalmist (Psalm vii. 12,) may be applied in this our awful situation: 'If he turn not, he will whet his sword; he hath bent his bow, and made it ready;' and yet how have these threatenings of this awful disease, which has so partially visited our land, been permitted, from time to time, in degree to subside; as if we were, as a nation, to be excused from the severe stroke—from the rod thus shaken over us, which has fallen to the lot of other nations. But the partial subsiding of this disease, which has taken place in different parts of the nation, I have been led to view as permitted in great mercy to us, by Him who remains to be the King of kings and Lord of lords. If we will hear his voice, and receive his counsel and obey it, it seems to proclaim in our ears, as a nation, this language—if ye will now 'repent, and do your first works,' by 'breaking off from your sins by righteousness, and your iniquities by showing mercy to the poor,' the deadly potion which your manifold sins and accumulated transgressions have merited, shall not be meted out to the full. But unless we are willing, through God's help, to 'repent and do our first works,' I dare do no other than say, that I greatly fear we shall not be spared more than other nations have been.

"Should the Almighty see meet, thus to chasten us as with scorpions, and 'rebuke us in his hot displeasure,'—should the destroying angel be commissioned to smite our nation, you who hold the reins of government will be no more secure in your costly dwellings from the awful desolation it may occasion, than the poorest cottager,—the Almighty power not being confined to place or space, agreeably to the language of the Psalmist, (Ps. cxxxix. 7.) 'Whither shall I go from thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there; if I make my bed in hell, behold thou art there; if I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea, even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me. If I say, surely the darkness shall cover me, even the night shall be light about me; yea the darkness hideth not from thee, but the night shineth as the day, the darkness and the light are both alike to thee.' Therefore, whilst time and opportunity are afforded, let us be willing, through God's all-sufficient help, to amend our ways: for should the Lord's judgments be meted out to us as they have been to other nations, which of us can assure ourselves that we shall be spared to witness the awful desolation and thinning of the people which it may occasion? But O! how have I been comforted at times, when my mind has been under the pressure of these subjects, in the belief that Divine mercy and all-sufficient help still await our acceptance as a nation,

and as individuals; and in believing that the language of the Almighty, through one of the prophets of old, to a highly-favoured yet rebellious people, as we have been and yet are, is still continued to us. Hosea, xi. 8, 9. ‘How shall I give thee up, Ephraim? How shall I deliver thee, Israel? how shall I make thee as Admah? how shall I set thee as Zeboim? Mine heart is turned within me, my repentings are kindled together. I will not execute the fierceness of mine anger; I will not return to destroy Ephraim; for I am God, and not man; the Holy One in the midst of thee: and I will not enter into the city.’

“If we thus become the objects of Divine mercy and loving kindness, let me again say to you, who hold the reins of government, in whom the power is vested to do much towards bringing about this reformation, which the Lord calls for from us as a nation,—you must manifest an unreserved willingness to come forward and do your part towards it, by removing the cause of the evils which abound and are increasing amongst us,—by no longer giving occasion for it to be said, ‘The leaders of the people cause them to err.’ I am persuaded that a blessing would attend your recalling all licenses that have been issued, which allow of theatres, opera-houses, and all other places of vain amusement in the nation, and your prohibiting all such licenses in future, and enacting such laws as shall prevent horse-races, bull and bear-baiting, cock-fighting, gambling-houses, &c. &c. if you would be thus found so far doing your part towards removing the temptations out of the way of the people, which are thereby held out to them to frequent such nurseries of vice.

“Another enormous evil in which this nation is deeply implicated, is that of slavery. Nobly resolve, O! ye rulers, immediately to abolish this iniquity in all our dominions, that the cries of the poor, injured, and deeply afflicted Africans, may no longer be permitted to ascend to the ear of their God and our God, against our guilty nation: for He will most assuredly, either in time or eternity, punish their oppressors, and such as are upholding them in the continuance of this oppression, (unless they timely repent of the sufferings and cruel bondage which our highly professing nation has long sanctioned,) by allowing them to become a sacrifice to the merciless interest of their owners.

It has also appeared to me, that you must endeavour, through your own good example, to effect such an observance of the first day of the week (called Sunday,) as will be acceptable to Almighty God; then you may hope for Divine direction and support, in using those means you are called upon to do, as rulers of the people, by enforcing those good and wholesome laws, which, through the aid of Divine Providence, our legislators have been enabled to enact upon the subject.

{The author then proceeds to recommend} “a total prohibition



of an evil practice, which has been allowed to take place in this nation within my memory, on the day called Sunday, a practice which I have, from its commencement, viewed as a grievous one on that day, that of the sale and delivery of what are called Sunday newspapers; the reading of which I am persuaded must have a tendency, in degree, to demoralize the minds of such as indulge themselves in it, and unfit them for that proper occupation of the day which the Lord calls for from his dependent creature, man. Oh! how have I mourned, at times, on account of those in authority, who are sanctioning this grievous disregard of this day, by not exerting that power you are vested with, which is amply sufficient to prevent so notorious reproachful a practice, in a highly professing Christian nation: for it is a solemn consideration, that you will one day have to account to God for your conduct, how far you have been endeavouring, through His aid, (which awaits the acceptance of the whole human race,) to be found, in the awfully responsible situation He has permitted you to take in the government, in all things and on all occasions, aiming to please God, and not to gratify the corrupt inclinations of men. Remember, I beseech you, that power is vested in you to prevent these evil practices, which are increasing amongst us. For how do I behold with sorrow of heart, on the morning of the day called Sunday, the busy deliverers of these newspapers hastening from house to house, to put the inconsiderate purchasers of them as early as possible in possession of their fatal contents,—fatal, because such as willingly venture into this trap of the devil, which he has prepared in order to divert the minds of the people from God, are in a greater or less degree thereby unfitted for a correct and faithful discharge of the duties of the day.

“How lamentable is it to observe on this day also, how much the practice is increasing, of persons travelling by stage-coaches, who are busily employed in reading these papers. If you do not exert your authority to the utmost, to prevent or remove these evils, you sanction them; and thus, it has long been my belief, that in the sight of Almighty God, you become implicated in all the evil consequences resulting from their continuance. So consider, I entreat you, as you value the eternal well-being of your own souls, and the souls of the people, the awful situation you are placing yourselves in, and those who are ensnared by their continuance, so long as you allow those evils in the nation which are within your province to remove. Be willing, then, to do your part, through God’s help, to have these things removed.

“In my early life, the practice of reading a newspaper on the day called Sunday, was considered by those who made a profession of religion, as highly reprehensible; but, alas! how in this

day are we, as a nation, degenerated in this and other respects; and how applicable has become the language of the prophet to our mournful situation: (Jer. vi. 15,) 'Were they ashamed when they had committed abominations? nay, they were not at all ashamed, neither could they blush; therefore they shall fall amongst them that fall: at the time that I visit them, they shall be cast down,' saith the Lord.'

"The opening of *news rooms*, in different parts of this nation, on the day called Sunday, is another evil that should claim your vigorous exertions to put a stop to; as also the manner in which the day is abused in London and its neighbourhood, by the stage coaches travelling the whole of the day, from London to the villages around, and not confined to morning and evening, as was much the case a few years ago, greatly to the quiet of the city and villages. And suffer me to query with you, is not something called for at your hands, in order effectually to urge the necessity, on the part of those who employ the poor, to pay them their earnings at such an early hour on the Seventh-day, called Saturday, as may do away with the necessity for the shopkeepers opening their shops on the morning of the day called Sunday, to supply the labouring classes of the people with the necessaries of life, which is in part occasioned by their not receiving their wages until a late hour the night before, and, in some instances not until what is called Sunday morning. A care of this sort would facilitate a better attendance of both the shopkeeper and the poor at a place of religious worship, and do much towards a more appropriate occupation of the day.

"And may I earnestly entreat you, O! ye rulers, no longer to suffer the temptations to exist which have produced that unparalleled increase of the sin of drunkenness, which has of late years taken place in our nation, from the reducing of the duty on ardent spirits, and which has so demoralized the minds and manners of the people, in youth, middle-life, and old age. Oh! the drunkenness, poverty, starvation, and misery which this reduction of the duty on ardent spirits has entailed on our nation! The load of national guilt that has been accumulated by this means is incalculable. In addition to this sin of drunkenness, there is another evil attendant upon the increased distillation of ardent spirits, which is, the great destruction of that valuable grain which a beneficent Creator has in his mercy bestowed upon us for our support, whilst many of the poor are suffering for want of sufficient food. If this alarming waste is suffered to continue, can we look for any other consequences than that of calamitous national want? Therefore be willing now, even now, to do your part toward preventing an accumulation of our nation's guilt, that you may no longer become sharers therein; but by increasing

the duty on this baneful article, may prevent the use of it, except in cases of real necessity, and only to be dispensed by medical practitioners.

“As guardians of the people, and as magistrates, in your various districts, exert your authority all in your power, that drunkenness in public-houses be prevented, and that none be allowed to sit in those houses on the day called Sunday, except such as are travellers. A care of this sort will tend much to better the condition of the poor, and be one means of drawing down a blessing from heaven on yourselves, by your manifesting a decided determination to be found judging and acting righteously in the sight of God; that so the day called Sunday may become as a Sabbath-day, a day of rest; one in which, with the exception of such acts of necessity as may be compared to rescuing a ‘sheep fallen into a ditch,’ the concerns of this life should unreservedly give place to more important duties.

“By your thus doing your part (but nothing short of it) towards the general reformation which the Lord is expecting from us as a nation, it would indeed be “an acceptable day to the Lord,” a fast he would be well pleased with; and it would, I believe, be an offering he would condescend to accept at our hands. I would not have it concluded, from what I have said in favour of setting apart one day in the week more especially for religious purposes, that I place so much stress upon it as to think the attending on public worship, on *one* day, will make amends for the misconduct of other days; or that the observance of any rites or ceremonies will be available to obtain the favour of heaven, whilst we remain in a state of transgression, and are violating the righteous law of God written in our hearts.

“Although I have no hesitation in believing, that the day recently set apart professedly as a day of fasting and humiliation, was devoutly observed by many pious individuals in the nation, yet so long as the evils I have enumerated are countenanced by our government, whether by licence, or they are suffered to go on uncontrolled, and pride and luxury continue to abound, I very much fear the language of the Most High, through his prophet, will stand against us as a nation, should the day of the Lord’s judgment be yet more awfully revealed, and then what will a national decree for a fast, *one* day of humiliation, avail, consider ye! (Isaiah, i. 12, 13, 15, 16.) ‘When ye come to appear before me, who hath required this at your hand, to tread my courts? Bring no more vain oblations; incense is an abomination unto me; the new moons and Sabbaths I cannot away with; it is iniquity, even the solemn meeting. And when ye spread forth your hands, I will hide mine eyes from you: yea, when ye make many prayers I will not hear. Wash you, make you clean, put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes; cease to do

evil; learn to do well.' And again, (Isaiah, lviii. 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9.) 'Ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? Is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? wilt thou call this a fast and an acceptable day to the Lord? Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor which are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thy health shall spring forth speedily; and thy righteousness shall go before thee. Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer; thou shalt cry, and he shall say, Here I am.'

"Every act on our part, as a nation, short of this, I dare do no other than say, we have abundant cause to fear, will be but offering an insult to the Majesty of Heaven, and adding to our national guilt. Suffer me, therefore, to quote the language of the psalmist, (Ps. ii. 10, 11, 12,) 'Be wise, therefore, O! ye kings: be instructed ye judges of the earth. Serve the Lord with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him;' and allow me to add, that my soul craves, that by observing the fast recommended by the prophet, which we are assured the Lord will accept, we may be enabled, both in a national and individual capacity, to say, (Ps. lxvi. 20,) 'Blessed be God, which hath not turned away my prayer, nor his mercy from me.'

"THOMAS SHILLITOE."

"Tottenham, 7th of 9th mo. 1832."



## CONCLUSION.

---

OUR friend Thomas Shillitoe, after his return from America, continued to reside at Tottenham, near London, until the close of his life. It does not appear that he left home again with certificate in the work of the ministry; but he was remarkably diligent in attending our religious meetings, both in his own village, and, when able, those held in London, on behalf of the Society at large. He was an eminent example of perseverance in attending meetings for Divine worship, even when under much bodily suffering, as well as of punctuality to the time appointed. One day, when much worn down by disease, on going to meeting, it was observed to him, had he not better stay at home, as he appeared so poorly? He replied, "No, I believe it is required of me to go, as long as I can; when I cannot walk, my friends must carry me."\* Less than two weeks previous to his decease, he attended, under great weakness, the concluding sitting of the Yearly Meeting of ministers and elders in 1836.

While our dear friend was diligently engaged in his Master's service, in what might be considered the work of the evening, with the sincere desire and endeavour to finish his day's work in the day, his spirit was often clothed with mourning, on account of the inroads which the enemy of all righteousness was permitted to make within our borders, and to overthrow the faith of some. At this period of trial and of proving, he was often concerned, as a faithful watchman on the walls, to sound an alarm, to warn his friends of the near approach of the enemy, and to encourage them to be unmoved, and steadfast in "the faith once delivered unto the saints." On one occasion, about this time, whilst encouraging to faithfulness, and signifying his intention to attend at his post of duty so long as strength remained, he added in a solemn manner these words: "My Master's orders are—'Watchmen, be at your posts.'" Thus did he endeavour to stir up his brethren unto diligence, to strengthen the weak hands amongst them, and to confirm the feeble-minded, some of whom can now arise and call him blessed;

\* He resided within two or three doors of the meeting-house.

whilst he did not fail to raise his warning voice against the spirit of the world, as well as the delusions of the wicked one, by which too many have been induced to forsake some of those Christian testimonies and principles held amongst us as a Society from the beginning. His faith was firm and unshaken, that the Lord, in his own time, would be pleased to cause, not only the recent, but the desolations of many generations to be repaired; and he said, "I believe the latter house will be greater than the former."

Having been favoured to experience, through the good hand of his God upon him, that he could do all things required of him, through Christ, who strengthened him, he was frequently engaged to press upon others the necessity for, and benefit of, perfect obedience to the revealed will of the Most High; that thus all might become, like Caleb and Joshua of old, of whom it is recorded, that they had "wholly followed the Lord."

The afflicted and the poor continued to share in his sympathy, and labours of love; his exertions on behalf of the latter class, in his own village, were conspicuous, even to within a short period of his decease. Having raised a subscription among his wealthier friends and neighbours, to provide more comfortable arrangements for the poor inmates in the almshouses at Tottenham, he attended to the outlay, and sometimes personally inspected the progress of the work; and shortly before his decease, he had the satisfaction of visiting the houses on the eve of their completion; when he said, the retrospect of his interest therein was very consoling to his feelings.

His partner in life, who was several years older than himself, survived him near two years. She was remarkably fitted as a companion for him, under his peculiarly exercising services; affording a striking instance of the overruling care of his great Lord and Master, in best providing for those who wholly trust in Him, in that important union of marriage. Her exemplary conduct and patient acquiescence in their frequent and sometimes long separations from each other, were very instructive.\*

On one occasion, a few months before his departure, at a time when our faithful ministers were exposed to much gainsaying, and "perverse things" were spoken unjustly against them, he expressed himself with much tenderness of spirit, to a friend who had called upon him, in the following terms; at the same time adding, that such had been his sentiments, during the whole course of his religious life.—"I feel I have nothing to depend upon, but the mercies of God in Christ Jesus. I do not rely for salvation

\* A few weeks previous to her departure (which took place at Hitchin, at the advanced age of 92.) she said, with much earnestness, "O! that I may be prepared, when my time comes." Her last illness was a very short and suffering one; towards the end of which it was evident, from her tone of voice, that prayer and praises were the closing engagement of her soul.

upon any merits of my own; all my own works are as filthy rags:—my faith is in the merits of Christ Jesus, and in the offering he made for us. I trust my past sins are all forgiven me,—that they have been washed away by the blood of Christ, who died for my sins. It is mercy I want, and mercy I have; and notwithstanding I thus speak, I am sensible, that I must not presume upon this mercy; but it is only as I endeavour, through Divine assistance, to walk circumspectly, that I can hold out to the end.”

He was taken more alarmingly ill on the 5th of the 6th mo. 1836; and his sufferings from bodily debility became very great. He supplicated that his faculties might remain clear to the very last, and that he might praise his Maker with his last breath. “I desire,” he added, “with truth and sincerity of heart, to say, —‘Thy will be done.’ O! that I could get within the pearl gates—just within the pearl gates.”

Early in the morning of the next day he became much worse from debility, and his breathing being difficult, he said, “It is labour, but not sorrow. Oh! deliver me, if consistent with thy blessed will. I am in the hands of a merciful God:—take me; I can give up all in this world. Oh! come, come, blessed Jesus! if it is consistent with thy blessed will. Into thy careful keeping—into thy merciful hands—I commit my dear children, and my dear grandchildren,—all-merciful!”

After sleeping comfortably the following night, he said, “Oh! be pleased to preserve me in patience,—waiting, waiting. Oh! Divine mercy, send, O send, if consistent with thy holy will, send my release. Oh! take me in thy arms, and carry me—bear me hence. I feel getting weaker and weaker;—the thread will presently untwist.”

“Oh! heavenly Father, be pleased, if consistent with thy blessed will, to say—‘This is enough.’ Send, send, oh! merciful Father, help, that I may not let go my confidence. Oh! assist me in your prayers, that I may be released from the shackles of mortality. Oh! take me, holy Jesus, I pray thee, to thyself. ‘Oh! have mercy! have mercy!’”

He afterwards said, “My love is to every body—the wicked and all; I love *them*, but not *their ways*. Oh! for patience, for patience,—no murmuring,—no complaining—but cheerful submission. Oh! Lord Jesus! have mercy on me. Son of David! have mercy on me. I truly know sorrow, as to the *body*, but not as to the *mind*:—Oh! my *head* aches, but not my *heart*. What am I better than other men? But now I shall have to appear, to answer for my precious time; what have I done that I should not have done, and left undone that I should have done?”

To his medical attendant he said: “Does there seem any probability of a speedy release? I will take any thing in moderation, that will not affect my intellect. I want to go out of the world with a clear head, and a clean heart. Oh! bear with me, if I am impa-

tient; the restlessness of the body, but not of the mind, you can have no conception of. Perfect obedience to our heavenly Father, as made known in the secret of the heart,—this is the faith contended for.

Third-day, addressing his wife, he said: "I should like us to lie down together, and be buried in the same grave.—All that ever I have done is but as filthy rags. Oh! let it be known, that I contend to the last with unremitting confidence and assurance for the second coming of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ to the saving of the soul. Oh! what should I have been now, if I had not submitted to his baptism, to the baptism of fire?" To Dr. H. he said, "Am I not weakening fast?" Dr. H. replied, "I fear thou art." He replied, "Oh! do not fear, but rejoice, rejoice, on my account. Oh, pray for me, with me, that my faith fail not. Oh! good Lord Jesus! cast a crumb of help, and deliver me. I earnestly pray thee to come; come quickly, if I dare lay claim to be thy servant."

On inquiring the day of the week, and being told it was Fifth-day, half-past ten o'clock, he said, "Friends are at meeting; I hope they will be benefited by being there."

About ten at night, he said, "I have been helped through many a trying night." And again, about three in the morning, after having had some sleep, "I have passed a better night than I could have expected, but it has been through my dear Redeemer sustaining me. I hope I am kept from murmuring: I desire cheerful submission, for I cannot help myself, nor can any man help me. Oh! the balm—the oil poured into my wounds for my short-comings.—I desire to submit, and say, 'thy blessed will be done.'"

On being taken worse, he said, "Oh! surely this is death; I thank thee for it."

Seventh-day morning, on inquiring the day of the week, and being told the morrow would be First-day, he said, "The whole day to be devoted to the service of God. I will try to sing for mercy.—Mine eyes have seen thy salvation, and thy glory; when shall I feel thy presence?—My friends must not think more highly of me than they ought to think; if I have been any thing, it has been of *grace*, not of *merit*." He many times requested that patience might be granted him, and desired a friend who visited him, to be valiant in the earth.

On receiving a message of love from a friend, he again said, his "love was to every body, all the world over, even the worst sinner, he loved *them*, but not *their deeds*;—that his love was universal, to all the human race;" and added, "if it were not so, how miserable indeed should I feel. Oh! holy, blessed Jesus," he exclaimed, "be with me in this awful moment. Come! oh! come, and receive me to thyself; and, of thine own free mercy, in thine own time, admit me into thy heavenly kingdom!"



It is believed his supplication, that his faculties might remain clear to the last, was mercifully granted; though he was not able to articulate for the last two hours. About two o'clock on first-day morning, he was moved into a more comfortable position, after which he became faint, and from that time gradually sank away; so that those about him could only discover by close watching, when he ceased to breathe.

He died on the 12th day of the 6th mo. 1836, aged about eighty-two years; and his remains were interred in Friends' burying ground at Tottenham on the 17th of the same, after a very solemn meeting.

“Blessed are the dead, which die in the Lord;—yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them.”

THE END.





[illegible]

PRINTED IN U.S.A.

**All items are subject to recall.**



BX7795.S5 Z5

Shillitoe, Thomas/Journal of the life, l

G



3 2400 00047 8168

Shillitoe, Thomas  
Journal of the life, labours  
and travels of Thomas  
Shillitoe

BX  
7795  
S5Z5  
v.2

LC Coll.

